

03230160R



NLM 05022233 8

NATIONAL LIBRARY OF MEDICINE





CHILDREN ASTRAY

LONDON: HUMPHREY MILFORD

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

CHILDREN ASTRAY

BY

SAUL DRUCKER

Superintendent, Home for Jewish Children, Boston

AND

MAURICE BECK HEXTER, M.A.

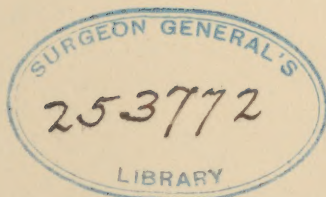
*Executive Director
Federated Jewish Charities, Boston*

INTRODUCTION

BY

RICHARD C. CABOT, M.D.

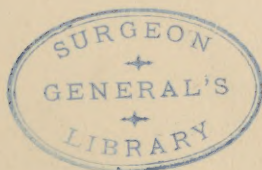
Professor of Social Ethics, Harvard University



CAMBRIDGE

HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS

1923



COPYRIGHT, 1923
BY HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS

HV
9069
D794c
1923

PRINTED AT THE HARVARD UNIVERSITY PRESS
CAMBRIDGE, MASS., U. S. A.

With love for and faith in our "problems" past and present, in the hope that among our readers will be found some who, seeing that rough edges may be smoothed, will take heart and give CHILDREN ASTRAY another chance, the writers inscribe this, their first formal publication, to

LOUIS E. KIRSTEIN

a humanist in business

PREFACE

THESE cases are presented with two entirely distinct, although not divergent, aims. One of these is the gradual creation of a teaching literature for social work. Just as law, medicine, business administration, logic, and even ethics, can best be taught by the case-method, so social work, which often cuts across all these other fields, can best be transmitted to prospective workers through study of cases. The presentation of social case-histories involves problems different from those of legal cases, a difference in which inhere both a strength and a weakness. In legal cases there is an ultimate decision before a supreme judicial body. In social work authoritative procedure and technique have still to be worked out, and, what is more important, there never issues a final decision as to who is right and who is wrong.

The second aim in the presentation of these cases is to demonstrate the possibilities of using orphanages for special cases, rather than utilizing such institutions only for the easy and "normal" problem of child dependency. Such a practice is exactly opposite to that followed so religiously by all such institutions up to a decade ago and still lingering in many places.

Other types of case-histories are now emerging into print. Those issued by the Judge Baker Foundation are admirable. Our own cases are presented from a different point of view. The Judge Baker Foundation presents the work of psychologists from the psychological point of view primarily, with incidental attention to sociological settings and implications. Our cases are presented frankly from the sociological point of view, with incidental reference to psychological diagnoses and prognoses. Both of these methods may be used simultaneously; they are not mutually exclusive. Who shall say,

ex cathedra, which method is to be preferred, particularly at the present juncture? This difference in viewpoint is important, however, in understanding cases.

Further explanatory data must be presented to the reader or student, so that full judgment can be passed upon the cases. The aim, equipment, and resources of those who worked with these children are important.

All of these cases were handled by one of the writers, in his capacity as head of an orphanage. His collaborator in this work may be allowed to explain that the one who handled these cases is a man of broad sympathies, patient in the extreme, a lover of children, and possessing an uncanny ability to discover and develop special abilities in every child. As head of the Orphanage, he had at his disposal various tools, such as Art Classes, Boy Scouts, Self-Government Organizations, and others, all of which he brought to bear, in the proper proportion, in these various cases.

All of these cases have their origin in a large eastern seaport. The community is large enough to be self-contained philanthropically, that is, all the well-recognized forms of social service are in existence and were available for the proper development of these cases. Most of them came to the attention of one of the writers through the Children's Bureau of that community, which was the clearing agency for all children's problems.

The writers have to thank the officials and workers of the various agencies for their extreme courtesy in gathering some of the later data. Their names shall remain undisclosed, as a further aid in securing anonymity for the cases presented — a liberty which the writers trust will be pardoned.

MAURICE B. HEXTER.

CONTENTS

INTRODUCTION	xi
------------------------	----

CHAPTER I

TRUANTS

CASE A. PAUL I——	"POETICAL DOUGHNUTS"	5
CASE B. THOMAS E——	"PEEWEE"	20
CASE C. IRVING I——	"THE PRIZE-FIGHTER"	35

CHAPTER II

WEAKLINGS

CASE A. CARL P——	"THE STOOL-PIGEON"	49
CASE B. PARKER E——	"FROM A FAGIN LABORATORY"	67
CASE C. BILLY A——	"THE INVALID"	86

CHAPTER III

WANDERERS

CASE A. BENJAMIN E——	"A BABE RUTH"	101
CASE B. FRANK L——	"A SOLDIER OF FORTUNE"	117
CASE C. ISIDORE S——	"A KNIGHT OF THE STREETS"	141

CHAPTER IV

PILFERERS

CASE A. ELSIE G——	"THE PRIMA DONNA"	159
CASE B. PHILIP L——	"RAFFLES, JR."	186
CASE C. OTTO L——	"A STRAGGLER"	202

CHAPTER V

CHARACTERIALLY DEFECTIVE

CASE A. PETER E——	"THE AUTOCRAT"	219
CASE B. PAULINE E——	"MAGGIE" OR "MRS. JIGGS"	233
CASE C. ANNA AND MARY J——	"STRUCK BY LIGHTNING"	245

CHAPTER VI

PRECOCIOUS

CASE A. HARRY K——	"JUST ANOTHER EDISON"	263
CASE B. POLLY S——	"MISS SPITFIRE"	277
CASE C. CARRIE F——	"THE SCAPEGOAT"	303

CHAPTER VII

SEX PROBLEMS

CASE A. SAMUEL H——	"THE CHERUB"	329
CASE B. EDNA N——	"ANGEL-FACE"	336
CASE C. MARY E——	"A STEPCHILD OF FATE"	352

CHAPTER VIII

INTRACTABLES

CASE A. EDWARD P——	"THE CHRISTMAS GIFT"	373
CASE B. JOSEPH K——	"CHINKY"	387
CASE C. BERNARD J——	"THE PHOTOGRAPHER"	404

INTRODUCTION

SINCE these twenty-four character sketches are given us without comment on the wonders which they contain, it seems well to sketch some of the scenery amidst which they occur, and to answer as best I can some of the questions sure to spring up in the minds of readers — gentle or fierce. I have something to say on the following topics:

- I. The Home and its Resources.
- II. The Selection of the Twenty-Four Cases.
- III. The Episodes (not Life Histories) presented.
- IV. Can the Cases be identified?
- V. Was it justifiable to mingle these Morally Contagious Children with the "Normal" Inhabitants of the Orphanage?
- VI. A Statistical Sketch of the whole Group from which these Cases were selected.
- VII. The Monotony of Delinquency *versus* the Variety of Living Character.
- VIII. The Form of these Records.
- IX. How the Work was done.
- X. Literary Values in Case-Recording.

I. THE HOME AND ITS RESOURCES

The boys and girls whose fortunes are described so picturesquely in these pages, were cared for in an orphanage. Why was this? The trend of recent opinion has certainly been against the institutional management of children, whenever it can be avoided. In hospitals, in reform schools, and sometimes in truant schools, it is recognized that children must, for a time, be institutionalized. But orphanages and similar places which mass children, away from home and home influences, are ordinarily frowned on. To "place out" orphans and neglected or dependent children in foster homes, where they come to be treated as members of the family — this is the orthodox social policy. "Placing out" certainly can be either the best or the worst policy for non-delinquent children, — the best if suitable foster homes are available and adequate supervision is given through the timely visits of well-trained visitors, — the worst if the children are hidden away out of sight in families who exploit or neglect them.

But for wayward, "stubborn," or delinquent children, not so advanced in criminality as to need confinement in a reformatory,

yet clearly going from bad to worse in their own homes, the policy of "placing out" is often unsuccessful. The change from city life and street gangs to suburban or country life, with its simpler and healthier experiences, *may* be all that the delinquent needs — especially in the milder cases. Often, however, the new home works no better than the old. The child has to be "placed" again and again, until finally it becomes clear that this policy does not work.

Under these circumstances, or when first-rate foster homes are not available, institutional life and especially *institutional training without legal confinement* may be just what is needed.

From the point of view of its usefulness to "difficult children," what are the advantages of an institution such as that which forms the background of the stories in this book?

1. Most important, I think, is the opportunity given in such an institution for the personal influence of adults skilled in the sympathetic understanding and wise guidance of rebellious or perverted youngsters. In this book we get glimpses of the skill, the wisdom, and the affection which the superintendent and his assistants brought to the development of the best and so to the conversion of the worst element in twenty-four children. Such teaching and guidance as this a child may occasionally find in a foster home. But all will agree, I fancy, that such good fortune is rare.

2. This central guidance is here reinforced by a group of influences not to be found in foster homes:

(a) The system of *monitors* and of *Big Brothers* or *Big Sisters*. No adult can do for certain children what an older girl or boy can do. English public schools and the American private schools modeled upon them, have long recognized and utilized this fact of child-psychology.

In the child's own home, in a foster home or in the neighborhood, the supply of suitable Big Brothers and Big Sisters is often scanty. We wish we could find and enlist the right sort of helper many times for every once that we find him. But in and around an orphanage, such as houses the subjects of these stories, one can develop and maintain a constant supply. Among the orphans who remain there for years, some can be trained by precept and experience to practise the art of "Big Brotherhood." Obviously the Big Brothers themselves will profit at least as much as their wards. To teach is one of the swiftest ways of learning. Hence no one can feel any hesitation in enlisting the older children or adults outside the institution in this task. One is asking no favor and imposing no unfair burden. It is a valuable opportunity.

(b) *Physical and Mental Care.* In the foster home or in the child's own home it is *possible* by sufficient effort to supervise his diet, his bathing, and his habits of sleep, to procure physical and mental examination, and to avoid either an excess or deficiency of good recreation. But the difficulties of accomplishing all this are far greater than in an institution. One of the most powerful reinforcements to the personal influence of the superintendent, his assistants, and his "monitors," is certainly the system of physical care and examination maintained in the institution.

(c) *Boy Scout Activities.* With the superintendent as self-appointed Scout Master, the training and fellowship of "scouting" is brought within reach of each child. There is no compulsion about it. In this as in many other of the Home's activities the children are led to feel that they manage things themselves and the atmosphere of the place is happy and free.

(d) *Constant Occupation.* The child's day is filled so full, that his super-abundant energy has little time to get him into mischief. When he returns from the public day school (which he attends outside the institution) the rest of the afternoon is spent in manual work: the boys on the farm, in the machine-shop, or at printing presses, the girls in dressmaking, designing, and kindred pursuits.

In the printing shop the children set up and manage their own Home newspaper. Meantime, enough job printing is done to pay for all expenses, including the salary of an instructor.

For the younger children there is supervised play in the afternoon hours, and music lessons are provided for both sexes.

(e) *The Care of Pet Animals.* With unusual insight into child-psychology, there has been a recognition that for certain children the care of pet animals is an important road to salvation. Despite the inconveniences of unhouse-broken animals roaming at large, the children have the care of numerous dogs, cats, and rabbits. By this appeal to the nurturing instinct, unselfish interests and latent tenderness are drawn up to the surface.

Throughout the management of the institution runs the superintendent's belief that the delinquents living there are normal children, whose loose and undirected energies have thus far led them into mischief. Indeed he believes that boys who have n't energy enough to make trouble for their elders are harder to deal with and more likely to be abnormal. Like many others he has often found that under proper guidance "the worst boys are the best," the natural leaders of their fellows. Such a creed is not new, but in my experience its truth has rarely been more beneficently demonstrated.

II. THE SELECTION OF THE TWENTY-FOUR CASES

The twenty-four children whose stories are here told were selected from a total of one hundred and twenty-five who passed through this orphanage during a period of six years. Why were not all of the one hundred and twenty-five cases presented? Because the book would have been inconveniently long.

What then is the principle of selection? I am assured by the writers of this book that they have made no attempt to pick out "show cases," or to present only their successes and none of their failures. Indeed they consider three of these twenty-four cases as definite failures. The twenty-four cases were selected not to prove 100 per cent of success but to give the reader representatives of the most important groups or types among those cared for in the orphanage. Thus of the eight "sex cases" dealt with in this six-year period, three are presented here, while of twenty-eight "truancy cases," the writers have also selected three. In this sense and only in this sense has there been any selection so far as Mr. Hexter and Mr. Drucker are aware.

Even with the inclusion of three recognized failures and of others with dubious results, even when we allow for the fact that episodes (not whole lives) are dealt with, and for the possibility that some of these waifs might have straightened out their own careers unaided — despite all these allowances, the degree of apparent success does at times seem almost miraculous.

III. THE EPISODES (NOT LIFE HISTORIES) PRESENTED

Those responsible for this book are quite aware that they have pictured in it only certain episodes or periods in the lives of twenty-four children. They make no claim that the whole future of these irrepressible youngsters is mirrored in the record of a few years. Our authors have described here their efforts to straighten bent twigs. They hope that as the early twist is here measurably rectified so will the future growth of these vigorous lives go straight on towards light and strength. But no one can be sure of this or of anything, except that the boys and girls who race through the pages of this book have been given a fair chance (a remarkably good chance I think). They have responded, for the time at least, very hopefully. They have accepted much that was offered them and have made a fresh start.

This is much. No one claims that it is all. Neither this free chance nor the free will to turn back into their old ways can be

taken away. It is "up to them" now. Some of the handicaps of early experiences and early neglect have been thrown off; they leave the orphanage without crushing or unnatural burdens.

Episodes then — but in some cases, for example in the "Prima Donna's," episodes of remarkable length for a case record. Few social records that I have read have carried the story over a period of sixteen years. Another record covers eighteen years.

IV. CAN THE CASES BE IDENTIFIED?

Anyone who prints such episodes as these, such passages from the lives of real people, is bound to make as sure as he can that he has disguised them so that recognition is impossible. Should the individuals concerned, or should any relative or friend of theirs, recognize the pictures here presented, it would certainly be unfortunate. The authors have therefore taken great pains to disguise in various ways the personalities here described so that recognition is believed to be excluded beyond a reasonable doubt.

V. WAS IT JUSTIFIABLE TO TAKE INTO AN ORPHANAGE AMONG NORMAL NON-DELINQUENT CHILDREN THESE MORALLY CONTAGIOUS DELINQUENTS?

Realizing as we must how much harm a child obsessed with ideas about sex can do in a group of normal children, one may well sympathize with the doubts felt by some of the directors of the Orphanage and candidly described in some of these records. In answer to these fears it is to be said:

1. That the superintendent deliberately matched his great influence against that of the delinquent child, realizing the risk and setting himself to avert it.

2. That to send such morally contagious children to their own homes or to "place them out" in families (with access to school) is not to isolate them. Wherever they are, they are a danger to other children. But in the Orphanage there was opportunity to displace their morbid obsessions by the pressure of good interests, and thus to render them less harmful than they would be elsewhere. At home or under almost any conditions outside an institution, there is not only the chance (as in the Orphanage, admittedly) but the certainty of their corrupting other children. On the whole it seems fortunate that the majority of the Directors decided as they did to admit some delinquents, even of the more corrupting type, into an institution peopled chiefly by non-delinquent orphans.

VI. A STATISTICAL SKETCH OF THE GROUP FROM WHICH THESE TWENTY-FOUR CASES WERE SELECTED

During the six-year period within which all of these studies fall there were one hundred and twenty-five "difficult" children admitted. Their difficulties can be classified as follows:

1. Pilfering and Petty Larceny.....	39
2. Truancy.....	28
3. "General Waywardness"	21
4. "Sex Problems".....	8
5. "Temperamentally Defective"	7
6. Epilepsy	2
7. Charged with Arson	1
8. Feeble-mindedness.....	1
	<hr/>
	107

In addition there were eighteen classified at entrance merely as "Former Reformatory Cases".....	18
	<hr/>
	125

I have put cautious quotation marks around some of these titles. I might well have so marked them all. The writers of this book do not take this classification very seriously, nor can any intelligent person. Their task has been to get behind the labeled "symptoms" which brought these children into collision with parents, neighbors, or policemen; to find the central weakness and the central strength in each child, and then to work with him towards his own salvation. How well they appear to have succeeded in this, we may get some idea from the writers' estimate of their result:

Self-supporting for a year or more since leaving the Home, apparently "normal children"	40
"Successful Cases," still remaining in the Home until self- supporting.....	43
Attending college, polytechnic institute, or high school	13
"Successful Cases," sent to relatives.....	6
"Definite Failures," sent to "reformatory".....	4
Feeble-minded with criminal tendencies, sent to School for Feeble-Minded.....	1
Outcome uncertain	18
	<hr/>
	125

Deducting the 18 cases with uncertain results there remain but five failures in the attempt to help 107 "difficult children." Even if all the eighteen doubtful results are included with the known

failures, there are but twenty-three out of one hundred and twenty-five in which no certain improvement can be found. Surely a most astounding record.

Personally I should rather say that at least one hundred and two out of one hundred and twenty-five have made a fresh start, responding to the varied opportunities and the friendly influences brought within their reach. With a helping hand they have climbed up. They seem glad to be up, glad of what they can see and do upon the new level. We may have good hope that they will persist there, or go higher.

VII. THE MONOTONY OF DELINQUENCY VERSUS THE VARIETY OF LIVING CHARACTER

One of the great merits of this book is that before the end each case record shows us not a type but an individual, an intensely human unpredictable figure, stranger than fiction, unique. To reach this goal we, like the children themselves, wade through muddy acres of perversity, law-breaking, and vice. How diverse the virtues! How similar the crimes! Is it not amazing, — the smooth uniformity of nail-biting, bunking-out, truancy, obscenity, and theft? In these elements the stories are so much alike that one almost forgets which is which, *until the child himself speaks up*. Then he is transformed into an independent, life-like, usually likable being. No matter how mournfully alike all the rest of the reports of his vices, he is himself delightfully individual in his view of life.

It is especially for this contrast and completion that I thank the authors. They show us the child himself, behind his clothes, his dirt, his diseases, and his delinquencies. Dirt makes us all look alike. Modern clothes, even a young rebel's clothes, disguise vital differences. In pain, fever, delirium, dementia, we are all so much more alike than we are in health, that no one thinks of judging a person's character solely from what he shows of himself in illness. Because disease comes to a man out of his heredity and his environment we know in advance that we shall not find his central personality in his diseased behavior. So it is with delinquencies. They cannot be ignored in character study. But, like diseases, they are monotonously similar, and never central.

Perhaps each sin, as the sinner and God see it, is as unique as any part of his personality. But certain it is that the records of delinquency, as the world's coarse thumb and finger sort them out in piles, obscure the clear outlines of the children till they look unnaturally, untruly alike.

Gang life and street life wipe out the lineaments of individuality till they can scarcely be recognized by him who runs or by her who currently writes social records. The more honor to these writers who, as they deal with delinquent gangster and street waif, push behind his disguises to discover his soul, yes, to discover it even to himself.

Part of each record shows us the straggler, the scapegoat, and the cherub *from his own point of view*, from inside. Of how few social records, except those of the Judge Baker Foundation, can this be said! Most case records are dull reading because they describe chiefly the struggles and technique of social workers, the diagnoses of doctor, psychiatrist, or bewildered parent. But these character sketches on the contrary are readable because they are individual, because they go behind the scenes and give us fragments of someone's life as he sees it himself.

Here emerges another merit apparent in these studies. The authors never get swamped by any of the nineteenth-century fads about heredity, environment, and adaptation. They use these phrases freely. They dutifully list all the domestic and environmental items which good method obliges us to accumulate. But in the end there appears nevertheless an individual boy or girl not to be "explained" by any or all of these. As soon as the child opens his mouth to speak we are aware of a new person who never could have been predicted from the data about his family and his surroundings.

Twentieth-century fads like psychoanalysis are also refreshingly ignored in this book. It is a mystery how a girl like the "Prima Donna" could have escaped a Freudian analysis and treatment. Indeed I fully expect that, because she recovered, some psychoanalyst reviewing this book will claim that his method was actually used. But, thank heaven, it was n't!

Another good point in these histories is the avoidance of undue emphasis on the *measurable* parts of personality or on the attempt to measure without defining a child's "intelligence." Intelligence Quotients are included as they should be, but they are never taken too seriously. They are rightly balanced and interpreted by the other known facts about the child and his behavior.

VIII. THE FORM OF THE RECORDS

The essentials of good form in a record are, I take it:

(a) The accurate transcription of all essential data, so arranged that the reader can easily find any particular item, such as "home

conditions" or "physical examination," and can make his own comparisons or statistical combinations as he goes from case to case.

(b) The use of such a style that the recorded episode is interesting and therefore true to life. An uninteresting record gives necessarily a false impression, because human life itself is interesting.

So long as these specifications are met there are, I believe, as many ways of writing a good case record as there are purposes to be served by it. No single form is under all conditions to be preferred.

Mr. Hexter's and Mr. Drucker's method seems to me well suited to its purpose and lacking in none of the essentials. They arrange their voluminous material under four main headings which are uniform throughout all these cases.

1. The Problem.
2. The Analysis.
3. The Treatment.
4. The Result.

The first of these is subdivided, so that we study

- The Problem:*
- (a) In delinquencies.
 - (b) At home.
 - (c) In school.
 - (d) Elsewhere.

Confessedly these rubrics allow of some overlapping — as when for example delinquencies occur in school. But as we read the stories this logical objection comes to nothing. We easily find what we want.

The analysis is subdivided as follows:

- Analysis:*
1. Physical.
 2. Mental.
 3. Social.
 - (a) Heredity.
 - (b) Development.
 - (c) Habits and interests.
 - (d) Home conditions.

The term "*heredity*" is not used here in a strict biological sense, but includes the whole *family background* of the child as seen in his parents, his brothers, and his sisters. Sometimes this part of the record is developed so fully that we gain considerable insight into the life of a whole family. Sometimes we get so interested in the

family that it is hard to pull ourselves back to the leading character of the drama when at the word *Development* we are suddenly confronted with the details of our hero's childhood.

Coming to the *Treatment*, we are glad to find in it those two essentials of an interesting story which "Alice in Wonderland" has authoritatively named: *pictures* (word-picture) and *conversation*. But are these fascinating conversations to be taken as verbally and literally accurate? The writers assert nothing of the sort; for although they have been in the habit of making notes of talks with children, as soon as possible after the talk occurred, yet they have not limited themselves exclusively to the phrases recorded at the time. They are certain, however, that the remarks here recorded are essentially like those spoken at the time, convey the true spirit of the conversations which actually took place.

The *Results* have in many cases the rare merit of spanning a considerable period of years. Few social records cover a period from 1906 to 1922. This element of duration is, I think, the point which we most need to be sure of in a result, so far as *form* is concerned. As to the *matter* of these extraordinary results I have said something on another page.

IX. HOW THE WORK WAS DONE

(a) A kindly and fatherly feeling towards the children is everywhere evident. Their failings are never harshly judged. Their pranks and even their misdeeds excite unconcealed amusement or sympathy in those who record them. Thus the reader sees through the child's own eyes because the writers have done so. I never heard of another superintendent who consented to go and be looked over by a gutter snipe who wanted to inspect him before deciding whether he would go to the Home or not. "Was yer a bad boy too?" he inquires as the humble superintendent stands before him, hat in hand, waiting to be judged. Admirable humility! And it won.

(b) But the genuine affection which shines through these stories is never perverted into weak indulgence. Firm control of the situation, frank readiness to decide what is best for the boy or girl concerned, is assumed as an obvious duty. The superintendent is not elected Scout Master. He takes the position.

Sometimes the method employed to achieve the child's good carries us into the psychologist's field, where we see employed — with excellent results — the method of "suggestion." Thus, in the "Prima Donna" the low tones of the white-sheeted "ghost" penetrate so deeply into the girl's mind and stamp there so durable an

impression that her reformation is at last complete. Indeed the beneficent influence of suggestion is to be seen in almost every case. The impish disciple of "The Lobster" was *influenced to believe* that only his mother's intercession and the pleas of his "Big Brother" had prevented his being sent to the reformatory. Later *it was made to appear* that he was being given one more chance only in pity for his mother.

Fashions of therapeutics are changing rapidly in social work as they do in medicine. Methods which in 1906 — the initial date of the "Prima Donna" — were generally approved are now challenged by some. Yet this challenge finds many answers. The kindly intent guiding us, the unimpeachable results obtained by "suggestion" and by other under-cover methods still convince many high-minded people that some measure of ambiguity, some dissembling of our intentions is helpful and right in social therapeutics. Thus in "The Family" for November, 1922, Miss Marjory Warren of the Boston Family Welfare Society points out three possible situations in which the social worker is justified in deceiving a client:

- (1) "In cases of suspected mental trouble."
- (2) When the obdurate unmarried mother refuses to let her family know of her trouble.
- (3) In "cruelty to children" cases where we have good grounds for suspecting immorality in the home.

In these cases the deception consists merely in concealing for a short time our intention and in investigating or imparting facts contrary to the client's wishes. Later we are to confess to him what we have done, after the results have justified — even in his eyes — the means which we have used.

But not everyone agrees to these ethics. A veteran social worker, Frederick Almy of Buffalo, asks in the December issue of "The Family" whether many others agree with Miss Warren that in these cases the end (and the motive?) justifies the means. But, so far (March, 1923) no answer to this question has appeared in "The Family."

Obviously, then, there is no unanimity among social workers on the ethics of employing towards clients a kindly and successful ruse. Yet there is evidence recently of a reaction against the use of such methods. Indeed the beneficent magician behind the white sheet has himself told me that to-day he would not use such a stratagem. He could work his kindly miracles without it. I am wholly of this, his later, opinion. Deception of any kind, no matter how good the motives and the results, is, I believe, wrong in social

work. Good ends do not justify bad means and can be obtained without them.

(c) *The technique of treatment* is never overshadowed by a consciousness of the miserable heredity or the loathsome environment recorded in many of these stories. The diagnosis seems to begin with the child as he is found. To the boy as he now is, likable and therefore not hopeless, a unique personality and therefore not the mirror-image of his sordid background, to the boy as a going concern, is applied the best that can be focused upon his reform.

I am impressed by the fact that the main principles of the treatment here used are much the same in every case. As in medicine we give in all infectious fevers very much the same diet and hygienic management although the fevers may be due each to a different germ, — so in delinquency. No matter what the boy or girl has done, the treatment starts in with the same essentials: sympathetic understanding (so far as this can be had), the discovery and cultivation of the child's strong points, the creative power of affection (when it can be developed), the dynamic of an ambition to "be somebody" and accomplish something, the influence of a Big Brother or a Big Sister, the discipline of regular school work, manual work, scouting, and pet animals. These powerful medicines are given to all. In their application to different individuals there is unending variety, but the main courses are always the same. Indeed I sometimes suspect that success would have been achieved almost as well without previous history as a guide — if treatment had begun with the child as he was found on his arrival at the home. But I put this heretical suspicion away.

(d) A memorable patience, a readiness to be content with small gains are shown in the campaigns waged at the Home against evil. "His pilfering had almost completely ceased, he lied less frequently and less readily." No sudden conversions, no moral revulsions are expected. Yet there is no compromise with evil; it is never given up as incurable.

X. LITERARY VALUES IN CASE-RECORDING

Few social workers have any idea that they are called upon to contribute to literature when they write up a case record for teaching purposes. They try to set down the essential facts and to give an accurate description of what happened. But they have been led to believe that dullness in a record is entirely pardonable, because color, sensationalism, and personal impressions are above all things to be eschewed.

Now it seems to me obvious that one cannot give a true picture of any episode in the life of a family or an individual and yet make it dull to read. The facts are never dull. It is only our catalogue that makes them so. If truth to life is our intention, we must, I think, realize that we are doomed to attempt literature. No modest confession of incompetence excuses us. The comedy, the tragedy, the poignant unexpectedness which emerge in almost every day of case work, cannot truthfully be left out of a record. But if we try to put them in, we are trying to write good literature and can escape neither its privileges nor its trials.

One of the outstanding merits of this book is the skill and vividness of its pictures. When the neighbors lend "a hand and a purse," how swiftly we are introduced to them! How much is told us in a few words about "Doughnuts," the squinting poet on whom even "God picked when he gave me cock eyes"; Doughnuts who was always "ready to write a poem in lamentation or celebration of any event of interest to him." Yet he was no sentimentalist, for a few lines later he remarks philosophically that: "If a man" (his step-father) "does n't treat you good, you've got to steal his doughnuts to get even with him."

Who can read unenlightened the mother's lament over her "Faginized" boy: "Maybe he lost respect for us" (his parents) "because he became an American and we are still greenhorns. He did n't want to speak our language to us and we could n't speak English, — so he was ashamed of us and made friends with bad boys If only we were n't so stupid and could understand the boys, maybe they would n't be so bad I even went to night school but the language would n't come to me."

Any new discovery in logic marks an epoch. Perhaps we see one in the final sentence of Fagin's pupil when, after describing "The Lobster" and his vile house, he is asked:

How long have you known the Lobster?

Since I was a kid.

Why is he called "The Lobster"?

'Cause he's as mean as a lobster.

What a nugget of wisdom and eloquence!

A woman who says "She don't want nothing" comes trailing about the Home. A small convalescent inmate reports her faint-hearted and transparent pretense that she wanted to see the Home itself. But, "believe me," says he, "she wanted to see the Home just like I want another boil on my neck."

The field of an overnight slum battle is drawn by a master hand: "Dilapidated bits of what had once been household effects were strewn in the streets, mute evidence of the brawls in which they had been used as missiles of the contending party."

Such passages are worth while in themselves. They are valuable not merely as instruction but as literature.

RICHARD C. CABOT.

CHILDREN ASTRAY

CHAPTER I

TRUANTS

CASE A, PAUL I—— “POETICAL DOUGHNUTS”

CASE B, THOMAS E—— “PEEWEE”

CASE C, IRVING I—— “THE PRIZE-FIGHTER”

CASE A

PAUL I——, "POETICAL DOUGHNUTS"

Entered September 10, 1918. Age 13 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Petty pilfering from parents and neighbors.
- (b) Arrested a number of times for vagrancy.
- (c) Bunking out for days at a time.
- (d) Particularly fond of stealing into all-night lunch-rooms, taking food, and appropriating some corner or counter, or space under the counter, as a bed.
- (e) Selling newspapers without a license.
- (f) Incurable, untruthful, and unmanageable.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Continued and obstinate truancy.
- (b) Several years' retardation.
- (c) Defiant and impertinent to teachers.
- (d) Showed good mental capacity, but refused to make any application of it.
- (e) Frequently came with bruises about body and black-and-blue marks, of which he complained to the teacher, saying that his stepfather had beaten him up at the request of his mother.
- (f) Would spend time scribbling "poetry" or vulgar parodies.
- (g) Used obscene language when reprov'd.
- (h) Teachers compelled to send him home frequently, to change filthy attire.

3. HOME

- (a) Very troublesome and unmanageable.
- (b) Petty thefts.
- (c) Quarrelsome; disobedient and defiant of any authority.
- (d) Would stay away for days; then would return hungry and dirty, and meet reprimands with obscene language and violent temper.
- (e) Would strike at stepfather when the latter beat him.
- (f) Enjoyed telling lies for the purpose of making trouble between his mother and stepfather.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Member of a street gang, which committed petty thefts and annoyed the neighborhood.
- (b) Bunking out nights, he would, if no lunch-room were available, creep through a cellar or climb through a window, into some store or home, and pass the night surreptitiously, purloining what he could lay hands upon.
- (c) Defied authority and mocked and taunted elders.
- (d) Fond of hanging around the burlesque theatres. Knew all the show-girls of the Burlesque Stock Company, and would run their errands and assist them in their dressing-rooms.
- (e) Juvenile Court Record:
 12-18-17. Charged with pilfering and truancy. Minor without proper care. Placed in care of Dr. H—— for two months.
 3-5-18. Minor without proper care. Parents notified and did not appear. Has stepfather, who, the boy says, beats him cruelly and will not let him stay at home. Boy has been sleeping outdoors and has no home. Sent to Reformatory, pending further hearing on April 5.
 4-5-18. Postponed until April 27, for investigation by Benevolent Society.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Pale, sickly-looking. Several pounds underweight.
- (b) Small in figure, appearing several years younger than his age.
- (c) Enlarged and diseased tonsils and adenoids. Badly carious teeth. Ugly, warty growths on hands. Scabies and pediculosis.
- (d) Enuresis.
- (e) General underdevelopment. Cross-eyed. Round-shouldered. Extraordinarily large feet.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:
 Intelligence: Mental capacity fifteen years. I. C. 1.05.
 Social classification, precocious mentality.
 Character: Apparently good basis, though from very neurotic parents. Rather poor organization; vagrancy, larceny, etc.

Health: Rather poor. Physical development inferior.

Impression: Case for institutional management. Sympathetic interest and intelligent guidance essential.

(b) Personality Traits:

Unclean about person and very careless in dress. Abhors clean clothes, and feels uncomfortable and unhappy in them.

Constantly grumbling and expressing dissatisfaction with orders and conditions about him.

Kind-hearted, generous to a degree, and very fond of animals.

Pleasure-loving; ever ready to forego the alluring book on adventure or dare-deviltry that he was devouring in some quiet corner, for the theatre, moving-picture performance, or picnic.

Irritable and obstinate when crossed. Amenable to reason, and inclined to give loyalty and affection to one he favors.

No taste or desire for nourishing and wholesome food; partial to sweetmeats.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: an illiterate, industrious day-laborer, who worked as a mason and bricklayer to support his family, consisting of his wife and two boys.

He was temperate, honest, and maintained his family as best he could during his lifetime. His abilities were extremely ordinary and he made little headway in the world. He died of heart trouble in the hospital, leaving his wife and children utterly unprovided for, and no known relatives. Two weeks after his death, his widow applied to the Charities for assistance. At that time, in 1908, the oldest boy was three years old, and the other not quite one year.

Mother: a stupid, ignorant woman, of careless habits and slovenly ways. She was a member of a large family of several brothers and sisters, all mediocre and hard-working people, but none able to be of any financial assistance to her in her widowhood.

She was supported by the Charities for four years after her husband's death, and then married again. Her second husband was a baker, whose earnings were meagre, and not sufficient to support the family.

At first, the mother attempted to make peace between her husband and the two boys in their altercations; but finding that she aroused the animosity of the man thereby, she abandoned the boys to their fate, and concentrated her interest upon the babies which followed in rapid succession.

Having neither spirit nor independence, she was a weakling and easily fell under the dominion of her husband, who completely mastered her.

Siblings: *Younger brother*, a bright, active little chap, became associated with a street gang of unsavory reputation, and at the age of ten was brought into the Juvenile Court at two distinct periods.

The second time, he was sent to a Reformatory till a further hearing could be had. He stayed at the institution for seven weeks, and at the end of that time was sent home.

Coming before the Court again, he was adjudged a minor without proper care, and turned over to the custody of the Benevolent Society, which found, and placed him in, a good private home. He was under the influences of a good environment and healthful atmosphere, and adjusted himself so well to his surroundings, that no further delinquencies have been reported.

Two younger half-sisters and a baby brother are apparently all normal, but too young for proper determination.

(b) *Developmental:*

He had been a normal baby at birth and had been breast-fed. His mother stated that she had been compelled to wean him at seven months, owing to another pregnancy, which had terminated unfortunately, and that he had not taken kindly to the food she had given him. He was frequently ill with stomach trouble, and had, during his second summer, a severe attack of summer complaint, from which she thought it a miracle that he escaped alive.

The poverty of his parents prevented his having the change of climate and food the doctor ordered at the time, and he remained weak and sickly. After his father's death, his mother gave him what care she could on the contributions allotted to her by the Charities. She was not physically strong, and the home was nearly always

very dirty and the children greatly neglected. Frequently the neighbors lent both a hand and a purse, to give the children some very necessary attention.

The advent of his stepfather was a sore trial to the boy, who found neither kindness nor affection in the man, and in return became surly, disobedient, and rebellious. The stepfather, resenting this attitude, and begrudging the boy the care and attention his wife at times gave her son, objected to his presence in the house, with disastrous results to all three.

The man had quarreled with his employer, and to spite the latter, had set up a sort of private bakery in his own home of two rooms, where the family of five members lived, dined, and slept, and specialized on doughnuts which he made at home.

These doughnuts he would daily send the boy to distribute to his customers, and the youngster would then see his opportunity to get even with the man by wrongfully disposing of them. He would either sell them, at less than the price set on them, to other customers than those designated, or he would give them, gratis, to such of his friends or cronies of the hour as appeared at the propitious moment.

Naturally there was a storm at home when the results of his salesmanship were discovered. The man would beat the boy unmercifully, and he retaliated by striking back, or finding a pleasant revenge in reprehensible actions which he deemed would hurt and annoy his stepfather.

The man would then order the boy from the house, and when the mother intervened, there would invariably follow scenes of violence and abuse, compelling the neighbors to interfere to prevent a "murder," as several of them claimed. The stepfather manifested no interest in the boy's wanderings, and on one occasion, during a very severe snow-storm, refused to permit the boy to receive shelter in the house, because he had stolen sixty-five cents from him the day before.

The angry protests of the neighbors gave the man no concern, and the S. P. C. C. was appealed to. The stepfather insisted that he was justified in his inhumanity, and demanded that the Charities relieve him of the boy's presence in his house, which was beginning to cause domestic difficulties between himself and his wife.

Taking to the streets while his disposition was being considered, the boy fell in with a gang, developed vagrancy and thievery, and was soon appearing in the Juvenile Court on various charges. He was at that time examined by mental specialists, who reported that he was normal mentally, and suggested that he be placed in a different environment.

He was admitted to a child-caring institution, which, at the end of three months, reported him as difficult and troublesome, and asked to be relieved of his care. Accordingly, he was transferred to a private home, and after a few weeks' trial, his boarding mother reported that he was impertinent, disobedient, and untruthful, and constantly quarreled with the other children in the house; and she requested that he be taken off her hands.

He was now sent to another private home, from which he ran away several times, the last time disappearing for two weeks and not returning till his clothes were almost in shreds and he himself really suffering from starvation. He said that he had been selling newspapers and living in the streets.

Brought into the Juvenile Court, he was sent to the Reformatory, pending a further hearing on the case; and subsequently the Children's Bureau, anxious to give him the last chance, sent him to the Orphanage.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Fond of smoking. Would pick up the butts of cigars or cigarettes wherever he could, and puff at them till they burned his fingers.

Liked to find a quiet nook or corner, and spend hours reading or composing "poetry."

Showed great interest and enthusiasm for his "garden," which he watched and watered during the spring and summer months with painstaking care and devoted attention.

Liked manual-training shops, but would willingly skip the hour to read a book or write a "poem."

Very desirous of being entrusted with the care of the animals in the Home, to all of which he was devoted. Frequently, he would save from his meals a choice tidbit for the dog.

Ready to write a "poem" in lamentation or celebration of any event of interest to him.

Indifferent to boys' sports and games.

Very anxious to participate in plays, entertainments, and dramatic recitals. Expressed great desire to write plays for the children for various holidays.

No sex-tendencies. Not the least interest manifested in girls.

(d) Home Conditions:

The report of the Charities states that, when the family was first rendered assistance, two weeks after the death of the father, the boy, little more than a baby, was wretchedly dirty and neglected. The mother claimed to be physically unable to look after her children, and the poor neighbors did all they could to assist her in her plight.

Inured to poverty and neglect almost in his infancy, the boy developed a callousness to dirt which, later in his boyhood, made him an uncouth, slovenly object, to be despised and ridiculed, even by those of his classmates who neither in person nor attire were by any means immaculate. Finding the school no more congenial or satisfying to him than his home, he became a truant, and soon was at odds with his teachers.

His mother, in her ignorance, either could not or would not coöperate with the school, and the boy found what solace and happiness he could in the harum-scarum life of the streets.

The coming of a stepfather into the family served only to make his lot in life harder, as the man had no liking for him from the first, and spared no efforts to arouse the antagonism and hatred of the lad, who refused obedience and respect to his commands. In his childish way, he attempted to "get even" for wrongs and punishments he deemed unjustly given him, and went from bad to worse in his endeavors to show his resentment.

From the street-gang, he learned and absorbed enough of the manners and vices of the young desperadoes to cause concern and apprehension to the community, which gradually began to suffer the results of his unhappy training.

When admitted to the child-caring institution, he was too troublesome to be given the general attention devoted to the average child; and in the private homes to which he was subsequently sent, his earlier associations were too strong for the gentle home-influences, which touched him not at all.

(e) Mental Interests:

Reading dime novels and writing "poetry."

THE TREATMENT

He himself, when informed by the Children's Bureau that in all probability his future destination was the Reformatory, appealed earnestly to be sent to the Orphanage, giving as an all-powerful reason the fact that he had met some of the Home's boys at school, and had liked them so well that he had given them doughnuts.

Such a recommendation being indisputable, he was informed that his plea was valid and he would be permitted a short trial at the Home. So it happened that when, in the convoy of the probation officer, who had improved his time as an escort by sundry exhortations and threats of more or less effect, he drew near the institution and was spied by a favorite or two, he was given a triumphal entry.

"Hey, fellars, there's Doughnuts coming," rang throughout the yard; and as he passed into the vestibule, there were welcoming faces grinning encouragement, and frantically waving hands beckoning to him, at the glass door which divided the hall from the yard. The sullen, dark frown on his face lifted and he grinned back in cordial greeting. Two of the bolder spirits separated themselves from the throng of faces and, careless of consequences, formed themselves into an additional escort; and thus accompanied he was marched into the office.

"This is Doughnuts, he's all right," announced one bold spirit, with a defiant look at the probation officer.

"He's a regular guy, sure," affirmed the other bold one, stoutly maintaining a malignant stare at the surprised official, who glanced from one to the other in undisguised amazement.

"Well, what have you to say for yourself?" the boy was asked.

Taken aback, he stammered something unintelligible, turned red, and hung his head in embarrassment and discomfort.

"Sh—h—h! Don't be afraid," encouraged one mentor in a stage whisper.

"Aw, shucks, why don't you open your mouth?" the second guide tried to inspire him.

"He is a bad egg," began the officer sternly; but was interrupted by the sudden tilt of the bent head, and two eyes, albeit cross-eyed ones, flashing angrily. "I ain't done nuthin' to you, mister," he cried, "so why do you pick on me?"

"He ain't no bad egg," insisted one defender.

"Course not," affirmed the other.

Both champions were excused from further attendance; and after the officer had fulfilled his errand, the boy, after many peculiar twitchings and movings from one chair to another, finally put a very dirty little hand into a very filthy pocket, and, after a moment's pause, produced an extremely dirty small newspaper package. With black, dirt-caked tiny fingers, he undid the bit of string, and carefully brought to view an unnaturally large and greasy doughnut. "For you," he said; and added triumphantly, "I stole it from my stepfather 'fore that man came for me. It's fresh!"

"If you had made it yourself, it would have been a fine present, but it's something that does n't belong to you."

"Aw, that's all right, that's all right," he interrupted eagerly, "takings havings, don'tcher know? I gave lots o' them doughnuts away; that's why they all call me 'Doughnuts,'" he explained glibly.

The next half hour was invested in arguments tending to prove that "takings were not havings," and he listened, with apparent attention, and then observed quietly, "But if a man don't treat you good, you got to steal his doughnuts to show 'im."

"Perhaps stealing his doughnuts is what made the man treat you badly," was intimated.

"Nope," he shook his head decidedly, "he started treating me bad first, and then I took them doughnuts to sell them and make money." He stopped and thought for a few moments and then burst out hotly, "Holy chee, it's awful! They don't let you sell papers and make money, and they don't let you take money — how is a fellar going to get three cents a day for them books, I'd like to know?"

"What books?"

"See — these here." He put his begrimed hand into the torn bosom of his ragged, soiled blouse, and produced two paper-backed, finger-marked, and much-used volumes, showing considerable wear and tear, which he regarded with tenderness.

"What are their names?"

"You want to know?" With anxious eagerness, he held them spread out, the better to show their titles.

"One is 'Dick Carter's Legacy.' — O my! — it's wonderful — best book you ever read; and the other is, 'Daisy, the Gentleman Burglar's Daughter' — Chee, it's great! I only got it this afternoon, so I'm not finished yet, but I'm all finished with Dick Carter — want to hear about him?" And he rushed breathlessly on to tell of the Dare-devil Dick in quest of a mysterious legacy.

He had to pause a moment to catch his breath.

"How long does it take you to read one of those books?"

"Three a day," he answered. "You can't get 'em in the library," he confided, "'cause I tried. So I loan them from Tom Simons for a penny a book — an' it costs me three cents nearly every day."

Part of the reason for his confiscation of the doughnuts was clear. "Sometimes, when I have n't got three cents, I give six doughnuts for loaning the books," he added; and then, as if anxious to prove that at times he was swayed by unselfish motives and considerations, he put in, "And I always gave the boys from the Home doughnuts for nothing."

"Why?"

He looked up, astonished at the question, evidently uncertain of his ground. "Well — well," he fumbled, "guess because they're orphans — and you got to treat orphans good."

Suddenly he reverted to his troubles. "Them teachers are mean," he complained; "when they'd catch me reading my books, they'd grab them away and throw them in the trash basket."

"Possibly the reading kept you from doing your school-work?" he was asked.

"Sure," he assented cheerfully, without hesitation; "sometimes they keep me from going to school altogether." He patted his books affectionately. "They don't learn me nothing at school, anyway," he remarked indifferently.

"What do you want to be when you grow up?"

Quickly came the surprising answer, without a moment's hesitation. "A poet," he said.

"A poet?"

"Sure thing," he reiterated nonchalantly. "Sure, I'm going to write poetry in the morning, and books like that in the afternoon, and in the night I'm going to go to all the theatres, and dance buck and wing."

"Have you tried to write poetry yet?"

"Sure thing, — Wait! Here it is!"

From some impossible and unsuspected receptacle in his blouse, he produced a bedraggled and frayed bit of note-paper, and read with great pride, and much gusto:

"My old man, he told me to ring the bell
On stores, and houses, and cellars, so well
I took them doughnuts right out to sell,
Made money and told him to go to hell."

"Ain't it good?" he questioned, eagerly, awaiting the expected approval.

It was very tactfully suggested to the "poet" that there was room for improvement, and meanwhile he was put in the charge of his supervisor, with the suggestion that he clean up thoroughly, and then show himself as he really was.

Among the children, he was known by the name of "Doughnuts" exclusively, and he responded to no other. While his physical welfare was receiving attention, Mark Twain was surreptitiously substituted for the creator of the "Gentleman Burglar's Daughter"; and it was observed with great satisfaction that "Tom Sawyer" was crowding out the admirable "Dick Carter" and his "Legacy" also.

Books of poetry were presented to the would-be poet, and he was advised to make note of the fact that the poets were all well-educated men. "Holy chee!" he ejaculated, "school takes up so much time, when did they get time to write poems?"

It was with difficulty that he was finally persuaded to go to school, which he hated and despised with all his soul. It seemed that his conceit, of which he had a goodly measure, suffered greatly in the classroom, and he was determined to avoid the humiliation of being considered stupid. Frequently he played truant from the special class in which he had been put, and as he would return from school at the proper time, his attendance was always taken for granted till a communication to the contrary from the teacher reached the office. On one occasion, he presumptively went to and from school for two weeks in succession; but, in reality, he waited till all the children had gone to their rooms, and then absconded and reverted to his old haunts and his former activities, till the teacher became suspicious of his confederate. This young worthy, an "orphan," had benefited from the former donations of doughnuts, and his gratitude prevailing over his discretion, he had agreed to present daily a doctored note, purporting to come from the office, and giving the sad information that, owing to illness, his friend could not attend school. When the illness turned into "neumony," the teacher's interest in the spelling was the direct cause of the fraud being discovered.

For the next few months, the future "poet" was accompanied to and from school by a trusty monitor, till the task of regular attendance became a habit. Then it was that the school had a salutary effect upon him, and he became interested in his work. Exceedingly bright, he made rapid progress, and was promoted without difficulty.

In the Home, his first six months' sojourn was attended with many trials and tribulations to his supervisors, whose patience

was often sorely tried with rather clever lies and impertinence. His favorite method of receiving permission for several hours' absence was to learn of some prospective errand and beg to be entrusted with it; then off he would fly to the burlesque theatre, where the girls made much of him, and the scene-shifters permitted him to assist them at their work. He would return, contrite and apologetic, and promise never to repeat his misdemeanor; or he would find some excuse more or less reasonable.

Brought to the office on one occasion, when he had so completely forgotten his errand that he had stayed till the evening performance was over, he stated that he had been quite anxious to tear himself away, but there was such a wonderful dancer, who had bewitched him to such an extent that he had felt inspired to write a poem to her.

"But she didn't appreciate it at all," he complained bitterly, "because she and the other girls laughed at it."

"Then why not write poems and plays for the girls here, who would appreciate your efforts?"

He heartily agreed to the plan proposed, and in his ardent efforts as "poet" and "impresario" for an entertainment in celebration of a coming holiday, he was kept so busy and contented, that there was a general feeling of relief regarding him. The success of the performance, which he regarded as his exclusive feat, encouraged his ambition, and he readily agreed to a proposition that he become a regular contributor to the Home publication.

Also, he took very kindly to the suggestion that he study the printing trade and learn to set up his own compositions. So elated was he with the first stick of type he set up, that he composed the following "poem" to commemorate the auspicious occasion:

SETTING TYPE

[To the tune of "Bubbles"]

I'm forever setting type,
Little type in the stick:
They crowd together,
In any weather,
And all I do
Is set and gather
Copy always piling,
Copy with a kick.
I'm forever setting type,
Little type in the stick.

As he became a proficient printer and a dignified contributor, his escapades became fewer, and he became more reliable on the

errands with which he was entrusted without solicitation. Through his ambition to be a poet and a writer, which seemed to grow with him, he was encouraged to read good books and to endeavor to attain a high standard at school. Always popular with the children, he was greatly liked by them through the efforts he exerted to coach them in the plays he would write for their Entertainment Committee.

He became interested in Scouting; but the Scout oaths and laws, and particularly the long hikes, did not appeal to him, and finally he decided that he should become, first, a famous poet, and then a Scout.

As some ideas of cleanliness were slowly inculcated in his mind, and, with the disappearance of the warts and other excrescences, appeared better manners and more tidy habits, he became aware that his eyes were crossed most unpoetically. As the physicians advised against an operation, his defective vision continued a sore trial to him, and while wearing the lenses that had been ordered for his benefit, he nourished grief and resentment at the injustice that had been done him.

"No wonder that baker made me so much trouble," he remarked in his bitterness, one day at the office, "when even God picked on me and gave me cock eyes."

"The eyes will improve as you grow older, and if you'll take good care of your mind, you'll have no complaints to make in the future," he was told.

"Yes, but you can see the eyes and you don't see the mind," he mourned.

Several days later, on his return from school, he flew into the office, with flushed face and both cross eyes beaming with unmistakable happiness. "Guess what!" he panted.

"Well — what?"

"No wonder I got cross eyes," he cried exultingly; "you know you got to have something crazy if you're going to be a poet."

Quickly he dived down into his bag, brought forth a book, in eager excitement, and triumphantly opened it at a marked place, his index finger pointing stoutly to the title of the poem, "The Eve of Waterloo." "See that?" he breathed in a whisper.

"Yes — well?" he was encouraged.

"You know Lord Byron wrote that — I think it's the greatest poem ever written by anybody — don't you think so?" And without waiting for an answer, he rushed on, "And the teacher said Lord Byron had a — had — O jiminy, I forgot what she called it — but I guess it was a — cross feet — something like

that. Now, you see why I got cross eyes? I'm going to be a poet all right."

Cross eyes as an inspiration to poetry were distinctly original; but he was encouraged in his happy ideas, and the effect was distinctly visible in his progress at school and in the Home. No more were his eyes his badge of affliction, but rather a promise of honors to come. As he passed into the Eighth Grade with honorable mention, he applied himself to the study of poetry in earnest during his leisure time, and committed to memory several cantos of "Childe Harold's Pilgrimage." Lord Byron remained his favorite poet, and he was busily engaged upon a poem that was intended to "shine" beside "The Eve of Waterloo," when a "garden" was allotted to him.

As a war measure, every available patch of productive soil in the back yard had been utilized for planting various vegetables, and the older boys and the "problems" were assigned each a portion of the land, and prizes offered for the best garden.

Lord Byron's future rival took to the soil with a spontaneity and vim that boded ill for his poetic aspirations. Everything was forsaken for his garden; he watched, worked, watered, and tended his patch of ground till it was really a model bit of horticulture. Deserted were his former beloved quiet nooks where he could read and dream in peace, and forsaken completely were his poets and their admired poetry. He read anything and everything pertaining to plant-life, and his first cucumber he carried around for days, preciously guarded in the recesses of his blouse.

The summer spent outdoors was a most invigorating tonic to him, and he improved physically to a remarkable extent. He had never been quite so happy, active, and contented. He even lost the resentment with which he had always greeted his mother upon her occasional visits, and though he still cared little about making any visits home, he displayed a more friendly attitude to his family, his stepfather included.

"It's wonderful to see how things grow," he would frequently comment, as he would march proudly into the office, bearing in triumph a large beet or an enormous carrot.

The winner of the first prize, he came in with arms filled with his treasured produce, a radiant smile upon his happy face, and announced, "I guess I want to be a farmer."

"How about your poetry?"

He grinned sheepishly. "Guess I want to be a farmer first — and a poet second."

As his ambitions did not change during the coming year, arrangements were made for his entrance to a Farm School, when he should be ready to leave the Home.

THE RESULT

From Record in the Benevolent Society:

"In September, 1921, Paul I—— was discharged from the Orphanage and placed in a private home. The boy seems to have improved considerably. He is more manly and dresses more neatly. He has applied to the N—— Farm School at ——, application to be acted upon in February, 1922."

February 23, 1922.

Dear Friend:

Knowing your deep interest in the boys and girls, your former wards in the Orphanage, I am sure you will be pleased to hear that Paul I——'s application to the N—— Farm School has been favorably passed upon and the boy will enter the School within the next few weeks.

He is a nice, manly little chap and we are quite proud of him.

Yours very sincerely,

L. O. G.,

Executive Secretary of Children's Bureau.

CASE B

THOMAS E——, "PEEWEE"

Entered January 31, 1917. Age 11 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Stealing.
- (b) Habitual and incorrigible truant.
- (c) Wandering about the streets during the day and bunking out at night.
- (d) Employing vile and obscene language; defiant to authority.
- (e) Member of a street gang which broke into and robbed homes.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Several years' retardation caused by truancy.
- (b) Unmanageable, troublesome, and impertinent to principal and teachers.
- (c) Constant stealing from the principal's office, the teacher's desk, and the classroom, indiscriminately.
- (d) Assisted by younger brother, would pick locks in closet doors, and break windows, in attempts to burglarize the school, despite the watchfulness and care of the janitor.
- (e) Influenced other boys to truancy and delinquency.

3. HOME

- (a) Pilfering and lying.
- (b) Ridiculing and mocking parents' efforts to gain obedience.
- (c) Answering reproofs with temper tantrums, vile language, and broken window-panes.
- (d) Fond of insulting his father with obscene jeers and taunts; and when the man's fury was aroused, would "beat it" for several days, having in his possession some ill-gotten booty from the home, to be disposed of to the best advantage.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) A "terror" in the neighborhood.
- (b) Recognizing no authority, and determined to have his own way.
- (c) Would "get even" with a complainant, by becoming friendly with the latter's children, and encouraging them to misdeeds.

(d) Juvenile Court Record:

- 4-17-16. Feloniously entering Public School No. 40, and stealing one lot of pencils and copy-books. Dismissed.
- 4-26-16. Burglariously breaking and entering the office of the M—— Lumber Co., and stealing twenty cigars valued at one dollar, one pocket-knife valued at 50 cents, six pencils valued at 30 cents, one rule valued at 15 cents, and four keys valued at one dollar. Dismissed.
- 4-28-16. Charged with being an habitual and incorrigible truant. Committed to a disciplinary school.
- 1-23-17. Feloniously entering A——'s laundry office, with intent to steal. Got into the laundry chute. Postponed to January 30. Referred to Miss R——, who will get him admitted to some institution. 1-30-17. Committed to the Children's Bureau.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Considerably undersized and underweight. In appearance but a tiny, frail youngster of six years.
- (b) Very wiry. Extremely dark, with straight, black hair, sharp, bright, jet-black eyes, restlessly darting quick glances now here, now there, seemingly always on the alert.
- (c) Dark skin, tanned almost to swarthinness, and small, thin features. He looked like nothing so much as a tiny, fugitive gypsy.
- (d) Shoulders so round, that the back appeared curved, but the action and motion of the small body was as quick and graceful as the movements of a bird.
- (e) Festering sores over body, cuts and bruises upon face and hands. Nails broken.
- (f) Neglected teeth; diseased and swollen tonsils.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:

Intelligence: Mental capacity normal. I. C. 1.00.

Character: Hereditary basis neurotic.

Boy's behavior indicates a neurotic temperament; that is, a poor basis for character. Character organization appears poor (larceny, truancy, etc.).

Health: Poorly nourished. Very poor physical develop-

ment. In urgent need of medical care; abnormal symptoms of heart and blood, requiring attention.

Impression: Apparently a child needing physical up-building and long institutional or probational training.

(b) Personality Traits:

Very untidy in personal habits. Violently protesting against the use of water or a comb. Unless watched, would hide fresh clean clothes, preferring soiled and ragged garments.

Irritable, stubborn, and obstinate.

Very poor eater; just nibbling at food, and having no special preference.

Slept very poorly. Occasional nightmares and enuresis.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: illiterate, quarrelsome, and very cruel to his wife and family; was a plasterer by trade, who worked at odd intervals, at small wages.

He was very small in size, barely more than four feet tall, abnormal in intellect, and extremely high-tempered. He had been diagnosed as a low-grade moron. Lazy and shiftless, he never made a livelihood for his family, and had been assisted by the Charities since 1912, when he first applied for relief. At that time, he claimed that accident and sickness were responsible for his poverty, and that "a little help" would put him on his feet.

As his family increased, he took to drinking and associating with women of ill-repute, squandering his insufficient wages upon his dissipations. He always found some trite excuse to make for his delinquencies, claiming, among other things, that his wife did not know how to take care of the children, and as a result they were not trained well, and were disobedient and disrespectful to him. He maintained that, as the "breadwinner" of the family, it was not just to expect him to take a hand in caring or bothering about the children, after he came home exhausted from his day's work.

Frequently, when drunk, he would beat his wife; and not till his sons were old and strong enough either to outwit or to return his blows, did his brutality to them in any way abate.

His only known relatives were two brothers, bricklayers by trade, who, like him, were undersized and illiter-

ate, but, unlike him, were devoted to their families, giving their weekly wages regularly to their respective wives. Their children were normal and healthy, though several were rather small in stature, and they presented no problem either at home or in school.

Mother: almost a dwarf in appearance, called forth the curiosity and attention given to a freak, by reason of her abnormal size.

She had been a factory-girl at the time she met and married her husband, and her small savings vanished shortly after her marriage. She accepted her husband's cruel treatment of her with vindictive hatred and reproach, enlisting the sympathy and aid of her children as they grew older.

She had no known relatives, having been brought up as an orphaned and friendless child in some institution. Her mentality was of very low type, she having been pronounced a mental defective by Dr. T——, who examined her in March, 1918. In addition to poverty and unhappiness, she was suffering with heart trouble.

Siblings: *Oldest sister,* was a normal, fairly attractive girl, of ordinary size, whose schooling had been so haphazard and cursory, that at the age of thirteen she was in the Fourth Grade, and made no further progress.

In 1918, a Wasserman test was given to all the members of the family, and hers proved to be positive. She was treated at the hospital, being at that time fourteen years of age. When her condition had improved, it was deemed advisable not to discharge her to her home, where, she complained, her father and mother quarreled continually, making life unbearable for her.

She was sent to a working girls' club, and it was reported six months later that she had made remarkable progress during her stay at the institution. A trade was being taught her, with the object of making her self-supporting, when her mother came to her with pleas of lonesomeness and unhappiness, and the girl left the Club to return to her parents' home.

In November, 1921, the family opened a small store, of which the girl was practically in charge. The man was too lazy to take care of the business, the woman too ill and ignorant; and upon the girl fell the difficult task of placating the customers whom her father insulted, and making the small profit that should support the family.

The last report was that she was bearing the burden bravely and faithfully.

Younger brother, two years younger than he, was his confidant, partner, and coadjutor in all his delinquencies and misdeeds.

The following is the boy's Juvenile Court Record:

4-17-16. Feloniously entering Public School No. 40, and stealing lot of pencils and copy-books. Dismissed.

4-26-16. Burglariously breaking into and entering the office of the M—— Lumber Co., and stealing various articles. Referred to Miss R—— and the Children's Bureau. Miss C—— will supervise the family, and asks continuance of the case. Postponed to May 8; then to May 16; then to November 16, when it was dismissed at the request of Miss C——, who has the boy under supervision.

1-23-17. Feloniously entering A——'s laundry, with intent to steal. Got into the laundry chute. Postponed. Then referred to Miss R——, who will get him admitted to some institution.

11-12-19. Charged with being incorrigible and beyond the control of his parents. Committed to the Children's Bureau.

8-17-20. Minor without proper care. Committed to the Reformatory.

In 1914, at the age of six, the boy was in the hospital suffering with a heart condition. The diagnosis was mitral stenosis.

Upon his discharge, he started his career of misdeeds, under the influence and encouragement of his brother. At his first appearance in the Juvenile Court, his teacher stated that he was bright, did good work, and that his attendance at school was regular.

Later, it was reported that he was exceedingly troublesome at school, and upon being reproved for his disorderly conduct, had set fire to an automobile belonging to one of the school officials; also threatening to burn that officer's home.

He stayed out late at nights, would not attend school, and smoked cigarettes.

In 1918, the Wasserman test given him was found to be negative. He was then admitted to the Orphanage, but a medical examination proving him to have, in addition to

his heart condition, an active case of tuberculosis, he was sent at once to the Consumptives' Sanitorium. Six weeks later, the hospital was compelled to send him home because he was exceedingly troublesome and unmanageable.

Upon his sister's complaint that he was "running wild," stealing things from home and selling them, and also that he had broken almost every window-pane and door-lock in the house, he was brought to the Children's Bureau for a consultation as to his disposal. In view of his lung and heart condition, the medical authorities agreed that some good home in the country was essential for him.

He was sent to three country boarding homes in succession, each time the boarding home mother reporting that he was mischievous, destructive, and unmanageable, and refusing to try her patience further with him. At his last home, he had been enrolled in a Parochial School, which reported that, at the time he attended his classes, he was bright and quick to learn. However, when he was absent from the school for three weeks, he sold papers, slept in cellars and backyards, and the boarding home mother refused to harbor him further.

Returned to his own home, he was constantly quarreling with his father, whom he disliked and distrusted. The father had him arrested once for breaking the store window; and at another time, was running after the boy to punish him, when the youngster, in his anxiety to escape, ran right into a passing machine.

The accident was not a serious one, but the inadvisability of permitting the boy to remain at his home was apparent. He was sent to a specially good boarding home in the suburbs, and after several weeks' stay was returned, because of his inability to conform to a regular, wholesome routine of life, and of his petty pilfering from the members of the family.

Unfortunately, his physical condition was still such that the physicians considered him a possible source of tubercular infection to the children in the Orphanage.

Finally, early in 1920, he was summoned to the Juvenile Court on the charge of theft, and appeared there, unkempt, sullen, and disagreeable. Dr. W—— who examined him, reported:

"Heart condition, mitral insufficiency, a serious and incurable matter, and one that will handicap the boy very

much throughout his life. If his spiritual welfare requires it, there is no reason why he should be debarred from an institution and its normal routine. He should not enter into any form of athletic contests which would require supreme physical effort, but should not be denied the ordinary forms of exercise."

He was admitted to a child-caring institution, where he remained till August 14, when he was discharged because of his outrageous behavior. He had run away from the institution a number of times. Several days later, he was committed to the Reformatory.

In November, 1921, the Superintendent of the Reformatory reported that, when the boy entered his institution, he was a physical, mental, and moral problem, and that, even though he had shown a remarkable improvement, he was not yet ready to leave the institution.

Younger Sister, too young for definite characterization. Apparently normal.

Youngest brother, a baby, normal in appearance.

(b) Developmental:

As far as could be learned from the mother, he was a healthy, normal baby, and had the usual children's diseases, mildly. His sister remembered that his first objectionable act was to turn upon his father, who had been beating him; and, grasping the nearest weapon, which happened to be the poker, he struck his parent with it. He could have been scarcely five years old at the time.

After that occurrence, he was more at home on the streets than in the house, eating and sleeping but seldom with his family, and losing no opportunity to make the acquaintance of worldly-wise youngsters, whose influence was to affect him most seriously.

He took readily enough to the reckless deviltry of his older associates; and with no counteracting influence in his environment, he proceeded naturally upon his daring career of juvenile delinquencies.

Not till the doors of the disciplinary school first closed upon him, had he been in an atmosphere where peace and order were in the routine of the day. In this semi-reform institution he, after several months' stay, progressed fairly well; unfortunately, he was discharged to his home too soon, and almost immediately suffered a relapse from the

acquired normality, which was not strong enough to withstand the sudden change.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Careless and thoughtless about personal effects. When missing some article, would immediately appropriate another boy's, without consideration or question.

Fond of cigarette smoking. An adept in rolling his own tobacco and making his own cigarette.

Craved affection, and was devoted to his mother in a curious way: he was rather interested in her welfare, and afraid that his father would ill-treat her, but he was ashamed of her appearance, and would suggest to her to send him a postal card and let him know when she was coming, and he would meet her somewhere. "Don't come here," he admonished her; "you are so little, the boys make fun of you, and laugh."

A scrapper. Ready to adjust his differences at a moment's notice, and with an antagonist several times his size.

Always prepared to fib and lie to get himself out of a predicament, but, when confronted with evidence of his wrongdoing, broke down and confessed quickly.

Interested only in the "movies" and the burlesque theatres.

(d) **Home Conditions:**

The home had always been in a very poor neighborhood, where squalor and wretchedness abounded. The tenants of the dingy, ramshackle dwellings, who were the friends and neighbors of the family, were, in the main, themselves unhappy and unfortunate, and unable to render any assistance, either material or moral, to the wife, with whom they sympathized. They also condemned the man for his treatment of her, and, further, prophesied that the boy "would end his days on the gallows."

There were none among them who at any time extended a helping or a friendly hand to the youngster; on the contrary, it was rather a favorite sport either to affront him with curses, or to throw water at him, if he ventured within their reach.

The home had always been untidy and poverty-stricken. At times, the quarreling between the man and his wife became so bitter, that neighbors were forced to interfere.

As soon as the boy was old enough to shift for himself, he flouted parental authority, and followed his own will as he pleased. He had been given scanty care in his earliest childhood, and when he deserted the sordid and unhappy home for the streets, he but passed from one erratic and unwholesome existence to another.

(e) Mental Interests:

None.

THE TREATMENT

He had hardly graced the Home with two hours of his presence, when it was discovered that he had purloined various articles belonging to the children and his supervisor, and had also disappeared. The next day, he was discovered at a down-town corner, selling newspapers, dirty, bedraggled, and soaked with the rain which had been steadily falling for two days in succession.

In the office, to which he had been brought with no little difficulty, he screwed up his tiny, elfin features into a defiant pout, and impertinently declared, "I ain't gonna stay in this here joint — an' yuh can't make me."

Questioned as to what he had done with the missing articles, he at first denied all knowledge of them, and tearfully asserted, "I ain't gonna be blamed for nuthin'." But when taken severely to task, and given clearly to understand that he had been seen by several boys going off with a large bundle over the fence in the yard, he coolly observed, "P'haps it was 'nuther boy."

Upon being assured that it was he and no other boy who had been seen making off, he finally admitted: "Yep, I got a greenie for 'em from the rag-man."

Objecting and protesting, he was compelled to lead the way to the shop where he had disposed of his stolen property; and there, after an interview with the proprietor, and the exchange of a "greenie" (one dollar) for goods of much greater value, he was given the large bundle he had appropriated, and informed that he must distribute the articles to their rightful owners.

It was indeed a stupefied youngster who walked out into the street, his brows knit in evident amazement, and almost staggering under the weight of the bundle that undoubtedly must have tasked his tiny body. In the car, he made several attempts to steal away whenever he imagined himself for a moment unobserved, but each time his attempt was seen and frustrated. He stared about him furtively, his active brain seeking and devising ways and means of escape.

It was both an annoying and an unusual experience to him to be compelled to return property he had stolen; and to add insult to injury, he had been informed that it was expected of him to return the "greenie" he had wrongly secured, at some time in the near future.

"But I ain't got 'im no more," he remonstrated.

"Then you'll have to save all the money you get from your visitors, till you return that dollar," he was told.

He looked up perplexed, his lips quivering in his dismay and discomfiture.

"But my fadder ain't no good, and never's got money, — and my mudder, — she ain't got no money — ever," he objected.

"Then by good conduct you will earn a quarter every two weeks, given by a gentleman to children who get no spending money from their folks."

"Aw, chee, there's lots of quarters in a greenie," he responded reproachfully.

"How many do you think?" he was asked.

He wrinkled his tiny nose a moment in thought. "Eight — ten," he finally ventured.

Then, evidently having no faith in his own computation of figures, he put in hastily, "That there school I gone to — that's no good. She don' learn you nuthin'."

"Too bad! Suppose we try another school then?"

He looked his disgust and unhappiness. "Gotta go to school?" he queried anxiously.

"Sure thing! You want to know how many quarters there are in a dollar, don't you?"

He nodded his head perfunctorily. But his bright eyes clearly betrayed the thoughts flooding the quick, active brain, and promising him escape from this tyranny.

He passively permitted himself to be immersed a long time in an unaccustomed and hated bath, and without the demurring of the previous day to a similar proceeding, tacitly consented to an entire change of his apparel.

Then he came into the office, his body cleansed, but his mind in the mud and mire of his floundering temptations and desires.

"Well, going to start right this time?" he was asked.

"Aw," he growled, "I don' like it here. Lemme go to me home."

"Think you'd like the Reformatory better than this place?"

He seemed startled, and his keen, black eyes had a frightened look in them.

"No-o, si — no!" he ejaculated quickly.

"Any of your friends in the Reformatory, now?" he was asked, quietly.

He nodded his head.

"Who?"

Hastily, he rattled off a list of names. "Sim Bones, he run 'way from that joint," he confided, "and he don' like it, and he sez to keep 'way from that joint. Guess it's lots worse 'n this here joint."

"Do you think you can be on the square, if you get a square deal here?" was put to him.

"Yuh wanna give me a square deal?" he queried suspiciously.

"Yes, if you deserve it," he was assured.

"What for do yuh wanna give me a square deal?" he questioned, with brows knit in amazement.

"Because we want to give you a chance to quit being bad."

"Why?" he persisted, as if apparently not fully satisfied with the explanation.

"Because there are enough bad boys in the world without you, and we want you to have a chance to be good. Think you can stop stealing things if you try real hard?"

He glanced up, a quizzical look on his face. The question was repeated.

"Guess it's gonna be awful hard," he admitted, very slowly and thoughtfully.

"Want to try it here, or do you think it would be best to send you to the Reformatory now, and stop bothering with you?"

He was at once galvanized to a decision. "Aw, sure yuh try me out here," he said quickly.

Though his fear of the Reformatory offered a strong hold upon him, it was not a powerful enough deterrent to keep him from the commission of offenses that were almost habits with him. He stole whatever his fingers touched, and had to be reprimanded constantly, and deprived of some privilege he desired, mainly a trip to the "movies" or to a theatre, as punishment for his misdeed.

Frequently, he would wander off, to be gone for several days, till found in some market-place, asleep under a stall or a pushcart, very much the worse for lack of food and rest. He would be kept in bed for a day or two, till his active temperament asserted itself and made his enforced quietude a most unbearable punishment. He would then plead to be permitted to dress and go downstairs, promising in the most extravagant terms the most virtuous behavior for the future.

He started to attend school, unwillingly enough; but, by slow

degrees, the talks given him in the office of the Home and at the principal's office in school, had the beneficial effect of arousing shame in him. It was pointed out to him that children of kindergarten age were further advanced than he, and that, if only he so desired, he could easily be at the head of his class. The reward of a membership in the Junior Scout Troop, which had appealed to him, was promised him, if he received honorable mention at the end of the school term. It was at this time that he paid his debt of four quarters, not without reluctance.

Though his extremely small stature prevented him from being given an active part in the manual-training classes, he still was assigned to various small duties in the printing and carpentry classes, in the hope that his time would be too fully occupied for his mind to concoct mischief. At first he cared little for the boys' games and exercises; but envying the "muscle" some of the boys boastfully displayed on proper and improper occasions, he attempted to join in their sports, hoping to become strong and sturdy like some of the youngsters he admired. Another powerful incentive was that, upon his mother's first visit, the boys, with characteristic childish thoughtlessness and tactlessness, had mocked the poor deformed creature's strange appearance, and christened her "Mrs. Peewee."

In blind fury he had leaped upon the boy nearest him, and by fighting, scratching and clawing that one, endeavored to give vent to his anger against the many. His pugilistic advances were instantly resented by his opponent, and the two were finally brought into the office to settle the dispute, very much the worse for bleeding noses and sundry bruises on face and hands.

"Nobody ain't goin' to call my old lady no Peewee," he asserted, defiantly, his small figure erect and drawn to the full height of his few inches.

"I'm bigger 'n she, and she's married and has children," observed the other, giving voice to the surprise that still evidently held him in its grip.

When peace had been restored by apologies given and received on both sides, the adversaries left, on a friendly footing, and soon were amicably engaged in a game of marbles.

The altercation was almost completely forgotten, when, several days later, the youngster presented himself at the office, with both a perturbed and confused expression on his face.

"Well, son?" he was encouraged.

"I — I don't want to be a peewee," he burst out, nervously fingering his blouse; "I — I — want to grow big like them boys."

Unsuspectingly, he presented a vulnerable part in his adamant composition. The opportunity was eagerly grasped for a talk with him upon the relative advantages offered to him, in comparison to the lack of them in his parents' lives. He was informed of the benefits he would derive from a normal, wholesome life, physically and mentally, and he appeared more impressed than at any other interview.

After this, he more readily ate his meals and no longer objected to the extra nourishment prescribed for him. He also no longer protested that it was too early to go to bed, and made both pitiful and desperate efforts to acquire the much envied "muscle." His conduct also improved, and his schooling was attended with fewer mishaps and difficulties. Now and then he suffered a relapse; but, on the whole, it became evident that time and patience would have beneficial effects upon him.

At the end of a year, while he had mentally made some strides in a good direction, his body remained as frail and puny as when he had entered the institution. Medical services were enlisted, and it was discovered that he was suffering from a heart affection, and also curvature of the spine. He was given a Wassermann test, which was found to be triple positive. Condition not infectious.

He was sent to a hospital for treatment, where he remained six months. It was during this period, when the children of the Home vied with one another in bringing dainties to him, and showing their interest in him, that a silent chord was awakened in his hardened little breast, and he gave expression to the feelings that were evidently surging within him.

"Why do you come with the kids to see me all the time, and bring all that grub?" he asked his monitor, who several times during the week visited him with some of the boys he had liked in his dormitory.

"Because you're sick," explained the older boy.

"That ain't enough," insisted the youngster, "'cause nobody likes a sick 'un."

The monitor was nonplussed, but in his own way attempted to explain the Brotherhood of Man in general, and the young Brotherhood of which they two were a part, in particular. Evidently he had succeeded in making himself understood clearly, for later, the young patient, in opening his heart in confidence, stated, "Wait, you see when I get home, I'm going to be like them." Then closing his lips firmly, and clenching his tiny fist, he continued, "When I was sick awfully once, them — them that used to be my pals, let me lay there and croak — they sure did, I remember."

"Try to forget about them, and think of the pals you have now," was suggested to him.

He nodded his head eagerly. "All right," he agreed cheerfully. Then abruptly changing the subject to one oppressing him, "Please ask them doctors to make me grow big like the boys." And bursting into tears without warning, "I don't want to be a peewee — honest, I don't," he cried passionately.

Consolation was administered in the hope held out to him that a wholesome, happy boyhood might assist him in attaining more inches than his undersized parents.

"You'll let me be a Scout and hike and play ball, and maybe that will stretch me out," he pleadingly asked.

Assured that he should be permitted to join the Scout Troop whenever he was prepared to do so, he appeared pleased, and then spoke seriously about his younger brother, whose various delinquencies had brought sorrow and trouble to the unhappy family, as his mother had informed him on the occasion of a visit to his bedside. The poor woman had poured out a list of her sorrows and complaints to the boy, who, surprising as it seemed, actually took her woes to heart, and had been thinking seriously and unselfishly.

"I'm awfully sorry for my old lady," he remarked with a gravity foreign to him; "she never grew big because my old man always killed her." Then, suddenly turning to another thought in his mind, he begged: "Please — please, take my brother in your Home — maybe he won't be in no more trouble."

In time he was discharged from the hospital, and returned to the Orphanage, where he attempted to conform to the rules of law and order, without any flagrant violation of good conduct. Were it not for his pitiful desire to "grow big," which did not materialize, he would have been quite happy and contented. Though he put on flesh, he gained but few inches, and it seemed that Nature doomed him to become what he most dreaded, — "a little man," — even though he made pathetic attempts to elongate his tiny body.

He attended school regularly and made favorable progress in his studies. There was no longer any problem to solve regarding him, as he was well on the road to normality.

THE RESULT

Report from the Benevolent Society:

"In June, 1920, Thomas E—— left the Orphanage. It was believed that the parents had influenced the boy to return home.

In September, 1920, the mother complained of the boy's behavior. She said he associated with undesirable boys and stayed out late at night. He was readmitted to the institution, and is doing well.

"His younger brother, Harry E——, has been committed to the M—— Reformatory."

Report from the Superintendent of the Orphanage reads as follows:

January 18, 1922.

"The boy is no longer a problem. He is working out very favorably, and is a case for vocational guidance."

Report from the M—— Reformatory, in reference to his brother, Harry E——:

February 27, 1922.

"Replying to your request concerning information of Harry E——, I regret to inform you that the boy is not doing as well as we would like to have him."

CASE C

IRVING I——, "THE PRIZE-FIGHTER"

Entered August 12, 1915. Age 11 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Persistent truant.
- (b) Preferred the streets to his home. Frequently disappeared for weeks at a time.
- (c) Incurable liar, and exceedingly troublesome.
- (d) Frequented hang-outs at burlesque shows, prize-fights, and corner saloons.
- (e) Smoking, gambling, and shooting craps.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Absolutely refused to attend school.
- (b) A recent arrival in America, he spoke a broken English and yet knew enough of the language to defy the school attendance officer, and tell his teacher where to go, when taken to task for his truancy.
- (c) Had not progressed beyond the First Grade, in which he had at first been placed, and had no thought or intention of going any higher.
- (d) Objected to any restraint, and offered fight when confronted by authority.

3. HOME

- (a) Unmanageable and very disobedient to grandmother and mother.
- (b) Petty pilfering.
- (c) Used obscene language.
- (d) Teased and tormented younger brothers.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Disrespectful to elders.
- (b) Troublesome in the neighborhood.
- (c) Organized prize-fights among the boys in the streets, with himself as referee.
- (d) Determined to have his own way, and quarreled and fought with any one who differed from him. Expressed no fear of the police, whom he mocked and frequently outwitted.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Very thin, scrawny, and extremely dark-skinned.
- (b) Undernourished; of starved appearance.
- (c) Gleaming black eyes, sallow face, and ordinary features.
- (d) Poor teeth, diseased tonsils and adenoids, scabies, and pediculosis.
- (e) Occasional enuresis.
- (f) Hands, scarred and cut, and feet badly bruised, blackened, and marred by deep gashes. He had run the streets for months in bare feet, and the skin of his soles had the color and toughness of leather.
- (g) Tattoo of a prize-fighter in action on one arm.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination:

He was diagnosed as follows: "Intelligence below the average. Poor physique; unusual pubertal development. It is imperative that his home environment be changed at once. Good case for institutional guidance."

(b) Personality Traits:

Accustomed to dirt, seeming practically to absorb it into the pores of his body, so encrusted with soil did he constantly appear.

Special antipathy to shoes and stockings, preferring to walk in his bare feet, no matter what the weather.

Voracious eater, not caring what food he consumed, or how he consumed it.

Filthy in his personal habits. No undue sexual tendencies.

Wayward, reckless, and always ready and willing to fight. Could not comprehend any other way of solving an issue, than by the result of a fist fight.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: died of tuberculosis, in Russia, in 1912, two years before his large family, composed of his mother, wife, and nine sons, came to America.

He had been a laborer, earning small wages, and his family had suffered privation and want. From the information available, it appears that he had been of ordinary intellect, and had worked hard to secure a livelihood for his family. There had been no known irregularities in his life.

His death left his family without means of sustenance, and through the assistance of the woman's three brothers and five sisters in America, emigration to another land was made possible.

Mother: sickly and incompetent, was constantly complaining about her wretched lot in life, and had no initiative, and no ambition to attempt to improve matters for herself. During her frequent illnesses, her aged mother-in-law took care of the large household, which was supported partly by the relatives, and largely by the Benevolent Society.

The woman was a very poor housekeeper and manager, and unable to exercise any control over her children. Her sisters had made several ineffectual attempts to start a dressmaking shop for her, but always she claimed that the asthma from which she was suffering interfered with her work, and each time the venture was unsuccessful.

Subsequently, it was reported that her health had improved, and that she was spending much time in the theatres and entertaining men callers, one of whom was married.

Her brothers and sisters were people of very ordinary intellect, small shop-keepers, and workers in factories. They were honest and industrious. Her mother-in-law was lapsing into senility, her advanced age precluding the possibility of determining what her intellectual basis had been.

The nine sons had been born within a period of fourteen years. There had also been several miscarriages in the woman's fifteen years of married life.

Siblings: *Eldest brother*, had been difficult to manage, and in a fit of temper had left his home, and for nearly a year his whereabouts were unknown.

He finally wrote that he was living in a distant part of the country, was working at his trade of shoe-making, and had married. From different sources, the information was given that he was rather feeble in intellect.

Second brother, was a cobbler. He refused to give any of his earnings to his mother, married at an early age, and then had domestic difficulties, which finally brought him into court.

He suddenly left his home in 1919, and his present whereabouts are unknown.

Third and fourth brothers, twins, were incipient cases of tuberculosis, one living with an aunt in the country, and the other at the Consumptives' Sanitarium.

Fifth brother, had been reported for truancy and incorrigibility, only a few months after his arrival in America. He had been in an ungraded class.

Later, he disappeared from home on a number of occasions, and remained away for months at a time. It was subsequently learned that, during his absences, he had worked as a pugilist. He had been examined and found to have a mentality of eight or nine years. Diagnosis: Moron. Has a court record.

Seventh brother (younger), was admitted to the Orphanage at the same time as he. It had been reported that he was frequently the companion of his brother in the latter's misdeeds, and that he also remained on the streets at all hours.

He was more amenable to discipline than his brother; and while he was a problematic case, which needed careful handling for some time, he gradually adapted himself to the wholesome environment of the institution, and developed normally and satisfactorily. In November, 1920, he was examined by Dr. D——, the psychiatrist, who reported that the boy was normal mentally, intelligence coefficient being 1.00. Character, appears satisfactory; health, normal.

He remained in the institution, a case for vocational guidance.

Eighth and ninth brothers, seven and five years old respectively, were later placed in the Orphanage, since their mother was both physically and financially unable to care for them. She claimed that the children were on the streets too much, and stayed out until late at night. She also stated that the older of the two was very troublesome at home and disrespectful to her. The teacher of the boy, however, said that the youngster was not at all troublesome at school, and that his work was quite satisfactory. He and the youngest brother presented no problems at the institution. They appeared normal in every respect.

(b) Developmental:

There was no way of learning pertinent facts regarding his infancy and early childhood, since the mother declared that the children had come to her so rapidly that

she had had no time to waste in noticing what manner of babies they were, or how they grew.

"Babies are born and grow up; so why should one bother about them?" she queried in surprise.

He was born, and his early years of childhood were passed, in a small Russian village, where, it was understood, he ran the streets at will, bare-footed and in tatters most of the time, till his arrival in America.

In this country, he endeavored to duplicate the life he had been accustomed to; and it appears that the cheap places of amusement attracted him, from the very outset of his career.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Would pick up cigar and cigarette butts in the streets, and puff at them at every conceivable opportunity.

Anxious to barter some of his collections of marbles, which, in his own vernacular, he had "swiped from dem kids in de street," for pictures, in print or lithograph, of prize-fighters, past or present.

Very proud of his acquaintance with the *habitués* of the burlesque shows and the prize-fight rings, he tried to ape their manners and speech, and sought every means of eluding vigilance to be with his favorites, and show his intense admiration for them. He considered it a great privilege to deliver messages for them, run upon their errands, and blacken their boots.

Was fond of assuming various fighting poses before a mirror, nude but for a towel draped about his loins.

Found recreation and pleasure in arranging fighting matches among the children, and was always intent upon finding a secluded nook or corner, where the match he had arranged could proceed without interruption or detection.

Fond of reciting, in his broken English, the rules and regulations governing prize-fights, and extremely interested in any and every prize-fight that came to his attention.

(d) Home conditions:

In the Russian village, poverty and neglect had been his initial portion in life. In the modern American city, he faced the same two unhappy conditions in his home environment, with the addition of slovenly, congested quarters, into which the large family was crowded.

The ignorant, inefficient mother, who nagged and scolded, while she left the management of the wretched household to the aged grandmother, had not the intelligence to cope with the situation which engulfed her older sons, and disastrously influenced the younger.

She only added to the repellent and unwholesome atmosphere, which influenced the boy to seek, according to his own light, a more attractive and congenial environment, and avoid home contact.

(e) Mental Interests:

Figuring how soon he could be in physical trim to become a prize-fighter, how many matches would be arranged for him annually, and how much money he should realize from the fights. Over the last he puzzled, adding, subtracting, multiplying — incorrectly, abstractly, but with unfailing enthusiasm.

Collecting, and carefully counting and arranging, according to his own classification of their superiority and excellence, pictures of all sorts and conditions of prize-fighters.

THE TREATMENT

His initial performance in the Home was to size up the situation, with a quick, eager glance from his sharp eyes, and without warning, jump up from his chair, dart out to the yard, and with the agility and quickness of a squirrel, leap over the fence, his thin, brown bare legs waving a moment in the air — and he was gone.

It was nearly a week before the Probation Officer picked him up, in the doorway of a gambling den, and forcibly brought him to the institution.

"I gonna run from dis place," was the cool information he gave in answer to the question why he had run away previously.

Asked for a reason, he shrugged his shoulders carelessly, and stared about him blankly. It was evident that he was contemplating another leap for freedom; but the precautions the Officer had taken to plant him in a rather tight corner, from which escape was not so easy, presented definite complications to him.

He looked from the window to the door, and back again, neither comprehending nor desiring to comprehend what was said to him. He protestingly followed the supervisor, who took him upstairs to a much-needed bath; and later, when he had been washed and cleaned, he again absconded as soon as he was left to himself for a

moment, leaving as mementoes of his contempt for order and convention, one shoe in the hall, another in the yard, and two stockings flying derisively from the top of the fence.

That night his mother came to the institution, and reported that he had paid his home a visit; had, in spite of her objections and pleas, stripped a younger brother of his torn garments, in which he arrayed himself, after he had taken the new clothes off his back; and then had gone away, his former apparel under his arm.

The next day, at supper-time, he suddenly appeared, to everyone's surprise, befouled with dirt and perspiration, his clothes, if so they may be termed by courtesy, in tattered rags, and accepted the talk and admonitions given him, with meekness, almost with gratitude. There was something so strange about his humble and contrite attitude, that his actions seemed unreal under the circumstances. The clue to the situation was given when, next morning, the night watchman reported that very early, while it was still dark, he had noticed a barefooted boy coming quietly downstairs, who, before he had a chance to speak to him, had run out into the yard, climbed over the fence, and disappeared.

Investigation proved that the boy had taken both his new and tattered garments with him. A visit to his mother's home, later, disclosed the fact that he had appeared quite early for breakfast, clad in his, or, rather, his younger brother's rags, and after having gulped down some food, left, with a bundle of clothes under his arm. He had refused to make any explanations or answer any questions.

Search for him was withheld on the chance of his turning up as he had the night before. Sure enough, he came humbly, quietly, into the office, just before the evening meal, and seated himself in a chair, hanging his head, as if ashamed, and undoubtedly expecting a repetition of his former experience.

"Why have you come back?" was the greeting given him.

He had evidently prepared himself for some such question. Not at all taken aback, he replied, "I gonna be good boy now; I wanna eat somet'ings."

He was rather a picturesque ragamuffin, sitting there in his tattered jumper, which was hanging in shreds, and his torn trousers, held together seemingly by a miracle. Black streaks of perspiration ran down his grimy, dark face, and his thin legs, caked with mud and dirt, were swinging impatiently to and fro.

After he had been bathed, combed, and attired in clean apparel, he was given a substantial supper, which he ravenously consumed;

then he was brought into the office by his supervisor, who was to keep him under close watch.

"How do you like your new suit?" he was asked.

He appraisingly cast his glance up and down his slim figure as far as he could, and nodded his head in satisfaction. "I likes dem new t'ings," he remarked in approval.

"Did n't you like the other new suits you received?"

"For why you ask?" he questioned in quick suspicion.

"Because you came back wearing something else."

"Well — well," he began, "they was too goot for me, so I sells dem t'ings and make money."

"What did you do with the money?"

"Gabe it to my muvver — she's a very poor womans," he answered quite seriously, and lifted his face with well-assumed sympathy for his mother.

Given to understand in unmistakable language that he was deceiving nobody but himself, he finally broke down and admitted that he had sold both suits "to a frien' o' mine," and had spent the money for "shows." Asked to confirm the truth of the suspicion that he had come home to repeat his two former experiences, he at first refused to answer, and then confessed that such had been his intention. After which he pleaded not to be "'rested," as he was not going to do "sech t'ings no more."

A long interview followed, during which he was informed that he would be forgiven, on condition that he divulge the name and address of the helpful "friend" who had relieved him of his clothes, and that he promise good behavior for the future. To the second demand, he acceded with a celerity which left every doubt as to its performance, and to the first, he consented only after repeated requests and threats.

The next day the suits were returned by a disgruntled pawnshop proprietor, while the boy, under strict supervision, was restlessly and unhappily watching other boys of his age engaged in wholesome play, and compelled to endure the discomfort of stockings and shoes on his hitherto untrammelled feet. He manifested no interest or desire to join the boys, and stood idly and listlessly in the manual-training classes, either unable or unwilling to concentrate his mind upon the life around him.

Another talk followed in a few days, when he avowed his ambition of being the coming prize-fighter of the age, "like Mister Fitzie."

Asked who "Mr. Fitzie" was, he could hardly control an expression of mingled scorn and disgust; and putting a hand into

one of his pockets, drew forth a small package wrapped in newspaper, and tied with black cotton, which he very carefully opened, and taking therefrom what seemed a piece of cardboard, turned it proudly face-forward, and triumphantly announced, "T'is is Mister Fitzie!"

"Mister Fitzie" proved to be Robert Fitzsimmons, erstwhile champion of the sporting world; though why he should be given the preference, in view of the later and more contemporary luminaries, seemed rather obscure, till the boy, anxious to do homage to his idol, enthusiastically described the "soda-pexus b'ow." It appeared that to him the boxer who brought the solar-plexus blow into fame was not only a mighty man to be emulated, but also the discoverer of America.

Finding that his ambition was not condemned, he displayed the other stars, of more or less magnitude in pugilism, whom he had in his collection, and then confidently and enviously gave an account of the achievements of his fifth brother, who, though only three years older than he, had already engaged in prize-fights. "An' he makes bunches of money," added the boy with marked jealousy.

Here he was very carefully informed that his hopes and aspirations were regarded with sympathy, and that he should receive every encouragement to attain his desires, if he were willing to follow a course tending to give strength and power to his body, and develop his mind at the same time, for the subsequent advantage of the body.

He listened eagerly when told of the possibilities for him in the gymnasium, the hikes, and scouting, but turned a wry face at the tactful mention of school. "Them," he tapped his precious collection, "ain't had schoolin', I know, 'cause Punchin' Mike, he told me so."

Looking through his collection, several were found who had enjoyed the advantages of a good education, and this fact was dilated upon, till he was almost ready to believe that they had attained their success because of the education he affected to despise. Finally, after many arguments *pro* and *con*, he agreed to abide by the rules laid before him, in return for the home and the athletic instruction he was to receive.

Despite his acceptance of the proposition made to him, he had several outbreaks within the next few weeks, when he eluded his supervisor's guardianship, and ran off to his haunts. He was always found by his monitor in the localities where the frequenters of the ring gathered, and he would be brought back, shame-faced and repentant.

With the opening of school, his truancies increased, and for a long time he was a regular visitant at the office door, awaiting his turn for a reckoning. He tried the patience of his teacher sorely with his carelessness and stupidity; and for some time it was only constant watchfulness that ensured his regular school attendance.

The attempt made to interest him, meanwhile, in the baseball played by the boys at the Home, was quite successful, and he also became interested in their Scout work and sports. He joined them on their hikes; and as he began to breathe the pure, fresh air of country roads, and participated in the wholesome activities arranged by the Scout-master for the boys, the contaminating influences of his city slum life gradually diminished. He repeatedly boasted of his brother's pugilistic prowess, but his truancy decreased, and in time, prize-fights were arranged, and his favorites fought, even without his knowledge.

He adjusted himself to the school curriculum very slowly and with great difficulty. His mental capacity was limited, and his vanity rebelled that younger and smaller children grasped lessons that seemed beyond his ken. It was only much later, when he had learned application and perseverance, that he was enabled to make any progress in his school-work.

It was rather remarkable to note with what alacrity and enthusiasm he learned the art of printing, and what a wholesome and excellent influence the printer's case exerted upon his slow faculties. His stick of type became, in time, the neatest and most accurate; and it was also he who set up more columns of "The Monitor," the Home publication, than the other printers.

The greatest possible recreation and enjoyment to him was a treat to a baseball game, or to some pugilistic encounter, and this ardently desired pleasure was accorded him for a favorable school-report and honorable mention for conduct in the Home. His younger brother, also an inmate of the Home, whose intellect was brighter and his ways less erratic, was of material assistance in helping him keep to the straight path which meant his salvation. An affection and a certain devotion developed between the brothers, who might have been strangers as far as love and harmony existing between them previously were concerned. Each now had an excellent influence upon the other. The younger felt it incumbent upon him to advise and restrain his older brother in his tempestuous actions; and the latter, noting the normal progress and development of the other, was tempted to emulate his achievements, with very beneficial results to both. Finally, a realization of his seniority being brought home to him, he felt that it was im-

portant for him to become an example for his younger brother to follow; and while some of his efforts were amusing as well as pathetic, in the main, he was himself greatly benefited by the gravity he assumed.

As time passed, his demeanor improved, and he became moderately successful in his school studies, with which he grappled manfully. He also was elected to be a Scout by popular acclaim, and was a leader in the boys' outdoor activities and sports. Still interested in pugilism and prize-fighters, he kept in close touch with his brother's career, and enthusiastically read the sporting-page in the newspaper, daily, without fail. With the exception of the printing class, the manual-training instruction offered him made no appeal to him.

Ultimately, he realized a long-cherished ambition, and became a monitor, helping in the reform work applied to other adventurous little tackers, who came to the Home when he was recognized as one of its desirable citizens.

THE RESULT

From Records in the Benevolent Society:

"Irving I—— was discharged from the Orphanage on November 23, 1920. He had been allowed to continue at school, since he asked for that chance. Dr. D—— said that the boy appeared to have reached his limit in school interest and attainment, and issued the following report:

"Examined November 23, 1920.

Intelligence: Mental capacity 15 years. I. C. .86. Social classification, usual intelligence.

Character: Good basis; good organization.

Health: Precocious physical development. Otherwise health is usual.

Impression: The boy's main interest is to become a prize-fighter or professional baseball player. He has considerable aptitude as a printer. He should be a vocational case, should be weaned gradually from the institution, to which he has become greatly attached, and should be readjusted in a boarding home.

"In March, 1921, he was working satisfactorily in a printing establishment."

From the boy's letter, dated April 20, 1922:

For over a year, I have been a compositor in the S—— Printing Co., and have made good wages. I have been helping my

mother and Ben,¹ who is now in the second year of City College. I guess he'll be the best one of the family. He sure is smart. The little ones are in the Home and like it there.

I guess I got to be a prize-fighter after all. Mr. Smith, my manager, arranged several fights for me last winter, and I made more money in three fights than the whole shooting-match in the composing-room saw in all their lives. But I can always be a real decent guy just the same.

I belong to the Featherweight Class, and you just watch me put up a battle for the championship, and come out a winner, real soon, too.

Dick ² is some winner right now. He sure can fight some, that boy, and he sure does make them smell the dust. I had a big talk with him, and since then he gives the family some money every week. Just wait till I make barrels of money like him, then the kids will have to have educations like professors.

Don't worry about me. You just watch me grow, and the time 'll come when you sure will be some proud of me.

The Featherweight Champion
Of the World
(To Be).

¹ His younger brother.

² The fifth brother.

CHAPTER II

WEAKLINGS

CASE A, CARL P——	“THE STOOL-PIGEON”
CASE B, PARKER E——	“FROM A FAGIN LABORATORY”
CASE C, BILLY A——	“THE INVALID”

CASE A

CARL P——, "THE STOOL-PIGEON"

Entered December 21, 1917. Age 12 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Stealing. Was used by a gang as a stool-pigeon; and also, on account of his very small size, was employed to climb through transoms and all narrow openings, to unfasten windows and doors for the house-breakers.
- (b) Persistent truancy.
- (c) Bunking out for weeks at a stretch.
- (d) Incurrigible; not responsive to any form of discipline.

2. SCHOOL

- (a) Unreliable and incurrigible.
- (b) Habitual truant.
- (c) Several years' retardation. Three years in the First Grade.
- (d) Stole from teachers and classmates at every possible opportunity.
- (e) No attention or interest in any work.

3. HOME

- (a) Constantly bunking out.
- (b) Quarrelsome and unmanageable.
- (c) Defiant of parental control, and liked to be called "crook," a name applied to him by parents and the neighbors.
- (d) Used very bad language.
- (e) Stealing. When impossible to obtain money by theft, would purloin articles from the house and sell them for a few pennies.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Yielded easily to any evil influences coming his way. Joined a gang of beggars and had his regular "hang-out," where he and several of his boy companions begged on the streets.
- (b) Respected no authority. Recognized and obeyed only the leaders of his gangs.
- (c) In the Juvenile Court five times, from July, 1913, to December, 1917.

Copy of Juvenile Court Docket Entry:

7-2-13. Larceny of \$5; placed in charge of Probation Officer for three months.

9-24-14. Larceny of \$2.50; referred to the Benevolent Society. Postponed to October 10, then to October 31, then to November 28, then to January 30, 1915. 1-31-15. Dismissed. Boy is to go to R—— (School for Feeble-minded).

6-7-15. Larceny of six pieces of chocolate candy, valued at 60c. Sent to Reformatory pending further hearing on November 1. 11-1-15. Postponed to January 3, 1916, then to April 20, 1916. Boy is feeble-minded and is held at the Reformatory, pending admission to R——. 5-18-16. Dismissed.

4-20-17. Charged with being habitual and incorrigible truant. Committed to the Reformatory till proper place can be found for him by the Benevolent Society.

12-20-17. Minor without proper care. Committed to the Children's Bureau.

Benevolent Society Record:

9-25-14. Referred to the Society, on complaint of stealing. Binet-Simon seven years. Family conditions the worst possible. Recommendation: that patient be sent to the Reformatory.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Height and weight of a puny six-year old child. Tiny, baby features; mild, pleasing expression, and large, dark, innocent eyes.
- (b) Frail little body, slouching forward, as if unable to carry its own weight. Decidedly undernourished. Listless and haggard, the small, pale mouth drooping sadly at the corners.
- (c) Diseased tonsils and adenoids. Carious teeth; scabies; poorly healed scars from wounds or blows.
- (d) Tubercular history as follows: In January, 1915, was examined at the H—— Dispensary and said to have T.B. in the early stage. He was recommended for admission to a sanatorium. The following month he was admitted to the Consumptives' Hospital, but was discharged four days later, as an incorrigible, impossible to be handled in the hospital. In May, 1915, he was again examined by Dr. W——, a

lung specialist, who reported that the boy was free from T.B.

(e) Had frequent colds and coughs.

(f) Lipped in talking, and pouted like a baby when thwarted in any desire, or displeased.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination:

In October, 1914, Dr. C——, the psychiatrist, examined the boy and reported that he was two years retarded. Dr. C—— felt that the boy was feeble-minded, and advised that application for his admission to R—— be filed, and that the boy be sent to the Reformatory, pending his admission to R——.

About this time, the mother of the boy complained that he could not sleep nights, and had hallucinations. She feared that he was becoming insane.

From Psychiatric Clinic Report, June 13, 1916:

"Patient was brought into the dispensary for advice.

Mother and father were once separated for a period of ten months, during which time patient developed a habit of stealing. He was sent to the Reformatory for ten months. His story shows that patient has always been a nervous child, afraid of ghosts, afraid of the dark, and having frequent screaming spells at night. Enuresis until the age of six.

Patient never got on well at school; has had frequent trouble with his teachers; fights with the other children; smoked cigar butts; untruthful; frequent petty thefts. Started to school at the age of six. Always in the First Grade.

Diagnosis: Constitutional inferiority; stealing.

Binet-Simon showed a mental level of eight years.

Recommendation: Boy does not need Reformatory care. Should enter a playground, and is in need of good supervision at home."

Examined at H—— Dispensary, March 12, 1917:

"Lung condition negative.

Dr. D—— reports that boy is highly neurotic; retarded, but not feeble-minded."

(b) Personality Traits:

Untidy and careless about his personal habits.

Inordinately fond of smoking cigarettes and gambling with dice.

Not even a pretence of an independent will; easily led and easily influenced.

Confesses readily, and expresses regret for wrongdoing, which, however, he will do all over again on the slightest provocation.

Pleasure-loving; excessively fond of the movies. Would beg and steal to get money for the theatres.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: illiterate, intemperate, shiftless, and subject to melancholic humors. A coat-presser by trade, but unable to earn a livelihood, and known to the local Charities since 1907, when he first applied for assistance for his family.

It was his custom to desert his wife at the beginning of a pregnancy, and disappear to parts unknown, reappearing several months later, after the expected birth of the child.

He appeared to have no sense of moral responsibility, and when remonstrated with about his unnatural conduct, retorted in great surprise, "Why, you don't surely expect me to stay here and stand all that trouble and fuss?"

During his wanderings he never sent money to his family, and when taken to task, artlessly remarked, "Well, don't I have to live too? Who supports me, do you think? I don't have to worry about her; she can go to the Charities, and they take care of her and the children. She ought to be glad that she is in such a condition all the time that they pity her."

He was indifferent to the older children and cruel to the younger ones.

In 1910, he developed insanity and was committed to an asylum.

His relatives — four brothers, one sister, and several cousins, all apparently normal and self-supporting and respectable members of the community — claimed that, while he had always been rather feeble-minded, his wife had nagged him so unmercifully that his insanity was the result.

He was discharged from the insane asylum the following year. Then, after an examination, it was discovered that he was an incipient tubercular case, and he was sent to the Consumptives' Hospital, where he remained for about a year.

After his discharge from the hospital, he was deemed able to resume his work, but he repeated his former career of idleness, intemperateness, and abuse of his family, and finally his wife, on the advice of neighbors, had him arrested for non-support.

He was dismissed on his promise to reform; and, after a reconciliation, conditions in the home improved slightly; but soon after, he was again arrested on complaint of his wife, who claimed that he had beaten her. He was paroled.

Matters then progressed a bit more favorably, even though the wife was greatly offended that he associated with colored people.

Shortly, he disappeared again, about three months before the birth of a new baby. Upon his return, six months later, he was again arrested for non-support and sentenced to one year in the House of Correction.

Upon his release in November, 1919, he did not return to live with his family. For a while his whereabouts were unknown; then he returned, sick, dejected, in tatters and rags, promising to reform.

Late in the winter of 1921, he was working at very small wages in a nearby city; and while he in no way contributed to the support of his family, he still "did his duty," he told the judge, by visiting his home every alternate Sunday.

Mother: an unattractive, slovenly, and nervous woman, constantly scolding, complaining, or crying.

She was extremely illiterate, dull, and below par mentally, judged to be feeble-minded.

Had five living children, three still-births, and two miscarriages, in a period of twelve years.

Has been accused of immorality by her neighbors, her husband testifying, at one time, that she had been associating with other men.

Obstinate, sullen, and uncoöperative in attempts made to assist her in controlling her children, she met the friendly visitor's advances with obscene language and vile abuse.

At one time, she insisted that she wanted a divorce from her husband, as she was afraid of him and could not possibly live with him; but shortly, on her own initiative, became reconciled to him and admitted him to the home, maintained by the local Charities.

She made several futile attempts to assist in the support of her children and herself; but usually abandoned her efforts after a short trial.

After the birth of her last child, she was found to be an incipient tubercular case.

Her mother, an aged woman living with another daughter, cannot be judged as to mentality, owing to the infirmities of age. All other known relatives in the city appear to be normal.

Siblings: *Younger brother*, at the age of seven, was brought into the Juvenile Court, on a charge of stealing.

A year later, was examined at the H—— Dispensary, and said to have T.B. in the early stage. He was recommended for admission to a sanatorium, and a month later was admitted to the State Sanatorium for Consumptives. Was discharged nearly a year later, as cured.

Was subsequently brought into the Juvenile Court again, on a charge of "hanging around" department stores and stealing.

Delinquent and incorrigible. Low mentality.

Younger sister, frail, delicate, and always ailing.

At the age of four, taken to the H—— Dispensary for an examination, and said to have a case of T.B. Was recommended for admission to a sanatorium.

Mentality undetermined.

Youngest brother, too young for any definite diagnosis. Appears bright and healthy.

Youngest sister, little more than a baby.

From appearances, normal.

(b) Developmental:

The boy was a subnormal, premature baby, five pounds in weight. Was bottle-fed, colicky, and constantly crying.

He did not seem to grow normally, and made no attempt to walk till nearly two years of age. Talked at eighteen months. Had several of the children's contagious diseases mildly, but always appeared very frail and sickly looking. Enuresis in early childhood.

He took to the streets when hardly able to do more than crawl, and was often picked up asleep on door-steps, and brought into his home by sympathetic neighbors, who also frequently fed him.

His father would administer severe beatings to him, when cross, and, he in turn, would throw at his parent the first object his baby fingers could reach, and repeat the vile words he heard, before he could properly pronounce them.

Had not received affection or any demonstration of love from either parent or relative, and was himself neither affectionate nor hankering for affection.

Fell into the hands of a gang of adult evil-doers when barely five years of age, and was taught, and utilized for nefarious schemes and undertakings.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

No bad sex-habits.

Extremely imaginative; so much so, that he could make up three different stories in as many minutes, accusing, or exonerating, boys of various wrongdoings, in which he may or may not have had any part.

Cowardly and an informer. To save himself, or to curry favor, he would at once confess any iniquities, real or imaginary, that were being investigated. Would not scruple to betray his best friend.

Very poor eater. Anxious only for sweetmeats.

Slept poorly, moaning and groaning in his sleep.

Very fond of smoking.

Made every effort to secrete himself during washing and bathing times, and preferred to have his shoes torn and his clothes ragged, as then he could "have more fun."

Was very mildly interested in playing ball, marbles, and other boys' games. "Would rather play with dice," he said; and at every possible opportunity, shot "craps."

Books of any kind offered no appeal.

(d) **Home Conditions:**

His home life had been most unwholesome, and unfavorable for the development of the child. The home, of three tiny, foul-smelling rooms in a back alley, where fights and drunken brawls were a daily occurrence, very early inured him to dirt, squalor, and filthiness.

The house was scantily furnished, the three younger children occupying one bed, while he and his brother slept on a mattress on the floor.

His mother was always too busy to give him, the other children, or the home, any attention. She seldom did any cooking, and fed her family on delicatessen picked up at the corner store.

He was frequently sent for the food, and was more likely to spend the money on gambling, or in ways that suited him best, than in any purchases for the family.

As the mother was a very poor manager, the family frequently feasted for one day, on the allowance allotted it by the Charities for a week; and then, for the rest of the week, went without the necessities of life.

Neither parent showed any interest in his school progress, nor heeded his association with gangs.

(e) Mental Interests:

Gambling. Anxious to devise new ways and means of cheating with dice.

THE TREATMENT

He was brought into the institution non-resistant, and totally indifferent as to any future disposition in store for him. His Honor, the Juvenile Court Judge, in granting the petition that he be permitted to have the last chance in the Orphanage, had also taken the opportunity to have a heart-to-heart talk with him, and earnestly advised him to turn over a new leaf, or, at the next offense, he would be committed to the Reformatory till his majority.

"Aw chee!" he confided to the young social worker who was escorting him to the Orphanage; "he talks to make me afraid. Bet cher life I don't care, 'cause my pals are there and we 'll have a bully time."

"Hello, fellars! She 's brought a new little guy!" sang out a small youngster, who saw him enter the hall, propelled by the young woman who usually brought the "newies." The small lad, on his way to or from some mission, with youthful exuberance, could not wait to announce his news more staidly to his friends, and at once gave voice to the report which never failed to arouse interest. He was however nonplussed when the newcomer retaliated by running unexpectedly up to him, and with a proud tilt of his baby head, announced, "I ain't a new guy; I am a crook!"

When the young woman had sufficiently recovered her composure to separate her erratic charge from the dumfounded small lad, and quickly, without further loss of time, haul him into the office, breathlessly explaining and admonishing on the way that he must not again so betray himself, he shrugged his small shoulders, looked his surprise, and replied nonchalantly enough, "Don't cher know yer got to be slick to be a crook?"

With this retort reaching and even penetrating the walls of the office, and causing two lady visitors to stare at each other in afright, he was hastily pushed in through the door by the abashed young woman, who evidently feared to hazard more queries and possible explanations.

His tiny, elfin face begrimed with dirt, his hair tangled and unkempt, great holes gaping from his shoes, his stockings and the few clothes on his back in ragged tatters, were incongruously at odds with the small, frail figure, which seemed nothing more than that of an overgrown and neglected baby.

"What a poor, dirty little creature!" one of the ladies remarked impulsively, expressing the pity she felt; while the other smiled invitingly at him.

"Aw, gwan!" he said, twirling his thumbs contemptuously in their direction.

When the ladies had departed and attention was exclusively directed to him, he turned with a sly wink, a bright gleam in his eyes, and confided; "Say, mister, yer wants ter make lots of money? Nigger Sam showed me how to creep through them cellars and come into the stores and swipe the money from them dummies. Yer won't snitch on me, and I'll divvy with yer. Want ter see how I go through that?"

Evidently realizing that he was arousing interest, and eager to impress with his accomplishments, he waited for no reply, but rapidly, with truly amazing dexterity, jumped like a monkey upon the door-knob, hung an instant poised at the transom, and in the twinkling of an eyelid, was through the aperture, and looking down with triumphant gaze, proud of his feat.

"Them stores around here are dead easy," he resumed his confidences, feeling that his victory must be made decisive; "I seen them when I comes here with that gink. [A rather unflattering term for his escort.] Them places have lots of cellars and slats [transoms] and yer can get in as easy as pie."

"First, how should you like to be cleaned up and get a nice, brand-new suit?" he was asked.

He shook his head negatively. "Aw, I ain't any of them old gals," he replied, with a scornful jerk toward the chairs previously occupied by the ladies. "Only sissies want duds; ain't I a man?"

Violently remonstrating, the "man" spent the next hour in a physical cleansing and purification that must have marked an epoch in his life; and when he finally emerged from the ordeal, crying and lamenting that he did n't want to be a "gal," he appeared to be just a nice, rather pretty little boy, in need of extra feeding.

That night he protested against going to bed at the hour set for the younger children, stoutly maintaining that he was n't a baby and would go to sleep as he always did, "at any old time." His pleas were unheeded, and he lay sobbing and grumbling till a late hour of the night. At midnight, a trip to the dormitory disclosed

the fact that, while all the other small boys around him were sleeping the sound, healthy slumber of childhood, he was sitting up in his bed tossing three dice. In the dim light, he appeared a tiny, active wraith, as his white-clad body moved restlessly to and fro. "I can't go to sleep so early," he complained bitterly, with a burst of tears; "I never went to bed till 'way after my mother was asleep."

He was taken to school the next morning, and was admitted to the First Grade. Shortly before noon, the teacher found him sound asleep, curled up in his desk, and had great difficulty in arousing him. He was sent to the office with a note.

"Aw, that's nothin'," he said in defense; "I always fall asleep in school; that's why them old gals make it so hot for me. I don't like school anyways, so what's the dif if I fall asleep?"

A careful physical examination showed that, while he had no active tuberculosis or any other organic disease, he needed medical attention for minor ailments, and a special diet of nutritious, wholesome food for his half-starved, puny little body. Regularity of life was forced upon him, to his great disgust; at first, he rebelled and ran home for protection; but finding that his mother was powerless to resist the Big Brother, who always somehow succeeded in finding him at his former home or in some other favored haunt, he submitted with the poorest grace possible. After six months, however, he became accustomed to a normal life and no longer rebelled against early hours to bed. He gained in weight, grew an inch, and was a decidedly better physical specimen. In school, he was no longer drowsy or sleepy.

In the months that followed his admission to the institution, the supervisor in whose charge he had been put, and the Big Brother assigned to him, in their own more expressive than elegant language, "sweated blood." He stole from the children whatever he could lay his hands upon; he managed to elude all vigilance, and get into the stores in the neighborhood, hide under the counters, and rob the cash-boxes when the proprietors were not looking. He seemed impervious to the dreaded punishment of spending one or more days in bed, meted out to wrongdoers, to their discomfiture and regret, as he succeeded, with uncanny instinct or ability, in purloining clothes and leaving his durance.

One particular afternoon, being in bed as an atonement for some sin, he was somehow informed that the Ladies' Auxiliary was holding its meeting in the assembly hall. Unable to get possession of his clothes or of others to fit him, he was not at all daunted, but watching his opportunity, slipped into his supervisor's room and possessed himself of a suit belonging to that long-suffering and

patient young man. Arrayed in these garments, he succeeded in getting into the cloak-room unnoticed, and, as an evil fate would have it, went off with the purse belonging to the lady whose friendly advances he had repulsed at the first meeting.

Fortunately his ill-fitting garb was so peculiar on the small form it covered, that it betrayed him to the first policeman he met, and he was brought back, a pathetic and grotesque object enough, volubly apologizing and tearfully explaining that this time it was not his fault. He had really meant to keep the promise he had made not to steal any more, but the ladies who had visited him in the dormitory had told him he ought to be ashamed to be such a bad boy, so he became disgusted with them and decided to get even. He added naively: "Honest injun, I didn't want to steal; I don't want to be a thief no more; but what can I do if it wants to steal all the time?" He indicated the region of his stomach as the abiding-place of his kleptomania.

He himself returned the purse to its irate owner, who expressed the opinion that he should be drowned like a rat, or, failing that, be sent to the Reformatory.

His grimace was impish. "I don't care," he retorted indifferently. "There 's lots of my pals there and they don't do nothing to me anyway. They 'll send me to that sick place, and the sick place 'll send me back 'cause they say I 'm too bad; and then they chase me home — and bet cher life, I got lots of fun."

A new and hitherto unsuspected light was thrown now upon his past wanderings. His life to and fro, from the tubercular patients' Sanatorium to the Reformatory, had developed in him mental twists and aberrations. The Sanatorium, deeming him an incorrigible and feeble-minded delinquent, had him committed to the Reformatory, which, in turn, finding him a tubercular suspect, sent him either to another sanatorium or to his home, with the resultant reaction.

It was now very carefully explained to him, with no possibility of misunderstanding on his part, that he was no longer in need of any "sick place."

"Aw, ain't I just sorry," he ejaculated. Then suddenly his small face became convulsed with fear. "Where 's yer goin' to send me if I can't go to the sick place?" he queried anxiously.

Unwittingly he pointed to the power that would sway him, and probably assist in his reformation. There had been no ambition to arouse in him — he had none. There was not the least sense of honor or loyalty, even to those he considered his friends. He was an arrant liar and coward, and would confess to anything and

everything, whether or not he was implicated, in the hope of saving his own back. He would readily turn informer and report a boy, innocent or otherwise, for some wrongdoing in which he was himself involved, thinking to divert suspicion. After the first long talk given him, in which it was clearly explained to him that "Nigger Sam's" teachings were regarded in a totally different light from the one he held, he no longer offered to divide any ill-gotten gains, but secreted what he could not spend. Only one all-absorbing passion he manifested, and that was for the moving-picture theatres, which were his favorite "hang-outs" during his frequent disappearances. He would be brought back by the Big Brother, who usually knew just where to locate him, haggard, sad, and contrite, endeavoring, with protestations of innocence and appeals for pardon, to stave off punishment.

It often seemed that there was no way of reaching him, as he had manifested no fear of the Reformatory, which stood in good stead with other boys. Now, as he unconsciously divulged the reason for his lack of susceptibility to the usual "terror," a possibility that might be worked to his advantage suggested itself.

"It's no use having more patience with you. It's best to send you to the Reformatory now," he was informed.

He burst into a passion of wild sobs. "No, no, no!" he exclaimed in appeal; "I don't want to go away from here. Please — please give me another chance! I'm goin' to be good — honest injun, I will!"

With seeming reluctance, it was agreed that he should have another chance. Before he left the office, an arrangement was entered into by which he bound himself to give the same confidence and devotion to the Superintendent that he had bestowed upon "Nigger Sam." Also, he pledged himself to seek advice when "it was telling him to do bad things," and in no case to disobey his Big Brother. The latter was one of the oldest and most reliable of the monitors; and having been, as he himself once very aptly expressed it, "no angel, believe me," was a most sympathetic and understanding collaborator.

In the ensuing months, it was obvious that he was definitely making an effort to abide by his promises. There was still very little mischief afoot in which he did not have a share. No boy got into difficulties in which he was not somehow inculpatated; yet there was a distinct improvement in the intervals of good conduct, which gradually became more frequent and of longer duration. He now would frequently come to the Big Brother and say, with a childish lisp, "It wants me to run away," or, "It wants me to steal. Please don't let it be a crook."

A consciousness that a crook was not the accepted ideal worthy of emulation was gradually, and with no little difficulty, borne in upon him. He was desperately afraid of corporal punishment, a measure very seldom resorted to, in the worst cases; and a threatened beating was frequently as successful as a promise of a treat to the circus or a theatre.

An effort was now made to awaken in him a sense of responsibility, with the object of taking his mind from himself and encouraging him to think of others. He was called into the office and asked whether, inasmuch as he was now a good boy, he did not think he should help to keep others from wrongdoing.

His eyes brightened, his chest expanded, he grinned from ear to ear, and very pompously made reply, "Sure thing; see if I don't make them behave."

A new little tacker, a previous acquaintance of his, was presumptively put in his charge. In reality, the Big Brother had him under constant surveillance, and the supervisor watched him with closer attention, while, in endeavoring to hold the newcomer to the straight and narrow path, he was himself forced to observe it. He prided himself upon his usefulness, and in time he became so obsessed with the sense of his responsibility to the community, that he felt himself quite a prop in upholding propriety, and deemed it incumbent upon him to reprimand the neighbors' children for any slips from virtue.

It was quite a matter of course that he should one afternoon, on the way from school, stagger pantingly into the office, dragging after him a neighbor's protesting son, followed by many children of both sexes, who were inmates of the Home, and others who were not. His hands were clenched, he was puffing from the unusual exertion, but was evidently buoyed up by the righteousness of his cause.

"This here fellar stole pigeons from the market man and is having lots of fun with them," he explained. "I told him to give them to you, or I'm going to steal them from him and bring them here myself."

Questioned why he thought stealing from the market man was wrong but stealing from the boy would be right, he replied, "Well, I don't want him to have fun with the pigeons, because he stole them; and if I steal them from him, I don't know what to do with them."

"Why not make him return the pigeons to the market man?" he was asked.

He scratched his ear thoughtfully. "I never thought of that," he

remarked. Then he insisted that some punishment should be assigned to the boy for his theft. Asked what he thought the other fellow merited, he unhesitatingly shouted, "He's a crook; you ought to kill him." Upon being confronted with the possibility of a like chastisement being applied to himself for similar delinquencies, he very meekly made answer, "But you asked it for him, not for me."

While he was painstakingly observing, and increasing his responsibilities, under the watchful eyes of his guardians, his conduct at the Home improved and his truancy at school suffered an eclipse as his interest in his studies awakened. He had been put into a special class, where he had the advantage of receiving individual instruction; and soon, under the spur of a reward for good work, his lesson papers bearing good marks were proudly brought to the office. As a week of good reports meant a treat to the theatre, good reports increased and multiplied. He developed confidence in himself, and maintained that his supposed dullness had been a mistake. "I'm smart, only they did n't know it," he declared. With further encouragement, he actually made such excellent progress, that he was advanced to the Third Grade before the end of his second year in the Home.

His wandering and stealing proclivities became dormant, awakening only at the advent of some dominant newcomer who had a "wonderful" history to flaunt and the determination to show in what contempt he held conventional law and order. Then he would occasionally suffer a relapse, and follow the other "hero" — whether older or younger was immaterial to him; and he would be implicated disastrously in the other's wrongdoing. "If I had n't been along, he would have done awful bad things; I did n't let him be very terribly bad," he once said, in exculpation of such a fall from grace.

By this time, his Big Brother had become his friend, companion, and pal, and he regarded him as a real big brother. The older boy's influence prevailed upon him to change many of his undesirable habits and characteristics, and caused him to react favorably to a suggestion that he become a member of the Scout Troop. He also began to display some interest in the manual-training classes, and constantly begged to be permitted to join the Scouts on their hikes.

He would slyly possess himself of a Scout uniform, — perhaps several sizes too large; it mattered not, — get it wrapped about his small person in some inconceivable way, and march into the office, saying, "Honest injun, I'm not goin' to steal it. I just took it to

put on and show you how it makes me look like a soldier. I'm awfully good now; please let me be a Scout."

He was promised that if, at the end of the school term, his reports were excellent, and he had no outbreak against him, he should be permitted to join the Scout Troop.

His efforts to attain his ambition were as interesting as they were original. He informed his teachers of the possible fruition of his desires, and begged them to help him attain the good marks necessary; if they thought his work was not coming up to the standard, would n't they please do the work for him and give him the marks he needed? Upon being informed that willingness to cheat would disqualify him from ever becoming a Scout, as a Scout must be loyal and true, he replied appealingly, "But I won't cheat when I become a Scout; so please let me do a little bit this time and then no more forever."

However, without any cheating on the part of the teachers or himself, he succeeded in getting the necessary excellent reports; the required six months of probation came and went without any definite misdemeanor, and he paraded about in his new Scout uniform, hardly able to give voice to his pride and happiness.

Later, when he ultimately came back to earth, he very soberly walked into the office and gravely announced that his future was causing him great concern. He was uncertain whether he wanted to be a fireman, a policeman, or a prize-fighter. This normal ambition signified, better than anything else could, that the boy had his feet at last in the right path.

Subsequently, he became a monitor, a Big Brother, and even helped with the smaller "problems" who were admitted. His progress in school continued, and he showed an aptitude for carpentry. He also developed a certain vanity, and was anxious to be dressed attractively. He would stand before a mirror and try parting his hair in various ways, calling to the boys to notice and admire the results obtained. He once wrote a small article for publication in the Home paper, and when it appeared in print, strutted about with the paper under his arm, waylaying any chance passer-by, with the words, "Did you see my name here in the magazine? Just look how nice it is!"

He participated in several Home plays; and when his recitations were admired, he decided that he wanted to be an actor. "Not like Charlie Chaplin, but one of them big actors that make you cry."

When a new boy entered the Home, he was the first to make his acquaintance, and promptly gave information in the following manner: "Say, are you a good boy or a tough?"

If the answer pleased him, he accorded the newcomer a cordial welcome and trotted him around proudly to his coterie of friends; if, however, the reply was an unfavorable one according to his estimate, he would lay down the law immediately; "Say, you better give up your monkey shines here, or you'll be sent to the Reformatory."

THE RESULT

Psychiatrist's Report, May 11, 1920.

Intelligence:

Mental capacity $11\frac{1}{2}$ years. I. C. .65.

Social classification semi-dependent. (The fourth mental examination made by me on this boy in the past seven years. With various tests, the results have been essentially the same. During the first years at the Orphanage, there was considerable improvement at school; but during the past two years, the boy's intelligence has been apparently stationary in development.)

Character:

Basis for character poor from an hereditary standpoint (insanity, T.B., alcoholism, etc.). The boy has always shown neurotic tendencies and a poor basis for character. Organization has been poor, except under Orphanage supervision. When that has been exercised, organization has been quite satisfactory.

Health:

Normal. Physical development inferior. When seen several years ago, this boy showed a mental capacity of six years, a chronological age of twelve years, with a physical development of eight, and social interests of eighteen. He was a professional gambler, earning frequently \$6 a day, with a strong sense of loyalty to his mother and great antagonism to the father, who had always been vagrant. Under institutional treatment, which was suggested from the first, he has shown marked improvement. In the institution he is well disciplined, and his conduct at present is excellent. His social interests, however, are poorly organized — he wants to be a "movie" actor, a professional acrobat, a prize-fighter, a lawyer, or a doctor, and still admits that he would probably slip back into gambling if he were released from supervision.

As the end of the school year drew near, it was observed that, while the boy was industrious and making some slight headway in his studies, he had almost reached the height of his mental capac-

ity; and it was questionable whether further schooling would rebound to his benefit. As he was at the time fifteen years of age, it was deemed expedient to equip him with a trade or occupation that should be a profitable source of future livelihood to him.

While he had grown and developed considerably during the two and a half years, his physique was still not up to par, and probably would never be, as both of his parents were decidedly undersized, and, according to the information once volunteered by the mother, "came from very small people." His face was still extremely youthful, and all in all, he looked no older than twelve years. He was quite athletic, delighted in acrobatic stunts, which he copied with singular skill and dexterity from performers he had been permitted to see at the theatres, to his intense delight, and was rather an adept at baseball.

If he remembered his dearly treasured dice, he gave no inkling of that fact, and seemed quite content with the vicarious marbles and balls that he seemed to enjoy instead. He had not developed an independent will, and his mind was easily swayed; yet for more than a year his conduct both at home and in school had been quite satisfactory. What he now needed was the necessary training that should enable him to stand on his own feet, in the near future, a respected and self-respecting young man.

It was decided to give him a thorough manual training, with the intention of finally turning him into a skillful artisan; and he took very kindly to this plan for his future, even though he wistfully wished that he might become a heavyweight prize-fighter and lick the champion of the day.

Toward the latter part of May, he entered the office, a dark frown upon his face and a worried look in his eyes. His mother with faltering steps followed him and encouraged him to make the petition she desired. "I got to find my father and give him a licking," was the disconcerting statement he flung out.

From questions directed to the mother, it developed that the father had been constantly drunk, and now, shortly before the birth of a new baby, had deserted the family, and she had come to her oldest son for protection and assistance.

"He is a good boy now," she insisted, "and he ought to be the breadwinner of the family."

The boy stoutly refused to go home and become the breadwinner, insisting that he "yet did n't know how to win bread," but was quite willing to go out on a hunt for his father, find him, lick him and make him stay home. "He 's afraid of me," he said, proudly, as he protectingly caressed his mother's hand.

"Yes, that 's so," agreed the mother; "when he 's home, that bum is got to behave himself. He 's afraid he 'll be licked."

"That 's why I took the cane from the office when I went home on a visit," said the boy; and hastily added, "but I brought it back again."

"That cane was a good thing, much better than a stone. You see he 's so quick to run away that a stone don't reach him," put in the mother, coming to her son's assistance, and presenting a picture of her domestic unhappiness calmly and precisely.

"He don't dare to beat her when I 'm around," said the boy, his fists clenched.

"That 's so," agreed the mother.

"Please, may I go out and hunt him up?" petitioned the boy.

"Where will you look for him?" he was asked.

"In the saloons, of course. I know all the saloons where he used to get drunk, and I always brought him home."

"That 's so," assented the mother.

The urgent plea was denied, gently but firmly, and an older and more experienced hunter was sent to locate the deserter.

Several weeks later, the mother again appeared seeking the discharge of a "breadwinner." Again her petition was denied, and the boy remained in the institution.

Arrangements were made to give him a thorough course in practical carpentry, as he seemed to take more kindly to that trade than to any other. It was realized that his limited intellectual capacity would prevent him from attaining any position of standing in the world, but there was every reason for the belief that he would make an honest citizen and a good workman.

A few weeks later, the Superintendent left for another city, and the boy's grief was genuine and sincere. At parting, he raised his hand as if taking an oath. "I promise you I 'll be good," were his last words.

In January, 1922, a visit was made to the Orphanage, of which he is now rather a useful and interesting member, and the following report concerning him was obtained:

"He is doing very well. We have no complaints to make. He has been taken from school, as we found his continued stay there useless, and is doing extremely well in the carpentry shop. He will soon be able to leave the institution and support himself without any difficulty, as he is quite a skillful worker."

CASE B

PARKER E——, "FROM A FAGIN LABORATORY"

Entered March 11, 1919. Age 13 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) A notorious juvenile law-breaker.
- (b) Pickpocket. Also tool of a gang of drug-traders, who employed him for their nefarious purposes.
- (c) Violent temper tantrums. Always in fighting humor.
- (d) Incurable liar.
- (e) Bunking out for weeks at a time.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Long and repeated truancy.
- (b) Exceedingly troublesome, and prepared to strike the teacher at any attempt to reprove his conduct.
- (c) Influenced the children in his class to be disorderly, impertinent, and disobedient.
- (d) Defiant to the School Attendance Officer.
- (e) Used very vile and obscene language to teachers and pupils.

3. HOME

- (a) Unmanageable. Very abusive to parents, brothers and sisters.
- (b) Stole whatever seemed valuable in his eyes.
- (c) Enjoyed appalling his parents by thefts he committed, and the obscenities he boasted he knew.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Systematically assisted his "gang" to steal from friends' and neighbors' homes and stores.
- (b) Quarreled and fought with the children of the block at one time, and at another influenced them to assist him in juvenile misdemeanors.
- (c) No respect for elders. Mocked at authority.
- (d) Juvenile Court Record:
1-26-18. Burglarious breaking into and entering the oyster-packing establishment at No. — Market Place, and stealing therefrom six gallons of oysters valued at

\$18, and a lot of stationery valued at \$3. Placed in care of Miss R—— for two months.

3-20-18. Probation extended indefinitely.

5-31-18. Assaulted teacher and has been utterly lawless. Sent to Reformatory, pending further hearing on September 2.

7-23-18. Released from Reformatory, and probation continued.

1-23-19. Larceny of one box of candy valued at 60 cents. Placed in charge of Miss R—— for three months.

4-23-20. Larceny of two dollars. (Other boys implicated in this charge.) Postponed to April 28, then to May 20, then to November 20, when it was dismissed.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Well nourished, healthy, and strong.
- (b) Bright, flashing, dark brown eyes, pleasing expression, and good features.
- (c) Bushy reddish hair, and good complexion.
- (d) Slightly defective vision, and a number of decayed teeth.
- (e) Fine physique, and pubertal development normal.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:

Intelligence: Moderate mental capacity. I. C. .77.

Social classification backward.

Character: Poor basis, and poor organization.

Health: Essentially normal.

Impression: The gang of which this boy is a member should be broken up, and another attempt made to readjust him in a public school. I doubt if he makes an adjustment until he has had an experience in a corrective institution like the M—— Reformatory.

(b) Personality Traits:

Careless about clothes and personal appearance; very abrupt and impolite in manners and ways.

A hearty eater. Fond of food, especially of sweetmeats, and always ready with blandishments and bribes, to secure his favorite dishes.

Pleasure-loving; fond of the theatres and the "movies," and would strive harder to get a treat he desired than to achieve progress in any endeavor.

Easily influenced by a stronger mind.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: a Russian emigrant, was a man of fair average intelligence, who was sober, industrious, and devoted to his family. He was completely ignorant of both American customs and ways and the language of the country; but being a skilled mechanic, he earned excellent wages, and was able to maintain his large family in comfort.

His relatives were all honest, hard-working people; and in great bitterness and sorrow of heart he declared that he must have sinned terribly, indeed, if God had seen fit to punish him with evil sons.

The fact that the boy was sowing wild oats grieved him and he felt disgraced and unhappy. He had attempted to control the boy by pleas and bribes, and had then applied punishment, to no avail.

Mother: a quiet, unassuming little woman, illiterate, but adapting herself to the manners of the new country, to which she had come but a few years earlier.

The conduct of the boy caused her anxiety and pain, and at first, aided and abetted by her husband, she sought to turn her son's straying feet into the path of rectitude; and then, when the father had thrown up his hands in despair, she worked herself to control the youngster. Though her efforts were futile, she persisted, and, as a last resource, turned, in her need, to the Orphanage for assistance.

She was quite intelligent, hard-working, and thrifty. There had been eight living children born to her in twelve years, and she spared no efforts to give them her care and attention. She appeared to be devoted to her family, and had no outside interests to distract her mind from her household duties.

Her nearest relatives, three brothers and a sister, were all promising musicians. She herself expressed an interest in music, and confided that her one ambition was to live long enough to see one of her boys a Mischa Elman.

None of her or her husband's forbears had been other than normal and fairly intelligent.

Siblings: *Oldest sister,* a bright, normal girl of seventeen, was employed in a millinery establishment, and was making rapid progress in her work. There had never been any difficulty with her.

Oldest brother, two years younger than the girl, had started the delinquency career in the family. He had been a truant, then took to undesirable associates, and continually bunked out. Finally, he was arrested in company with a notorious crook, and brought into court on the charge of stealing.

He was committed to a semi-reform institution, and upon his release, three months later, was apprenticed to an electrician. It appears that he got along fairly well for a while; then he returned to his former evil associates, initiated his younger brother into his gang, and started his downward career again.

Several arrests on various charges were followed by his disappearance from the city. Finally, many months later, his parents received a card from him in a distant city, notifying them in a half-dozen words of his enlistment in the Navy, and his intended departure for foreign waters.

His present whereabouts are unknown.

Younger brother, two years younger than the boy, is a rather mild counterpart of his two older brothers. An occasional truant at school, he is, however, under the control of his teachers; and while he is a difficult child for his mother to manage, he does not as yet present the problem that both of his brothers did at his age.

Youngest brother, a year younger than the one last mentioned, is a delicate, listless little fellow, whose poor health has been causing his parents serious concern. As yet, he has been guilty of no misdemeanors, either at home or in school.

Three younger sisters are of too tender an age for any possible characterization. They appear normal and bright.

(b) Developmental:

His mother stated that he had been a fine, large baby at birth, and with the exception of a few minor illnesses, had not been seriously sick at any period during infancy or early childhood.

He had had the advantages of good, affectionate parentage, and a fairly comfortable home, which, though having only a modest income, was blessed in the devotion of a good man and woman to each other, and to their family.

The mother, in deploring her oldest son's unhappy

career, had sadly observed: "Maybe he lost respect for us, because he became an American, and we were still greenhorns. He did n't want to speak our language to us, and we could n't speak English, so he was ashamed of us, and made friends with bad boys."

If it were true that misunderstanding either brought directly, or assisted to bring, the older boy into evil associations, certain it is that, for the younger, no such excuse can properly be offered. There was no evidence of disagreements with his parents due to any other causes than his peccadilloes. He had, first at his brother's instigation, participated with the latter in several escapades; then became a member of the gang, and followed its dictates.

It appeared that he yielded, readily enough, to the evil suggestions and influences that beset his path at a tender age, by reason of his brother's unfortunate affiliations, and the fact that his neighborhood was an undesirable one. Without doubt, his brother's example was more potent in directing his energies than his parent's exhortations and pleas.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Very untidy in personal habits.

Quick-tempered and impulsive.

Able to tell a plausible lie, and inculcate others.

When taken to task for a misdeed, he would immediately concoct an alibi, and endeavor to shift the blame on a boy entirely innocent of the offense. His pal of the moment he sought to protect as much as himself.

Did not seek to gain the favor of the monitors, as most cases of his type did, but readily found and consorted with the most difficult children, whose lead he then followed without question.

Had generous impulses, when he quite freely shared with friend and foe alike his most prized possessions, eatable and otherwise.

Interested in music and dramatics, and displaying anxiety to be accorded a part in the Home's entertainments and plays, which seemed to appeal powerfully to his imagination.

Indifferent to animals.

No interest in boys' sports and games.

(d) Home Conditions:

The home was fairly well furnished, and well kept, though the mother did all the work for the large family. The neighborhood, however, was objectionable for growing children, as there were frequent drunken brawls, and obscenity seen and heard in the streets, from both the white and colored inhabitants.

No pretense of cleanliness was made by these tenants of the ramshackle dwellings, in more or less need of repair; with the result that garbage and refuse of long standing abounded. Various dilapidated bits of what had once been household effects were strewn in the streets, mute evidences of the day or night brawls, when they had been employed as missiles by contending parties.

The women of the neighborhood were indifferent as to their attire, and walked the streets in untidy and non-descript garments. A general chaos and unrest seemed to exist among the tenants of the different homes. Children, white and colored alike, swarmed in doorways and streets, mingling and playing with one another most democratically.

(e) Mental Interests:

Playing poker and shooting craps.

Had two old, worn and dog-eared volumes, dealing with the impossible adventures of three gallant highwaymen, portrayed in a heroic light, which he guarded most zealously. Found enjoyment in studying the crude pictures with which the books were illustrated; and as his schooling had been extremely limited, it was with great difficulty that he worked out each sentence for himself.

THE TREATMENT

"It's awful funny, but there's a lady sneaking around here most every day, and she don't want nothing," was the rather strange report submitted by a trusty monitor, one afternoon on returning from school.

"How do you know she wants nothing?" he was asked.

"Sure I do," was the prompt and emphatic response. "When I asked her a couple of days ago if she wanted to see somebody here, she says, sort of not knowing what to say, — in such a kind of voice, you know what I mean, — 'No, I just want to see the Home.' So I took her around from top to bottom, and believe me, she just

wanted to see the Home like I want another boil on my neck." (As he had just recovered from a troublesome boil, the comparison was considered rather striking.)

"What are your reasons for thinking that she was not interested in seeing the Home?"

"Then would n't she look like a regular visitor when you show things; and not sort of as if she was looking around for somebody?" He expounded his theories triumphantly. "And then," he added, "she's been poking around here, — and —" he hesitated, and then brought out firmly, "she asked me about Chinky just before I came in here, so — maybe she's looking to make trouble."

"What did she want to know about Chinky?"

"Search me!" he ejaculated, shrugging his shoulders in an expression of puzzlement. "She asked me what kind of a boy he was now, and what you were doing to him, and whether we had more bad boys like him here — and I told her to come to the office and ask you," he ended.

"What did she say to your advice?"

"Just nothing, and walked right off," he replied, clearly mystified and greatly interested.

"Did you ask Chinky whether he knew her?" was asked of the boy, who, as Chinky's monitor, would hardly lose an opportunity to solve the seeming mystery for himself.

"Sure I did," he said eagerly, "but there's nothing doing there. Chinky says that he used to live on the same block with her, and that she's got some awful kids — one of them's in the Reformatory already."

"When you see her again, come and report at once," he was told.

Several days passed, and then, late one afternoon, he flung into the office breathlessly, his schoolbooks swaying widely in his excitement, and eagerly whispered, "There she is — now — right in the hallway — staring at nothing."

She was a frail little woman, with sad, weary eyes in a pale face, that seemed prematurely faded. She was dressed in neat clothes, without pretension to style or material, and was painfully embarrassed when requested to step into the office.

However, she soon mustered her courage, and timidly followed her lead. When she was seated, she looked about her, and noting the privacy she was given, she appeared relieved, and twisting and untwisting her hands nervously in her lap, she murmured in a low voice: "I wanted to see you some time ago — but could n't make up my mind."

"What is your trouble?"

"I am so unhappy." She was trying to suppress her tears, her distress painfully evident. "My eldest son is lost to us forever," — she clutched at her bosom, — "and — my other boy is — is in the Reformatory. I am afraid — afraid of this America."

"Why?" She was encouraged gently.

She looked up, her eyes bearing the hurt look of a child, and yet the sorrow of the woman. "My husband and I are hard-working people, and we never did anybody any harm — and we don't understand why our children should turn out so badly." She trembled, and her face became ashen in its pallor. "The big boy became" — she drew her hand quickly across her eyes — "*a thief*. The other one is coming out of that place in a week, the lady told me — and I am — I am afraid!"

She leaned back in her chair, an object of woe and misery.

Asked to give a short history of her erring second son, she complied, but always motherlike, excusing and palliating the offenses she bitterly enumerated, and wound up with an arraignment against her husband and herself. "If only we were n't so stupid and could understand the boys, maybe they would n't be so bad. But he has to work so hard to make a living, and I have to take care of the family, that it is perhaps natural for children here in America to be ashamed of their greenhorn parents, and do what they want."

"Have you tried to make the home attractive for the boys, and permitted them to invite and entertain their friends?"

"I did, I did," she cried eagerly; "I did everything I could to keep them home, and let them turn the house upside down. But they refused to bring their friends to the house. They said they were ashamed of us because we were greenhorns and could n't speak like American people. And — honest, — honest," — her voice broke as she tried to repress her tears, — "I did all I could to learn how to speak English, — I even went to a night school, — but the language would n't come to me, — maybe I'm too old, and — you can't imagine how awful it is when parents and children do not speak the same language."

"Did your eldest son show a special interest in anything at all?"

She shook her head in a sad negative. "All he cared for was to bum and loaf," she said bitterly, "and I, when we came to America was so glad — so happy, that here he would get a chance to become — to become — O good God! if he only were an honest man, I'd be satisfied now."

"What calling had you selected for him?"

Her face fell in shame. "I — I wanted him to play, to be — another Mischa Elman," she murmured.

"Did he seem to have any talent for music?"

"No, oh, no!" she said quickly. "But you see my three brothers are fiddlers — and — and I always wanted to play also. I can play on the violin so well, that no one wants to believe that I never had a lesson in my life." She lifted her head proudly, but dropped it again as her mind reverted to her sons. "I am not thinking of Mischa Elmans any more now," she wailed, "I just don't want them to be *thiefs*."

The tears burst forth in spite of her. "Believe me, my husband's and my families are good, honest people," she pleaded earnestly, "and I don't know why God should have cursed us."

Suddenly she straightened up in her chair, and her pitiful attempts to muster self-control and courage were clearly apparent, as she coughed nervously and attempted to compose her quivering face. "I — I've come here to — implore a favor of you," she brought out not without difficulty. "I've been calling a week, nearly every day — and — I could n't somehow come in here." Gathering further courage, she continued, "I want you to take my boy in here — when he is sent home from the Reformatory next week. He'll be lost sure if he goes back to his friends and — that awful creature who has such control over all of them."

"What creature?"

"Don't you know him?" she questioned in amazement. "Why, the neighbors all told me that everybody knows him and is afraid of him — that's why he does what he wants with the boys, and even the girls of the street."

"Who is he?"

She looked up helplessly, apparently unable to describe the creature in her mind. "He lives in our alley," she said slowly, evidently trying to recall the most pertinent facts, "and he only comes out at night — never by day — none of us ever saw him — and all the boys like to go to his house. Both of my boys told me several times that the — the Lobster, they call him — is a smart man, and shows them how to make lots of money."

"How long has that man been living in your neighborhood?"

"When we moved into our house five years ago, he was already there. He was always there, the neighbors told me. If I had only known of him, we would n't have bought the house, and he would n't have spoiled my boys." Then she returned to her request.

"Please take my boy in here," she begged, "and I'll try to repay

you as long as I live. My husband is a very good carpenter, and he will bind himself to fix things for you here in the house for twenty-five years; and I am a good seamstress, and I'll sew for you as long as my fingers will be able to hold a needle, if you'll save my boy from becoming a thief. I know you can do it," she burst out quickly, trying to forestall any possible objections; "that boy Chinky you got here used to be just as bad as my boy, and he behaves himself now, even though I saw him go into the Lobster's house one day last week."

She had unwittingly given some valuable information concerning "Chinky" and Chinky's gang, which again and again had been responsible for his lapses from grace, leaving no definite clues as to the whereabouts and identity of the leader or leaders, whose strong hold on Chinky had not been relinquished, even in the institution.

While the mother was hurrying home, comforted in the thought that her request was to be brought before the Children's Bureau, and that she would receive the promised support, "Chinky" was ushered into the office, and taken completely unawares with the totally unexpected question: "What were you doing at the Lobster's house last week?"

The boy, himself a leader, albeit a perverted one, knew well when to be close-mouthed and when to be loquacious. Now, unable to frame a plausible alibi at the moment, he changed color, and stammered, "I — I — did n't know you knew the Lobster."

"What were you doing at his house?" the question was repeated.

"I went — to tell him that he should leave me alone. That I could n't come to him no more," he replied untruthfully.

"Did he send for you?"

His eyes dropped. "Yes, sir," he finally murmured.

"What did he want you to do?"

His brow wrinkled in the way peculiar to him. "I don't know," he stated.

The question was repeated in a sterner tone. He hung his head. Again came the question. This time he raised his eyes. "Guess he wanted me to go out on a job with the gang," he confessed, unwillingly enough.

"How long have you known the Lobster?"

"Since I was a kid," was the response.

"Why is he called the Lobster?"

"'Cause he's as mean as a lobster. Wants everything for himself, and takes away everything the boys make from jobs."

"Why don't the boys object to such treatment?"

"Well, 'cause they're afraid of him. He's got a pull with all the cops, you know, and he says he'll squeal on them and they'll be pinched."

It was a short time after this that the house of the Lobster, a rickety, disreputable dwelling, facing the alley, in which was a running sewer, infested with rats and vermin, was raided, and the Lobster taken therefrom. A misshapen, deformed body was topped by a head suggesting several races. While the features were distinctly negroid and the skin a dead white, the hair was crisp and fiery red. For many years his ramshackle house had been the rendezvous for the boys and girls of the surrounding neighborhoods, and he had displayed an aptitude that might well be termed genius, in discovering and developing the peculiar weakness of the individual child, and then twisting and further distorting that trait, till the child was prepared to enter upon its career of juvenile delinquency. With fiendish precision and ingenuity he had planned his illicit laboratory, carefully planting and fostering various vices, and apportioning that iniquity to the individual child that best suited its characteristics.

Therefore, in his gang were juvenile offenders of all types and kinds, and in proportion as they flourished and prospered, so his finances increased, as he permitted them to keep but a fraction of their peculations and ill-acquired booty. He was both the head and sole teacher in his laboratory of crime, and had neither friend nor confidant among the many boys and girls upon whose lives he had cast his blight. When apprehended by the police, several bank books, bearing large deposits in local banks to his credit, were found in his possession, while the poverty of his surroundings and his attire would have put to shame the tatters and rags of the poorest and humblest beggar.

It was not without difficulty that the pupil of an up-to-date Fagin was permitted to enter the Orphanage, as some members of the Children's Bureau feared his possible contaminating influence. However, it was finally agreed to give him a chance, and with his hand in his mother's, he was brought to the office, and upon his mother's reiterated anxious petition, "Tell the gentleman, my son, tell him, what you promised me coming here," —

"I'm gwana be good," sullenly muttered the boy.

The poor mother's eyes spoke her entreaties and hopes. "I'll sign a paper promising to be your slave, if you'll only save him," she whispered her extravagant words, as the boy was being led away by the monitor assigned to him.

It was a matter of great surprise that, for the first month of his stay at the Orphanage, he was guilty of no flagrant offense. True, he had not been altogether angelic in his daily conduct at the Home, or in school, to which latter he had at first violently objected, and then had amazed all by his tame submission and regular attendance. None of the anticipated misdemeanors had been forthcoming, however, and it was supposed that the disciplinary measures of the Reform School were still fresh in the boy's mind, and kept him to the straight and narrow path.

This ultimately proved to be but the calm before the storm. One morning, the principal of the school sent in a hurry call to come to her office. There it was learned that the boy, in company with another youngster of a higher grade, who was known as troublesome, had made a collection of the teachers' purses from the cloak-room, into which they had somehow succeeded in gaining entrance, and both boys were nowhere to be found.

The boy's monitor recalled that the boy had seemed strangely silent on his way to school that morning, but was certain that no hint had been dropped of the theft, which clearly was then contemplated. An exhaustive search for the boys was started, but not till a week later was any definite news received concerning them.

The boy, his companion, and another pal had gone to a nearby city, where they lived in the streets, enjoying "good times" as long as their ill-gotten gains lasted. Then, breaking into a confectionery store, with intent to rob, they were apprehended by the proprietor, who turned them over to the police. In short order, they were then returned to their own city, and it was discovered that the boy's two comrades had also been pupils of the Lobster, and it was the three who had planned and executed the theft of the teachers' purses.

Crestfallen and apparently ashamed, the boy sat in the office, and penitently told of his sin, with many tears, to which his mother added despairingly.

"They put me up to it — you kin ask 'em," he pleaded in self-defense.

He seemed unable to grasp the thought that he was equally culpable with the instigators of the thefts, and reiterated again and again in apparent surprise, "But they said we should do it."

"Did you understand that it was wrong to take things that did not belong to you?"

"Guess so," he replied indifferently. "Been doin' it a long time anyway."

"Do you know why you were sent to the Reformatory?"

"Sure," he responded promptly, "for takin' things."

"Do you want to be sent back?"

"No, sir, no!" he exclaimed quickly. "I like it better here — Don't let 'im send me away," he appealed to his mother; "make 'im keep me here."

"But if you take things that don't belong to you, you can't stay here," he was informed.

"I did n't take the money myself," he insisted in bewilderment; "they made me — you kin ask them."

In the talk that followed, it was clearly explained to him that, in heeding the bad councils of others, he was as guilty as his advisers.

"But the bad things come in their head first, not in mine," he remarked, still uncomprehending.

"If you listen to the bad things, and let them make you do the bad things, are you not to be punished the same way as they?"

He wrinkled his forehead in thought. "Looks like you're right," he admitted; "but that Lobster always said to me that, if you do what somebody else tells you, you can't get in no trouble."

"You notice you *did* get in trouble — What about the Reformatory?"

"Dunno," he ejaculated. "Guess the Lobster picked on me." He was evidently under the impression that for a time he had lost favor with his master, hence his reformatory experience.

Believing that he was to be severely punished, he pleaded for another chance. It was made to appear that the chance was given him only in pity for his mother. His monitor was then instructed to seek his friendship and confidence, while watching him closely at all times.

The ice now broken, he reverted to his reputed character for lying and truancy, with a vengeance. The monitor, always at his beck and call, was discouraged and hopeless of attaining any favorable result with the trying youngster. Long talks were frequently held in the office with him, and always he had the story of someone who had tempted him to a fall. In his efforts to shift the responsibility for his delinquencies upon other shoulders than his own, he clearly manifested the spineless character of the weakling in all its frailties.

"The next time you are reported for wrongdoing, it will be *you*, and you only who is going to take the blame," he was finally told. "Do you understand that you and you only will be responsible for your actions?"

"Yes, sir," he replied. Then added hastily, "But — but — when they ask me to help them — ain't I just got to do it?"

"NO!"

His face expressed his uncertainty.

"You are now told that no matter who it is who tells you to do anything wrong, you are NOT to obey."

He nodded his head. The emphatic words seemed to decide his vacillating mind.

In the next few months, several causes operated to change his attitude materially for the better. First and foremost was his growing attachment to his monitor; the older boy, in the rôle of Big Brother, succeeded in gaining the admiration and trust of his charge, while assisting to introduce him to a wholesome, well-regulated life. In the second place, his two months' stay at the Reformatory had acquainted him with some correctional methods that carried no pleasant recollections in their wake. So great was his antipathy to that institution, that at first it was a more powerful factor in controlling him than the lukewarm ambitions aroused, or the various treats for which he longed. As he became accustomed to the routine of life in the Orphanage, a possible change to the Reformatory as punishment for evil-doing was a threat that powerfully affected and influenced his conduct.

Lastly, he had been informed through several channels, of the summary subjection of his former teacher, the Lobster, to a long-delayed justice, and his teachings began to appear less alluring and more hazardous. So, as his conduct improved at home, and his attendance at school became more normal, he actually began to make some progress in his studies, and showed interest in the manual-training classes.

His Big Brother was elated with this progress in the right direction, and frequently announced with a triumphant grin, "Guess that shaver is getting there all right!"

Unfortunately for this prognostication, evil chance threw into the boy's path a former pupil of the Lobster, who had been plying his "trade" very disadvantageously for the stores in his neighborhood. Shortly after this meeting, in company with an accomplice selected to be his companion by the Lobster's promising disciple, the boy was picked up in a five-and-ten-cent store by the outraged proprietor, who caught him pilfering at the counters.

In the office to which he had dragged both young miscreants, the indignant shopkeeper raved about the losses he had been sustaining through the thefts of just such rascals, and insisted upon the most hasty and violent punishment. He was clearly deter-

mined to make of the two an example that should deter others from like practices, and was placated only by a highly colored and overdrawn picture of the impossible and cruel punishments that awaited the boys at the Reformatory, and left feeling amply revenged.

While the older and more hardened culprit sat awaiting the coming of the officer from the disciplinary school, from which it was learned he had taken summary leave but the day previous, the other fidgeted uncomfortably in his chair, apprehending a doom he dreaded. The psychological effect of seeing his pal taken away to the institution he feared was most effective in rousing in him the keenest regret for his backsliding, and, at the same time, the most ardent desire to remain in the Orphanage.

It had been impressed upon him that his next misdeed would take him to the Reformatory, and it was important that the threat should prove no empty one to him. Believing that arrangements were being made for his transfer to his former abode, he appealed earnestly to his Big Brother for the latter's influence in his dilemma.

The older boy, hurt and amazed at a backsliding he would not have thought possible, at first turned a deaf ear to the pleas. Upon which, the youngster in desperation implored permission to see his mother. This was only partly granted, as, instead of being permitted the leave of absence he craved, a messenger was dispatched for his mother.

The poor woman came running at the summons. The boy immediately at sight of her flung himself upon her neck, and with tears and caresses implored her forgiveness, and assistance in keeping him at the Home. He prayed to her to intercede for him, and pleaded to be given "just one more chance."

The unhappy mother readily acceded to his request. To prove that this time he would faithfully observe his promises, she pointed to the improvement in his conduct for the past few months.

"He's never before been so good for such a long time," she pleaded in extenuation of his offense. "He is n't going to listen any more to those bad boys who ruin him —."

"Betcherlife, I won't," interpolated her son eagerly.

"He won't — he won't — no more!" the mother half-wailed, half besought.

At this juncture, she was reinforced from a totally unexpected source. The Big Brother, having had time to ponder the situation, reconsidered the rigid sentence he had passed upon the boy; and finding his heart softening toward the culprit, entered the

office, prepared to extend the hand of brotherly love and forgiveness.

"Say, pal, give a feller a chance," whispered the youngster, imploring eyes fixed upon the older boy.

The latter immediately launched into an appeal for mercy, concluding his sympathetic address, with the emphatic announcement, "I guess we ought to let him have another chance."

To all intents and purposes, it was his mother's intercessions, aided and abetted by the Big Brother's pleas, which gave the boy another chance in the Orphanage. So he was influenced to believe; with the result that his demeanor toward his mother became more respectful and considerate, and his regard for and loyalty to the Big Brother increased.

In the hope of safeguarding his promises, and at the same time awakening in him some special interest or ambition, which would absorb the leisure moments when mischief beckoned temptingly, several conversations were held with him regarding his desires for the future.

At first he was diffident, hardly venturing to express any opinion; but, gradually, he gave voice to a mild inclination for "playing on the fiddle." Asked the reason for that particular desire, he said timidly, "'Cause I want my mother to be happy. She always wanted me and my big brother to be fiddlers like my uncles."

"But do you want to be a fiddler yourself?"

"Sure" he responded with a degree of enthusiasm; "I always stole my uncles' fiddles — you can ask them."

"What did you do with the fiddles after you stole them?"

His face fell. "Gave 'em to the Lobster," he confessed.

"Is that the reason you stole them?"

He shook his head vehemently. "No, I wanted to play on them first; but the Lobster made me give 'em to him, and — and — I was busy doin' jobs, I had no time to fiddle."

An uncle, a musician of much promise, was engaged as his teacher, and the boy took to his violin lessons readily and eagerly. He really seemed to have some talent, and actually plodded through the long hours of practice that his uncle imposed upon him, without any show of impatience or unwillingness. As for his mother, her joy knew no bounds. Once, in an ecstasy of hope, she whispered, her face suffused with blushes and her eyes brightening in the vision she conjured, "Do you think I should dare dream about Mischa Elman again?"

As for the boy, he progressed steadily in his school-work and at his music, and in the year that followed, became a prominent

feature upon the entertainment and play programmes, when he rendered selections upon his violin, to the almost delirious delight of his father as well as his mother. Determined to express in some way their happiness at the improvement in the boy, the parents asked him to name his own confirmation gift, whatever that might be.

"Give a big dinner to all them kids," was the amazing demand made by the youngster.

The "kids" got their big dinner, and the happiest was the host, as he himself supervised the extra big helping that he insisted should be apportioned to his Big Brother.

His pilfering had almost completely ceased, he lied less frequently and readily, and his manners were markedly improved. Now and then, in some provocation, he would forget himself and burst into a torrent of profanities, which however, he would speedily regret, and then tender humble apologies. His future career was taking on a roseate hue, when the masterly, clever mind of another youngster in the Orphanage subjugated his weaker will, and again he fell.

The ringleader had planned and executed a scheme for illegitimate money-getting, which had been in successful operation for several weeks; and it was only by the merest chance that the victim of his cunning and craftiness discovered how he was being plundered. The small delicatessen shop in the neighborhood had been picked as the most fruitful source of spoil by the youthful delinquent, and to further his aims, he had enlisted the assistance of two weaker spirits. Leaving one confederate as a watch, either to ward off, or to engage in conversation, prospective customers, till the contemplated deed had been achieved, the two would enter the store, and while the leader absorbed the attention of the shop-keeper with sundry requests, or gave orders of imaginary persons, the other would rifle the till and appropriate such goods as reached his nimble fingers.

The downfall of the trio was caused by such an unconscious instrument of justice as a monkey. The watcher on the sidewalk had so far forgotten his onerous duties as to permit himself to become entranced by the antics of an organ-grinder's simian companion, performing right in front of the shop, so that the chance customer, entering without interference, had ample opportunity to note the suspicious actions of the boy at the cash-box.

The outraged proprietor speedily recognized the situation, and pouncing upon the three without further ado, he brought them to the office.

The boy pleaded in extenuation of this new and unexpected offense, that at no time had he done the stealing from the shop — he had only consented to do the watching, and that, only because the other two had “made fun” of him, and called him “sissy” and “fraid-cat,” which had tormented him out of all endurance.

Dismissed for the time being, while the other two were taken into conference, he thought quickly, and apparently apprehending punishment, took matters into his own hands and flew to his parents’ home. Soon, however, he returned, followed by his weeping mother, a crestfallen father, and several uncles, who immediately put up an urgent plea that the boy’s offense be overlooked and forgiven.

“Ain’t it a year already, and I ain’t done nothing bad?” queried the boy tearfully, as a reason why judgment should be withheld. “I could n’t help it,” he insisted; “they called me all kinds of names, and I just had to show them that I had some spunk.”

“Let him off this time for the last chance,” begged the Big Brother, whose sympathies he had managed to enlist before his exodus for his relatives. “I’ll be responsible for him.”

The youngster grasped the older boy’s hand in gratitude, and looked up appealingly. “Don’t take me away from him,” he entreated.

The relatives joined in the petition, and the outcome of the situation was that the boy was permitted to remain tentatively in the Orphanage; though the consensus of opinion was that he was best suited to the Reformatory.

It was recognized at the time that, unless with the passing of the years the boy could be fortified to resist the temptations thrown in his way by a stronger will, he would fall an easy prey to the tempter. Efforts were made to work upon his affection for his Big Brother, and cause him to imitate the characteristics and actions of the friend he admired with all his heart.

The latter fulfilled his promise by keeping the boy constantly under his wing. During the rest of his stay at the Orphanage, there was no further complaint, as he lived a healthy, normal life, making fairly average progress in his studies at school. He continued with his violin instruction, and expressed the hope that, when he grew up, he might become a musician in a theatre, and so have a chance “to see a lot of plays all the time, and not have to pay lots of money.”

THE RESULT

From a Report submitted to the Benevolent Society by the investigator on the case:

"In June, 1920, the boy was discharged from the Orphanage, and returned to his parents. Upon investigation two months later, the mother reported that he was behaving very well.

"In March, 1921, he was reported as having been truant twice during that school term. The teacher claimed, however, that there was a marked improvement in the boy.

"The parents plan to move to a better neighborhood, for his sake, and also to safeguard the welfare of the other children."

Letter from the boy to his former monitor, dated November 20, 1922:

DEAR BUD:

Still on my job, on my Scout honor. But I am getting bum marks all the same, though I dig in them darn lessons, till I'm ready to turn on the water-works like a girl. Say, do I miss you? — oh, boy!

When are you coming out to see me? My old lady says you should come for Thanksgiving Day, and believe me, she is some swell cook. Honor bright, you come, and I'll promise to do anything you say for a year. We're in some swell joint, believe me, and my old lady gives me everything I want, as long as I dig and fiddle. She's some good guy, believe me.

I'm a member of Troop K, and last Saturday night we had Troop inspection by some of those high mockme-mocks, and then came an Entertainment by the Glee Club, and I had to give them a number on my fiddle, and you should see my old lady bawl. But she did n't do that because she was mad with me, because she was n't. Funny, is n't it?

Seems like I got to go through High School or bust, the old man and the old lady make things so nice for me — guess I got to be a good Scout. All the same I wish you had not left B——. I just miss you like the dickens. How do you like your new joint? I hope you miss me like I do you, and then, you can bet your sweet life, you'd come back here and stay with us.

How is Mr. D——? He's some swell guy. Hope the kids out there got some sense and don't make him lots of trouble. Do they like him like us kids did?

Give him my love. Come on out for Thanksgiving Day, to your devoted, loving friend forever and ever,

PARKER E——.

CASE C

BILLY A——, "THE INVALID"

Entered October 17, 1917. Age 10 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Violent temper tantrums.
- (b) Incurable truant.
- (c) Acting "queerly" when excited; his mouth twitching spasmodically and his body shaking as if with the ague.
- (d) Inveterate liar.
- (e) Staying out late at night.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Several years' retardation, due to truancy. Had not advanced beyond the First Grade.
- (b) Defiant and disobedient to teachers.
- (c) Extremely lethargic deportment when in class; his mind seemingly a blank, and only roused to any interest at some order, to which he instantly objected, and at once defied or mocked the teacher.

3. HOME

- (a) Unmanageable.
- (b) Temper exploding at the least provocation.
- (c) Constant quarreling with members of the family; determined to have his own way.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Anti-social to young and old.
- (b) Had not a friend of his own age, male or female, and was not interested in acquiring any.
- (c) Disrespectful to elders, and defiant to authority.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) In appearance, a walking skeleton, covered by a pallid, transparent skin.
- (b) Sallow, tragic-looking face, from which the large, brown eyes stared dully and lifelessly.

- (c) Stooped, round shoulders, and peculiar, awkward and lumbering gait.
- (d) Thick brown hair, waving and curling about his head, the only healthy and normal appearing feature of his entire physique.
- (e) Swollen and inflamed tonsils and adenoids. Enuresis.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — From Report of Psychiatric Clinic:

“First seen on 12/2/13. Aged 6 years. Mother gives history of night-terrors and temper tantrums, and also adds that patient is disobedient, and it is perfectly impossible for her to prevent him from spending most of his time at the movies. His teacher reports as to patient’s work in school: ‘Purely mechanical work good; mental work very poor.’

Diagnosis — Chorea. Bad home environment. Mental retardation. Binet-Simon shows a mental retardation of two years.

Patient was referred to Miss B——’s special class, under care of Clinic.”

- (b) Personality Traits:

Scrupulously tidy about his person and his clothes.

Fond of fussing with his hair, which he loved to form into ringlets about his head.

Turned up his nose in disgust at most dishes placed before him. Only accepted eagerly ice-cream, cake, and candy.

Very poor sleeper. Tossed to and fro on his bed for the greater part of the night.

Fastidiously wanted two clean pocket-handkerchiefs every day, and was constantly using them to brush imaginary specks of dust from his clothes and shoes, as well as for his face, indiscriminately.

Irritable at times. Extremely sensitive, and would burst into tears at any teasing of the children.

Very easily influenced. Ready to lie in self-defense, but as ready to confess a fault if taken to task for it.

3. SOCIAL

- (a) Heredity:

Father: was feeble-minded, immoral, and syphilitic, earning a wage of \$6 per week, when he was working at any of his odd jobs. He had no trade or occupation, and

had applied to the Benevolent Society for assistance as early as 1905, when he was still quite a young man.

He had a violent temper and was constantly quarreling with his wife and children, whom he abused and ill-treated to such an extent that the neighbors were compelled frequently to interfere. He died from paralysis in November, 1915, leaving his family utterly destitute.

His relatives were, without exception, people prominent in professional and business life in the city, and of good, substantial character. Two of his cousins specially were noted, one for scholarship and erudition, and the other as the obstetrician-in-chief of a leading hospital.

After the man's death, the responsibility of caring for his indigent family devolved upon the Charities, which, in assuming charge of the unfortunate household, improved conditions considerably. So much so, that the family lived in peace and quietude, and appeared to be much happier than at any time during the father's lifetime.

Mother: a low-grade moron, was slovenly, shiftless, and unable to think or act for herself. She had been infected by her husband with a venereal disease, and was frequently ill, and constantly undergoing treatment at the hospital.

She complained that her husband's ill-treatment of her had caused her to become nervous, and that she was unable to care for her children, who were too nervous and troublesome for her to handle. She also maintained that her household duties were too arduous for her, and insisted that her young daughter, little more than sixteen years of age, should be compelled to care for the home.

To her neighbors, and all who would listen, she would complain bitterly of her children's ingratitude and lack of respect for her. She often visited her relatives, a brother, sister, and several nieces, all persons of good repute in the city, and begged for funds with which to maintain her "needy, starving children." Her husband's relatives were quite frequently favored with like requests, and then she would appeal to the Charities, which maintained her, to compel all the relatives to contribute to her support.

Her favorite occupation was to sit on the doorstep of the poorly kept house wherein her home was located, and deliver harangues regarding her lot in life, as compared to the fate of her relatives.

Siblings: Oldest sister, a fairly attractive girl physically, was of rather dull mentality; but she had perseverance and tenacity of purpose, and succeeded in being graduated from the public school at the age of fifteen.

When the girl was twelve years old, the mother brought a complaint to the Children's Bureau, that her daughter was disobedient and disrespectful, and petitioned that a disciplinary school should be the punishment awarded the child for her undutiful conduct.

It was learned, however, that the girl did as much as could be expected of her. She had been very unhappy in the home prior to her father's death, and had become accustomed to caring for her two younger brothers during the frequent intervals of her mother's stay at the hospital. A Wassermann test was given her, and proved negative.

After her graduation from school, she was taught type-writing and stenography, through the kindness of a worthy lady who had become interested in her. Later, the same lady, discovering that the girl had a good voice, for which she was secretly entertaining longings and ambitions, gave her the benefit of vocal lessons.

The girl undeniably shows an aptitude for singing, and is a promising case at present.

Older brother, was reported, at the age of ten years, to be suffering from a gonorrheal infection. He was given treatment for a long time in a hospital.

Several years later, his school record stated that his attendance was fair, scholarship and deportment good, but that he did not care to study.

He was tongue-tied, and of unattractive appearance physically, having large, uncouth features and an extremely sallow face.

The latest report, in 1921, was to the effect that he was working as a stitcher in a shoe factory, and earning \$15 a week.

He is regarded as of normal mentality, and is apparently getting along satisfactorily.

(b) Developmental:

From various sources it was learned that he had been a premature baby, weighing at birth but three pounds. He had been extremely delicate and puny, and surprise was expressed that his careless and negligent mother had been able to keep him alive.

His early childhood is but a history of different illnesses, of more or less severity, treated in one hospital after another. He had all the children's contagious diseases, and the attack of scarlet fever, from which he suffered when not quite eight years old, left him affected with some heart condition, and also chorea.

When he returned to school, his teacher reported that, in addition to his reprehensible conduct, he was subnormal. He was examined, and the physician suggested that, inasmuch as he appeared of weak intellect, the best disposition that could be made of him would be to send him to R——, the school for the feeble-minded.

Application was duly made, and pending its result, the boy took matters into his own puny hands, and lived as best suited him.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Would sit for hours, silently and blankly staring at something or nothing, sucking the thumb of one hand, while the other hand was busily engaged in forming a ringlet of a part of his hair.

Delighted in a bottle of smelling-salts, which was regarded by him with as much favor as marbles usually are by the average boy. He would put the bottle to his nose, sniff rapturously, roll his eyes in gratification, and then, with a deep sigh, would cork the bottle, and return it tenderly to its depository in his breast-pocket, till it was time for the next performance.

Also carefully guarded, and kept concealed in an inner pocket, a clinical thermometer (he had appropriated it from one of his hospitals), and would religiously take his own temperature six times a day, or every two hours.

Not interested in boys' sports, games, or plays.

Liked to finger the pages of a magazine for the purpose of seeing the pictures, which he rather enjoyed.

Found pleasure in witnessing the dramatic performances given by the children of the Home, and always expressed a desire for the theatres and the movies.

Showed marked interest in the girls' toys, and preferred the girls' games and plays.

Very fond of animals, and took great pleasure in the special privilege accorded him, at his request, of feeding the Home's pets with the various foods he carefully got together from personal solicitations in the kitchen and from individuals.

(d) Home Conditions:

It was in a neighborhood of squalor and neglect that the feeble-minded couple at first established their home; and with the passing of the years, both the neighborhood and the home still further deteriorated.

Poorly furnished, without proper ventilation or sanitation, the three dark rooms that composed the home of the family were rendered the more wretched by the constant quarreling and squabbling during the father's lifetime. After his death, while there was more peace, there was no increase in cheer, or decrease in the poverty which enveloped the household in its dismal grip.

The father had been a hideous influence in the life of the boy, and the mother was not less so, though she took her turn in scolding and pampering him. He had no respect for the nervous woman, who had no control over her faculties, and the dark and unwholesome home repelled him. He finally abandoned it in search of greater attractions.

(e) Mental Interests:

None.

THE TREATMENT

"Please may I come in? Billy is going to faint right away," sounded in quick, nervous accents behind the door; and almost immediately the knob was turned, and in came a young girl, half-leading, half-dragging an emaciated youngster, who looked as if he were going, not to faint, but to die right there and then.

"Give — me — my — medicine — quick!" he gasped, as he sank into a chair, and breathed very heavily.

The girl quickly opened a much torn and worn suitcase, and from a heap of dingy, gray-looking clothes, extracted a bottle containing some brownish fluid, and a teaspoon, measured out a dose with a trembling hand, and poured it eagerly into the boy's open mouth. This done, she breathed a sigh of relief, patted the boy's head, murmuring endearments to him, and then returned the bottle to its former place.

"I told Miss C—— that Billy could n't walk so far, and that he would die before we got here," she explained, her troubled eyes still upon Billy, "but she would n't listen to me. When the Watson kids were sent to the Home last week, Miss C—— sent a taxi to bring them here, and we live a block farther away than those people do, and Miss C—— expects such a sick boy to walk all that way. I call it downright mean, that's what I do; I don't care."

"What is the matter with Billy?"

"Why, don't you know?" she ejaculated in amazement, ceasing her ministrations to Billy for the moment, and giving her attention to the enigma that was confronting her.

"I thought everybody knew how sick Billy is," she remarked, in a hurt tone of voice. "Did n't they tell you that he has an awful bad heart?" (Here Billy put his hand over that region of his anatomy that he thought must be his heart, but which happened to be his stomach, and rolled his eyes as if in pain.)

"You see?" added the girl, with a triumphant shake of the head, and a significant glance in Billy's direction.

Assured that Billy's ills would in the future receive proper attention, she relaxed somewhat from her nervous tension, and submitted the information that she was Billy's sister, that she had brought him up, that she had always nursed him during his illnesses, and that, if it had n't been for her, Billy would surely have died — "because mamma is that nervous, she don't know what she is doing half the time"; and that she had felt it her duty to take Billy to the institution, to make sure that his condition was fully understood.

"Miss C—— was going to bring him up at first; but when she did n't want to take his medicine along, I felt I must take him myself and explain things. You know you got to do things for yourself if you want to be sure that they are done," she observed, with finality.

"Ain't it time now to take my temperature yet?" put in Billy weakly, at this juncture.

"Oh, sure!" promptly replied the girl, and as promptly produced a thermometer from her purse, and stuck it into Billy's receptive mouth.

After a minute, it was Billy himself who removed the encumbrance from his mouth, looked at it with close attention for a second, and then remarked with infinite sadness: "It's 99 and — ain't it a fifth of a degree? See, I told you, it ain't goin' to be normal."

The girl took the thermometer from him, glanced at it, and nodded her head, sorrowfully. "Maybe they'll cure you here, Billy," she said, consolingly. "You know," — she changed her voice to proud tones, as she turned her attention from the boy's lugubrious face, — "he does pick up things quick. Did you see him read that temperature?"

"Where did he learn that?"

"I got them nurses in the hospital to show me how," answered Billy, "and then I showed her."

"He sure did, believe me!" agreed his sister, triumphantly.

She then started off again with an eloquent description of the delinquencies of Billy's heart, the recital of which Billy seemed to enjoy enormously, when she was interrupted and told not to worry any more about Billy as he was going to be cured soon.

"Oh, no, I'm anti-curable," hastily put in Billy; and then added eagerly, "That's what all them big doctors said. And my cousin, Dr. —, said so too."

"We got a cousin who is a very big doctor," began the girl, "and he says —"

"Well, don't worry any more about Billy till you're told," she was stopped in the midst of her information, to Billy's very evident regret.

When the sister finally took her departure, after repeated warnings and admonitions about the medicine, the smelling-salts, and the thermometer, Billy was informed that now he was going to get well speedily, and become a regular boy.

The boy looked up, with great, hurt, amazed eyes that gleamed reproof. "I can't," he murmured, sadly.

"Why not?"

"Because," he began slowly, "when I walk too much, or run, I get — heart disease." And again his hand eloquently pressed a certain portion of his body.

"That's too bad," — he received the sympathy he desired and expected, — "but all the same we're going to try to be a real boy and forget about the heart for a little while."

He shook his head negatively, his tragic eyes filled with tears of impotent anger and remonstrance.

Billy was then put in charge of the nurse, and special diets, sleeping quarters, and a daily routine, differing from the other children's, were arranged for him. He took rather kindly to the innovations that were now inundating his life, and throve almost in spite of himself, under the attention given him. No effort was made at mental development; the aim for the time being was to put him in good physical condition. Soon he heartily enjoyed the good, nourishing foods, which at first he had pushed from him with repugnance, and found pleasure in the walks, to which he had objected for some time. He had at first railed against outdoor sleeping; but being compelled to submit to the inevitable, he in time delighted in his corner of the sleeping porch.

When he had finished his bottle of medicine, it was not refilled, though he begged and pleaded for it. He was given, in its stead, fresh air, food, and rest. After six months of this treatment, it was found that his weight had been increased by fifteen pounds.

By this time, he had become accustomed to the institutional environment, and was permitted to take part in the lighter activities allowed the younger boys. He still continued to take his temperature and sniff at his smelling-salts, and it was deemed advisable to permit time, and the boys with whom he was to be thrown later, to cure him of those habits.

Till the next school term, his physical welfare received first consideration. He had been transferred from the charge of the nurse to that of a supervisor, and while at times he presented objectionable traits of character that had to be carefully managed, he at no time was a problematic case, with definite delinquent or incorrigible tendencies.

The week before school reopened, he was called into the office. "Now, sonny, ready to go to school?" he was asked.

His face, somewhat rounder now, and decidedly more healthy in appearance, took on one of his old-time tragic looks. "I'll get sick again," he threatened.

"We'll have to look out for that. But we also have to look out that you become a smart boy and learn how to read and write well, and get a chance to be a great man like your cousins, the doctor and the professor."

There was no answering gleam of ambition in his dark eyes. "I don't want to go to school," he said; "I want to stay home and play with the dogs and the bunnies."

"But the dogs and the bunnies are not going to teach you how to read, write and count. What will you do when you grow up?"

"I'll keep a store, like the bird man on Broad Street, and have lots of animals," he replied.

"Then how about starting your store right now, by being allowed to go to the bird man and pick out an animal, all for yourself?"

His face flushed with joy and his eyes became bright. "Oh, can I?" he questioned eagerly.

"Yes. How much money have you in the bank?"

Greatly excited, he almost ran out of the office, and returned in breathless haste a moment later, with the pass-book issued to the depositors of the Children's Bank. "See! Here's my money!" he cried earnestly.

"How much is that?"

His face fell. "I — I don't know how — to make it out," he stammered in confusion.

"Then how will you know what to pay the bird man?" he was asked.

His eyes brightened. "I'll give him my bank book and tell him that's all the money I been saving since I came here, and tell him to take what he wants," he replied eagerly.

His faith in the bird man was evidently strong. "Suppose the bird man tells you that he would rather receive bills instead of the bank book for the dog, what will you do then?"

For a moment he looked puzzled, then nodded his head as if agreeing to the bright thought that had occurred to him. "I'll go to the bank and get the money and give it to the bird man of course," he stated.

"Let us suppose that the bank makes a mistake and gives you less money than you are entitled to — what then?"

"Do them banks make mistakes, too?" he queried, his eyes large in astonishment.

"Sometimes. You know you have to count the money you put into and draw out of the bank," he was informed.

"Ain't it funny that them bank men don't like school, just like me?" he remarked.

To avoid treading on dangerous ground, a question instead of an answer was given him.

"How are you going to know whether or not you receive the right amount of money your book calls for?"

He replied with a hopeless shrug of his thin shoulders.

The importance of attending school having been forced upon his consciousness, he was finally permitted to go to the store, in charge of his monitor, who had provided himself with the necessary bills, to the boy's eager-eyed interest. Soon he returned, all smiles and happiness, hugging a tiny puppy under his coat, because, as he explained, "That big wind will make him catch his death of cold"; and he held out the squirming little creature with admiring affection. "J' ever see anything so bu-too-ful?" he cried in his ecstasy.

He also submitted the information, after his joy and pride in his "dog" had become more normal, that if it had n't been for the monitor, he should n't have known how to purchase and pay for his pet; so he felt it incumbent upon him to heed the advice given him by the older boy, "to go to school and learn something."

In the months that followed, he learned many things, though very slowly and with apparent difficulty. His mental capacity was below his age, but he plodded along steadily and faithfully, presenting none of the delinquencies of his previous school record. His deportment was good, and he seemed desirous to keep up with the work of his class. As his health was still the first consideration,

he was permitted to continue his slow progress in his school-work, no effort being made for more rapid improvement.

Meanwhile, at the Home, his life was undergoing more radical and novel changes, which were to affect his habits and conduct, till the metamorphosis of his character was complete. Mingling more freely with the boys, he became interested in boyish activities hitherto unknown to him, and actually began to enjoy the flying of a kite and a game of marbles. He even learned to emit a cheer, at first half-hearted and feeble, then strong and lusty, when his favorites excelled on the baseball diamond, forgetting to feel his heart for any after-effects.

The smelling-salts were doomed when the boys started the derisive question, "How's the smeller, Billy?" A few days later, when the smelling-salts had not been in evidence, and speculations were rife concerning the hitherto ubiquitous bottle, Billy marched soberly into the office and very gravely put a small packet wrapped clumsily in newspaper on the desk. "I want to send them for my momma," he announced.

"What are they?"

"My smelling-salts for momma to smell, and my thermometer to take her temperature," he replied with a sad gravity, a doleful shake of the head.

"Why are you sending them to your mother? Don't you want them any more?" he was asked.

"I don't know," he replied thoughtfully. "My temperature is normal all the time — and — and the boys laugh at me." He brought out the last bravely, swallowing the lump in his throat manfully, though the tears stood in his eyes. "I — I — can't any more look in the looking-glass and stick my tongue out to see if it's coated — they make fun of me — so what's the use of them things?" he ended bitterly.

Asked how he felt since he had discarded the medicine, smelling-salts, and thermometer, he looked up and seemed for several moments to be thinking. Then, "I got a lot to do and sometimes have n't even time to see how my heart is going," he answered, reproach in his voice. After which, he secured wrapping paper, and making a neat package of his medical paraphernalia, laboriously scrawled his sister's address thereon, and sent them to her, with the advice to "keep them for momma."

He continued to attend school for the next few years, and while his conduct presented no difficulties, his scholarship was only fair at its best, as his mental faculties remained sluggish. He was compelled to apply himself intently to a subject, and it was only by

dint of extreme endeavor and frequent coaching that he was able to make his grades even as slowly as he did. His concentration was extremely poor, but his efforts were undeniably painstaking.

The boy's mind, though needing constant encouragement and assistance in its development, was not feeble, and later, it was noted, that, as his health improved, his mental faculties became brighter. As he grew more of a boy, and less of an invalid, he became more cheerful and was decidedly happier. His pets, of which he accumulated a fair number, assisted him greatly in acquiring a more normal aspect of life, as they took the important places the thermometer and smelling-salts had previously occupied in his mind.

In time, his face lost its tragic expression. While he remained delicate in appearance and in constitution, for nearly three years he had no real illness, and seemed fairly on the road to a normal boyhood. Gradually also, he acquired a fondness for the manual-training shops, in which he spent several hours every week, and became interested in the Boy Scout activities, in which he frequently participated. His happiness, however, lay in his fondness for his dumb pets, whom he loved and cared for with the utmost untiring devotion. The first book he himself read from cover to cover, and with complete enjoyment, was one dealing with animal life, and his ambition to have "a bird and all kinds of animals store" when he grew up persisted with him.

Ultimately, he became a mild-mannered, gentle little chap, whose slow mind could be trained to any occupation not needing strong vitality or a vigorous intellect.

THE RESULT

From Records in the Benevolent Society:

Billy A——, born February 25, 1907.

"Examined August 7, 1920.

Intelligence: Mental capacity 9 years. I. C. .64. Social classification semi-dependent.

Character: Poor basis, with an hereditary foundation. Parents feeble-minded. Father syphilitic. Boy has had chorea.

Character fairly well organized.

Health: Functional heart-trouble reported by hospital probably of little significance.

Impression: Case for sympathetic routine, institutional training."

"In December, 1920, Billy A—— became ill and was taken to the H—— Hospital. He had pneumonia, and his heart also was

in a bad condition. He was at the hospital five months, at the end of which time he was placed in a private home in the country. He was examined several weeks later and reported on as follows: 'Patient is in very good condition. His heart is compensating; there is still a mitral regurgitation (a flowing backward of the blood through the mitral valve), but with complete rest during the summer, and a continuance of the present hygiene, his recovery should be rapid. The boy looks remarkably well and seems in excellent spirits.'"

In a letter from his sister, dated November 16, 1921, appear the following pertinent paragraphs:

"Billy is getting to be a big boy now, and has n't been sick for a long time already. I go to visit him often in the country where he stays in a very nice home. I wish they would keep me there too, and I know he is very happy. He goes to school yet, and will be promoted from the Seventh Grade next term, so the boarding lady, who is a very nice lady and I like her very much, told me.

"She likes Billy an awful lot and bought him a new dog when Jim was run over by an automobile and killed. Billy nearly cried himself to death, but now he feels better since he got the new dog. But he says he will never forget Jim, who is buried a little ways away from the house, and every day he goes there with the new dog. He wants to make flowers grow over the grave. I guess I'll have to buy him some seeds for roses. He says he is going to have a big store with all kinds of birds and animals when he grows up, and will give away puppies to all the poor little boys for nothing. That would be awful nice, but I would much rather he would become a big Professor like my first cousin, Professor —, or even a doctor like my second cousin, Dr. —."

CHAPTER III

WANDERERS

CASE A, BENJAMIN E——	“A BABE RUTH”
CASE B, FRANK L——	“A SOLDIER OF FORTUNE”
CASE C, ISIDORE S——	“A KNIGHT OF THE STREETS”

CASE A

BENJAMIN E——, "A BABE RUTH"

Entered March 20, 1916. Age 11 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Molesting and attempting to misuse little girls.
- (b) Frequent truant; unwilling to attend school.
- (c) Extremely lazy and disobedient.
- (d) Easily influenced by older boys, who led him into all sorts of mischief.
- (e) Was the favorite "tool" of the gang-leader in his neighborhood.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Several years' retardation.
- (b) Very poor effort; either could not or would not concentrate on any subject.
- (c) Used objectionable language to the teachers when reproved for deportment or scholarship.
- (d) Passed obscene notes to the girls in the class.
- (e) Defiant and unmanageable.

3. HOME

- (a) Disrespectful to mother.
- (b) By the direction of the leader of his gang, he would steal any money he could find, or purloin various articles which could be sold and converted into cash.
- (c) Unmanageable. Determined to have his way with his mother, at any cost.
- (d) Used vile language.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Easily persuaded to enter the neighbors' homes or stores, and steal money, or food, or merchandise.
- (b) Enticed small girls into hall-ways for improper purposes.
- (c) Took a malicious delight in throwing a stone into a plate-glass window, and then accusing some other boy of the act.
- (d) An inveterate liar and loafer.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Very short in stature and quite stout.
- (b) Ungainly in appearance; florid face, large cheek-bones, heavy features, of which the thick, sensual lips stood out most prominently.
- (c) Rather fair skin, hairy, and also deeply freckled.
- (d) Small, pale-blue eyes, lacking lustre and animation. They seemed like two colorless beads stuck into a massive, putty head.
- (e) Tongue-tied. The impediment rendered his speech defective and very slow in utterance.
- (f) Large, clumsy feet, but exceedingly nimble and active in movement.
- (g) Long, awkward hands, covered with warts and other excrescences; very strong and supple.
- (h) Unusual gawky gait: head slouched forward, shoulders hunched; but the heavy body surprisingly rapid and dexterous in running, jumping, and leaping.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:
 - Intelligence: Essentially normal. I. C. .94.
 - Character: Apparently normal basis and organization. (No adequate data.)
 - Health: Essentially normal.
 - Impression: Good institutional case. Vocational guidance essential at or after fifteen years of age.
- (b) Personality Traits:
 - Careless and slovenly about person and clothes.
 - Hearty eater, and very fond of candy, ice-cream, and cake.
 - Sound sleeper; can be awakened only with difficulty.
 - Not vindictive; readily forgiving and forgetting an offense against him.
 - Easy-going, pleasure-loving, and extremely lazy.
 - Had a strong aversion to study, and craftily devised various ways and means of staying out of school.
 - Inclined to be affectionate, and capable of great enthusiasm and ambition for that which most interested him.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: a native of Russia, came to America shortly after his marriage to a young woman of his own town, who had succeeded in saving some money during many years' service as a domestic. When the savings which had brought the couple across the Atlantic were exhausted a few months after their arrival, the man applied to the Charities for relief.

His relatives, two uncles, who conducted a tailoring establishment in partnership, were interviewed, and they expressed themselves as being willing to employ him, provided he would agree to work and not "loaf on the job."

The man was duly engaged as a presser on clothes, at twelve dollars a week, by his relatives, and very soon the latter called at the office of the Charities, and requested that he be brought to account by some one in authority, and be compelled to behave himself. They accused the man of brutally ill-treating his wife, who was soon to become a mother, and of being "a gambler, a bum, and a loafer."

The man, when taken to task for his misconduct, coolly supplied the information that he was ten years younger than his wife; that he was too handsome and tall for so homely a woman; that he had married her for her money in the first place, so that he could come to America; and she ought to feel quite fortunate that he had been her husband for so long a period. He expressed amazement that he should be expected to work in a "free country," and said that, if he had intended working hard and steadily, he had no reason to leave the old country. Further, he added that it was no one's business how he demeaned himself.

He was threatened with deportation unless he reformed his ways; and as if in answer to the advice given him, attempted within the same week to shoot his employers because they refused to give him more money than he had earned. He was arrested and sentenced to sixty days in jail.

While he was in prison, his son was born. Both mother and child were cared for by the Charities, the man expressing neither interest in, nor desire to see his child. A few days after his discharge, he disappeared, without visiting his wife or seeing his son. Though the Charities made

every effort to locate him, his whereabouts were never discovered.

In the years that followed, neither his wife nor his relatives received a letter from him, or any clue that he was still in the land of the living.

Mother: unattractive in face, and so stunted in growth, that she was barely four feet tall. At first impression, she appeared to be a dwarf.

She was of low mentality, very much in love with her husband, stating that she was quite sure that he loved her, only that some evil spirit was made jealous by that love, and in revenge stole her husband's good and noble soul, substituting instead the wicked soul of a scoundrel. Her hopes that the man would return to her ran high, and she made pitiful attempts to earn and save money, which, she innocently said, would help to keep him devoted to her.

The baby was a source of comfort and happiness to her, and she took in washing, and, later, kept lodgers, so that she might be enabled to keep the child with her. Both of her undertakings for a livelihood were unsuccessful, and she finally worked out as a domestic, on very small wages.

She was known as an incompetent worker, and had difficulty in securing positions, both on account of her small stature and because she insisted upon having the boy with her. For ten years, she worked alternately as housemaid and cook, in families which gave her a poor wage and accommodations for herself and child, in return for service more or less poorly done.

The boy, as he grew older, was left to his own devices on the streets, and she soon found that she was unable to control him. Added to this, her employers objected to the boy, on the ground that he was an evil influence to their own children, besides being a general nuisance to the neighborhood. She lost several positions on the boy's account, and finally, in desperate financial straits, begged the Children's Bureau to assist her in raising the child, to whom she clung with most unselfish and absorbing love.

She was advised to permit the child to enter the Orphanage; but to this she strenuously objected, on the ground that he was, "Thank God, not an orphan," and that her husband, on his return, would never forgive her for not caring for his son herself.

For several more months she had a hard and bitter struggle, on the one hand to secure and hold a position, and on the other, to manage the disobedient and impertinent boy. The latter solved the situation, when he was haled to the Juvenile Court, with several of the leaders of his gang, for some offense, and the Judge committed him to the Children's Bureau, as a minor without proper care.

Confronted with the probability of her idol's ultimate destination to the Reformatory, the mother withdrew her objections, and the boy was finally admitted to the Orphanage. After this, her difficulties considerably decreased, as she readily found employment, and worked steadily, though at smaller wages than domestics of her experience were wont to receive.

Her wants being very few, and the needs of her son met by the institution, she gradually started a bank account, which, as it increased, encouraged her and also increased her belief that her beloved husband would soon return to her.

She remained a meek, timid, patient little bit of a woman, working as best she knew how, which was never very efficiently, and indulging in her day-dreams regarding the husband who had deserted her. She visited her boy frequently, bringing him gifts, and supplying him with spending money in plenty.

There were no relatives or friends of hers in America.

(b) Developmental:

The boy had been a large, healthy baby, weighing nine pounds at birth. The mother had suffered intensely at delivery, and had been quite ill for several months after his birth. She had nursed him herself and claimed that she had given him "the best care" as soon as she was able to leave the hospital.

From her statements, it would appear that she often neglected her duties in the various households which had employed her, in order to give the boy sufficient care and attention.

"I used to take the top off their milk, and hide the finest cuts of meat for him," she remarked triumphantly, "and you should have seen how big and fat I made him."

Physically, at least, the boy had no deprivations during his infancy and early childhood, but his mental and spiritual development was left solely to chance. Without a

doubt, the different mistresses of his mother tolerated him with but poor grace in their homes; and, left to his resources in the streets, he easily absorbed and yielded to the suggestions of older and stronger boys.

His mind, weak, and easily moulded by a stronger will, adapted itself readily enough to the delinquencies and obscenities in the curriculum of the neglected child of the street. The one power which might have exerted any influence over him was his mother; but this poor creature, herself a spineless, self-effacing being, could not even command his respect. He was hardly past his infancy, when he understood that she was quite frequently the object of ridicule and reproof.

As he grew older, he perhaps unconsciously imitated the speech and actions of other people toward her, with the sad result that, in a short time, she was an object of contempt to him. It is questionable whether he realized her devotion to, and sacrifices for him; and it is doubtful whether it would have influenced him in any way, if he had known and understood the extent of her love for him.

He had always been the bone of contention at his mother's positions; consequently the influences of the various homes were hardly favorable to the development of his character, or powerful enough to counteract his natural tendencies.

His childhood had really been without a guiding hand to direct and control him.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Fond of standing in some out-of-the-way corner and ogling the girls.

Interested in all books dealing with baseball. Devoured all baseball scores; and anything and everything pertaining to baseball was received and read with enthusiasm and evident pleasure.

Ready to plan and play a game of baseball at any time.

Very anxious to argue about the game, the players, their successes and defeats, and their private and public lives.

(d) **Home Conditions:**

He had never known a home of his own. The make-shifts that the various homes he had lived in were to him, had not been productive of one wholesome influence or good impulse to check the lawlessness that held him in its grip.

In fact, as his mother had been in the habit of feeding him upon the purloined dainties from the tables of her employers, he early became inured to deceit and fraud.

Often he had been housed in a good home; but the home was not his, and never had it permitted him to receive the hospitality and cordiality of its hearth.

He had always been an encumbrance to the good people who had to endure him for his mother's service, and had been made to feel that he was an unwelcome stranger in the family circle.

(e) Mental Interests:

Baseball — nothing but baseball!

THE TREATMENT

The small ringleader, determined to have him punished for trespassing upon her grounds, pushed, and shoved, and pulled at him, aided and abetted by her tiny companions, till she laboriously succeeded in hauling him into the office, where, with a sigh of relief, she caught her breath, and panted, "This new boy mixed up our ring."

Five small heads indignantly bobbed in unison in support of the complaint, while the leader, her courage reinforced and her breath restored, frowned at the culprit she had in tow, and further explained: "He wants to be lazy Mary, — an' he's too big, so we chased him out — an' he did n't want to go."

"Let him go play with the little boys," advised the assistant ringleader.

The other heads nodded affirmatively.

"We don't want no big boys in our rings," maintained the ringleader independently.

"You hear that, son? Don't you think it would be better for you to play with the boys?" he was asked.

He hung his head in embarrassment, but managed to lisp, "I — I liketh — the girlths better 'n the boyths."

The little girls tossed their heads scornfully. "We don't want him," asserted the small leader.

"Well, in that case, you run along and play ring again, and leave him here," they were advised.

Off they gladly trooped, in triumph, their enemy, very ill at ease, resting his weight on one foot, then on the other, and trying to pull his cap to pieces in his confusion. He had evidently been severely punished before, as his cringing, tense attitude plainly betokened.

In the hour he had been at the institution, he had haunted the supervisors' rooms, had been ordered out of the kitchen by the cook, had intruded upon the Monitors' Congress meeting, and had been advised to go out in the yard and play with the boys. Now he had antagonized the little girls and disturbed their "ring."

"Why do you like girls better than boys?" he was asked.

"Be — coth — be — coth," he stammered, "I dun — no."

"Anything you like better than girls?"

"Yeth, sir, — I — I liketh to play — ball," he replied, eagerly.

"Good, son, good!" he was encouraged. "You just keep away from the girls and play ball instead."

He was taken out to the yard again, introduced to a half-dozen boys of his size, and advised to try his hand at the game. He brightened as he realized that the punishment he had feared was evidently not forthcoming. Whether he would have preferred to have girls for his playmates or not, certain it was that, on that particular afternoon, he was careful to keep within the precincts favored by the boys.

Much against his will, he was taken to school the next day, and placed in the lowest grade. Before the morning session was over, he asked to leave the room upon some pretense, and walked direct to his mother's latest place of employment, a distance of three miles. The poor creature would gladly have shielded and protected him, but her mistress objected, and herself volunteered to bring him back to the institution. So, with his pockets full of pennies that his mother could ill afford, as a bribe, and a relentless and stern mentor as a guide, he was again the penitent in the office.

"I ranth away," he explained, nervously, "be — coth I don'th liketh — school, an' I can'th do what I liketh in this plath."

"Well, I like that!" ejaculated the lady in amazement. "I should like to give him a good shaking."

Instead of a "shaking," he was given a good "talking to," and advised to apply himself at school, so that he might be granted the privilege of participating in the athletic activities taught the boys, and be taken on the hike, in which he had already manifested some interest. The idea of qualifying for the Junior Boy Scout Troop was also politically suggested to him. He appeared impressed, and after promising not to leave without permission again, went out to relieve his feelings with a game of handball with the younger boys.

In the months that followed, it was with great difficulty that the boy was induced to attend to his lessons, and to keep his mind from the small girls and their games. In proportion as they disliked and objected to him, he was the more eager to be in their

midst. The monitor who had him in charge bitterly complained that he was "sissy mad," and was anxious to be permitted to administer a severe beating, to drive the girls from his head.

Such a drastic measure not being resorted to, efforts were made to keep him under constant observation, while it was attempted to counterbalance his desire for girls with his love for ball. He responded so slowly, that it was necessary to keep him occupied, when not at school, in the manual-training shops. Not till he had, with much coaching, encouragement, and enforced industry, succeeded in getting into the Third Grade, when he was able to read understandingly, did a successful solution of his difficulties seem possible.

He had listened and been enthralled with the older boys' talks and apparent knowledge of baseball; and now that he could read himself, he swallowed with avidity every word and sentence he could master concerning the game. The promised reward of a treat to a baseball game was sufficient to drive the thoughts of girls completely from his head. At the game, he was the most enthusiastic fan there; he rooted, shouted himself hoarse, cheered, applauded, jumped up and down in his excitement, and once, in sheer gladness that his favorite player won, forgot whether his escort was to right or left of him, and in the exuberance of his joy, flung his arms about an elderly gentleman beside him and hugged the breath almost out of the surprised and discomfited individual.

It was now smooth sailing with the boy for a while. He was as eager to progress at school as his teachers were anxious to have him go ahead, since every commendable report card meant to him a treat to a baseball game. Through the medium of the game, many of his lazy habits were being gradually overcome. An extremely sound sleeper, he was always the last boy to be awakened in the morning; but during the baseball season, he would be the first to come downstairs, seeking the daily newspaper in the vestibule, from which he gleaned the latest scores.

As he grew older, and reached the Sixth Grade, his passion for the game increased. Now, as he was able to read quite fluently, he made a complete study of the famous star players and their histories from the cradle up, learned the exact total of their salaries per year, and was acquainted with their averages. He knew the names of all the stars in all the leagues in the country, and knew the best points of each. His favorite hero was Babe Ruth, whose praises he sang ceaselessly, and who was indirectly responsible for the bloody nose he gave a boy at school one day, and his subsequent fall from grace.

The boy had dared to take issue with him in reference to the supreme position held by his idol, and had maintained that "Teddy" Roosevelt could have been a better ball-player than Babe Ruth, had he not preferred the presidency of the United States. Further, adding insult to injury, he said that it was of much more importance to be the president of the United States than a ball-player.

The result of such radical views was that a fist fight ensued in the school yard to settle the matter at once. As the champion of Babe Ruth was the stronger and mightier, his adversary would have been compelled to yield his mistaken notions, and all would have been well, had not a badly bruised face and a bleeding nose called the principal's attention to an infringement of her rules. For the protection of all endowed with the fighting spirit, a rule had been passed at the school, strictly prohibiting fighting. Offenders were severely punished.

When a notice came from the principal's office to the combatants requesting their presence in her office, the erstwhile enemies shook hands in commiseration, and took themselves off, not to the office, but each to a different destination. The defeated one went for consolation to his home, and the conqueror, remembering that at the Home an injunction against fighting was also in force, hied himself to his old bulwark for protection — his mother!

He appealed to her to take him back to the Home, and intercede with the Superintendent for him; and the poor creature, greatly flustered and extremely nervous, received an unwilling leave of absence from a frowning mistress, and hastened to her offspring's defense.

The boy followed in the wake of his tiny, deformed parent, and seemed greatly distressed and unhappy. In his halting, lisping fashion, he told of the altercation and fight that had taken place, saying that he had gone to his mother because the other boy had done likewise, and had so advised him. He added that, when he faced his mother, he realized that it was not the wisest thing he might have done, but then he took advantage of the opportunity and asked her to help him get out of his trouble, promising he would never be in trouble again.

Here, intuitively seizing her cue, the mother came to the rescue with an unique excuse.

She started falteringly, but gained courage and strength as she proceeded. "It — it was n't his fault," she stammered.

"Not his fault?" was echoed in surprise.

"Y — yes." She coughed and tried to clear her throat. "His father ran away too, so he has it in him to run — so, please forgive him — because he can't help himself."

The boy however shattered the strength of her argument, by putting in, "I hain't — got ith in me, — to run awath, and I hain't going to run awath — liketh my ffatherth."

He added an earnest petition for pardon, promising to be peaceful and law-abiding in the future, even if Babe Ruth were further attacked by friend or enemy; and peace was restored. Then, as had been agreed, he himself went to the principal, made a clean breast of the occurrence, and offered due apologies and regrets.

He was duly restored to favor; but his admiration and love for his hero and idol continued to grow stronger. Finally, as an outlet for his feelings, he built an enormous baseball diamond of cardboard, and secured nails of various sizes, to each of which he assigned the venerated name of a popular baseball star, the heaviest and strongest nail bearing the magic talisman of "Babe Ruth." These "players" he placed in their respective positions, and with the aid of disc-like squares which he himself made, he executed skillful moves and truly remarkable pitches, which always resulted in increased glory and renown for his favorite.

All now went well at the Home and in school, till he reached the age of puberty.

It was then reported that his former desire to mingle with and molest the girls had returned, and that he seemed strangely interested in the girls' games, frequently neglecting even his beloved ball-playing.

One of the supervisors also complained that the boy was constantly following her. As soon as she left her room, she was visited by his presence, and he seemed to be her very shadow. Turn which way she might, there he was, following her with his eyes, from somewhere. He would sit upon her door-step, and wait for her to leave her room in the morning. He would fabricate numberless reasons for being near her, seeming ecstatically happy when permitted to fetch or carry something for her, and during the rare intervals when, on some pretense, he succeeded in being close to her. When he was able to touch her hand, he appeared transfixed with rapture.

At first the young woman had been amused at such manifestations of puppy love; but as the constant presence and attentions of the boy became very annoying, she tried sharply to discourage them. When she found that neither her reprimands nor her orders were productive of any effect, she brought her complaint to the office.

The boy was interviewed. He sobbed out his regrets that his conduct should have vexed the object of his admiration, but explained that "I liketh her so much, that — I alwath want to be by her."

"Do you like her better than Babe Ruth?" he was asked.

He turned red to the roots of his hair, and stammered, "I liketh her — in — in a differenth way."

"What way?"

He looked discomfited and exceedingly unhappy. After thinking a while, he said, "I — dunno."

"Now, look here, son! What should you say to quit bothering about Miss F——, and give your attention entirely to baseball, when not at school?"

He looked up, but there was no answering gleam in his eye.

"How should you like to play on Babe Ruth's team when you grow up?"

His mouth opened in genuine amazement, and something that was almost fear was manifested in his eyes. "Good — neth!" he breathed.

"Well? — Should you?" he was encouraged.

"You bet!" he ejaculated, all eagerness.

"Then suppose you start working for that goal right away. You know enough about baseball to lead the Home team. Get busy, speak to the larger boys who are good players, have them elect you captain of the new team you 'll organize, send out challenges to other teams, and be a winner. We 'll fix up about the pennants and prizes later."

The boy's face became alive with animation. "Ca — can I — start — this after — noon?" he questioned hopefully.

"Sure thing! Go right ahead!"

He left the office on feet that seemed winged. He flew from one boy to another, and before the close of that day had successfully manipulated matters, in spite of his lisp, so that the "Dauntless Club" was shortly formed. The newly organized team was wildly enthusiastic, and for many weeks the institution was in a hubbub of delirium occasioned by the new baseball paraphernalia, — bats, balls, mits, — which had been demanded and duly received by the ambitious players, enlivened with fresh vim and vigor. The girls rather resented the generous support given to a sport which made their basket-ball appear a tame second, but were comforted by a future independent suffragette, who, hoping to apply the balm of consolation, remarked, "They ain't got our brains, and their captain ain't got our tongue, so we should worry!"

As for the boy, he completely forgot the object of his first love, and devoted himself to practising and playing with his team. He was the pitcher. Now, after school-hours, his loud, shrill tones would ring out in the yard, proclaiming in his own, lisping vernac-

ular that "the batsman made a th'ee base hit!" — "The batter kissth the tomato forth a th'ee plath dinner!" — "Scorth th'ee base!" and so on.

So absorbed was he in the game, that once, when asked at school to name some scientific marvels of the age, he glibly responded, "Babe Ruth, Ty Cobb, and George Sisler!"

After his graduation from school, he was admitted to the City College, and his mother's ambitions were aroused. She came to the office, and timidly suggested that he would make an excellent doctor, and that she was ready to work for the rest of her life to help him get a medical education.

"Aw, who wanth to be a doctor?" exclaimed her son in disgust. "I — 'ather be a basethball player."

"Too bad!" sighed the poor woman in her disappointment. "He 's like his father. He did n't see things straight, and now his son takes after him. What fool would want to be a baseball player instead of a doctor?"

As for the boy, he worked steadily at his school duties, played enthusiastically, and dreamed happy dreams of a future in which Babe Ruth always had some share. When his report card bore an "A" in English, it was suggested to him to form a new department in the Home publication, and become the Sporting Editor.

The proposition was embraced with alacrity, and the following contribution from him graced the next issue:

MILOS BOW BEFORE DAUNTLESS

The Dauntless Club inaugurated its season by defeating the Milo Club 15-3 in a loosely played game. The team had practically the same line-up as before, with a few additions. It was our game from the start. While nothing happened in the initial frame, the Dauntless came back strong in the second inning, netting seven runs and driving B—— from the hill. R——, formerly the Merit's mainstay, then took up the burden, but he could not check the onslaught of our heavy-hitting team. On the other hand, our pitcher was as steady as a clock, and held the Milos at his mercy. Seeing that the game was ours, our team became a bit careless, and in the sixth, when the dust cleared away, the Milo Club had chalked up three tallies.

Our boys played in mid-season form, and all the players showed up well. L——, A——, K——, P—— and B—— were shining lights, covering themselves with glory by their timely bingles. In a fortnight we will cross bats with the Spartans, and we expect a victory over them.

Unfortunately, the anticipated victory did not materialize, and still smarting under the disappointment, he wrote the following arraignment for the next publication of the paper:

Athletics have come to the front in our country and claim the attention of everybody. What the trouble is with some of our boys here, it would be hard to say, as they certainly do not lack spirit and loyalty.

Baseball is our chief sport, and in order to produce a strong team that will be a winner, we need plenty of home spirit. We cannot afford to have only nine candidates try out, and build up a strong team with this material. We want every boy in the Home to try out for the team. If you do not make the team this year, don't forget that the experience gained in trying out will do you good, and you will surely profit from the practice received.

There seem to be some boys who have not the proper spirit. They seem to feel that they are forced to come out and practise and they do it with a sullen air. You've got to wake up, fellows! Do you want the Spartans to beat us again? Don't forget that the Home depends upon you, and you owe your support to all its activities.

Those of you, particularly the girls, who cannot make the team that plays on the field, must lend your aid by hearty cheering. The team on the field cannot win out, unless the CHEERING TEAM does its share.

Come, let us all unite in spirit, and work for the same purpose, that of always bringing the laurels of victory to the Home we dearly love.

There is hope that we will get a new playing outfit and uniforms, but we have to show everybody we deserve it. Uniforms do not make a team, but, if there is good fellowship and good spirit, we will have a better chance of securing it.

When it is time for practice, we would like to see at least twenty candidates take the field.

Quick, fellows, wake up!

In the newspaper, he was interested only in the sporting page; and when it chanced that his favorite team lost a game, he would take the pains to blue-pencil the winning team, and try to prevent any verbal mention of the play or the players involved on both sides.

He was passing through the critical stage of adolescence without further difficulty, and became a normal, serviceable member of the large family in the Home.

To commemorate his greatest victory, "Poetical Doughnuts," the "poet" in the Orphanage, was inspired to write a poem, as follows:

"DETHIMALTH" AT THE BAT

Our Dauntless Nine were struggling on,
But it seemed it was all in vain;
Last inning — and the score 3 to 5 —
Hardly a chance to win the game.

But is there not a ray of hope?
Baker's coming to bat;
But he can't hit a ball with a shutter
Although he's as spry as a rat.

"Give us Dethimalth Benny,
He can surely swat the tomato."
But alas! four men precede him —
He must wait, for his turn comes later.

And then, when Baker wiffed at three,
And Tyley did the same,
Not a man in the whole pavilion could say,
"The Dauntless will win this game."

But then Catcher Pilzer, who followed,
Beat out an infield hit,
And when Forest poked a single to right,
Everyone had a fit.

For here comes Dethimalth Benny,
The champion home-run hitter;
The enemy's outfield is moving far back,
And is n't the pitcher's heart bitter?

Five thousand voices bellowed forth
As he stepped up to the plate;
Ten thousand feet pounded the floor,
As they gazed at Dethimalth the great!

There was a smile of determination
On the face of the stocky youth,
As he swung the heavy war-club
Once used by the mighty Babe Ruth.

But even then, to Dethimalth
This bat was much too light,
For last year he pulled down an apple-bough,
And that bat suited him right.

At last the pitcher wound up,
The ball sped over the rubber;
Now what is Dethimalth going to do?
Dethimalth, Dethimalth, the clubber!

Now reader, don't do an injustice,
Just remain quiet and calm,
Dethimalth will not do the Casey act,
He is not a false alarm.

Hark! The fans are cheering.
 Has Dethimalth murdered the ball?
 Yes, a slashing drive, a home run
 Right o'er the right field wall.

Oh, what yelling, oh, what joy!
 The Dauntless has won the game!
 The fans were mad, not one was sad,
 They were yelling Dethimalth's name.

There was joy all over Shelteringville,
 But the joy was not their own;
 Dethimalth was the happiest man in the world;
 Miss F—— bought him an ice-cream cone.

NOTE. — He had found decimals exceedingly hard to comprehend, and his pronunciation of the word brought him the nickname of "Dethimalth," which stuck like glue to him.

THE RESULT

From Report in the Benevolent Society:

"In October, 1920, it was reported that Benjamin E——, who was in the Second Year City College, was receiving poor rating in his school-work. Dr. D—— was consulted, and he advised that the boy should go to work, if he was wasting his time at school. The following month, acting upon the psychiatrist's advice, the boy left the City College and secured a job in an office. His salary was ten dollars a week. He continued to live at the Home, and turned over most of his earnings to his mother.

"In July, 1921, he was discharged from the institution, and placed in a good boarding home which had been secured for him. His mother had been saving his earnings, and his bank account is now up in the hundreds of dollars."

May 29, 1922.

Dear Friend:

It gives me great pleasure to comply with your request and report to you on Benjamin E——.

He was discharged from the Orphanage July 3, 1921, and was placed in a boarding home — Mrs. M—— of —— St.

The boy has been working steadily, earning twelve dollars a week, and paying his own board of \$7 a week.

His conduct is most satisfactory.

(Signed) L. O. G.,

Executive Secretary, Children's Bureau.

CASE B

FRANK L—, "A SOLDIER OF FORTUNE"

Entered December 4, 1917. Age 13 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Petty pilfering.
- (b) Bunking out for days at a time.
- (c) Street begging. Particularly fond of frequenting the shopping district in very severe weather, and, by ragged attire, and pitiful stories told at length at store entrances and crowded corners, enlisting the sympathy and compassion of passing shoppers. Found women easy victims, and collected a rich harvest of coins from them, till apprehended by the police.
- (d) Leader of a gang, named after him, which specialized on "midnight work" in homes.
- (e) Violent temper tantrums and extreme obstinacy.
- (f) Marked sex-tendencies.
- (g) Vile and obscene language to neighbors. Extremely quarrelsome.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Excessive and repeated truancy.
- (b) Ambitionless, disobedient, and sullen.
- (c) Insulting to teachers, and defiant of their authority.
- (d) Several years' retardation; decided that he was old enough to go to work, and had no use for any schooling.
- (e) Made efforts to influence younger boys in class to join him in bunking out, and on begging expeditions.

3. HOME

- (a) Very troublesome and unmanageable.
- (b) Pilfering at every opportunity, no sympathetic instinct being aroused by extreme poverty or illness of parents.
- (c) Liked the experience of being knocked about from one place to another, and boasted that he was "too smart" to remain any length of time in one place.
- (d) Enjoyed thinking that the younger children were afraid of him.
- (e) Interested only in having his own way.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Hated the neighbors, and resented their interference, which had been the direct cause of the charges preferred against him at the Juvenile Court for begging, stealing, vagrancy, and shooting craps.
- (b) Refractory and defiant to school-attendance and probation officers, and interested only in very old grandmother, who let him have his own way, and to whom he flew for refuge, when in conflict with the authorities.
- (c) Very untruthful and extremely insolent.
- (d) Fond of influencing younger boys and girls to follow him in his misdeeds.
- (e) Juvenile Court Record, containing every possible delinquency imaginable.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Short, squat stature; very dark, hairy skin, and lustreless black eyes.
- (b) Good development and strength; hands having an unusually powerful grip.
- (c) Rather mature features; head irregularly shaped; heavy black brows meeting at the bridge of the nose, and imparting a sinister, sullen expression to the face.
- (d) Teeth neglected and crooked, and face full of blemishes and scars.
- (e) Discolored and broken nails on hands, which were badly scarred and bruised.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:
 - Intelligence: Normal. I. C. 1.01.
 - Character: Poor basic organization. (Begging, stealing, etc.)
 - Health: Essentially normal.
 - Impression: Good case for institutional training, and vocational guidance after fourteen years of age.
- (b) Personality Traits:
 - Restless, obstinate, and independent.
 - Given to sullen silences, or hot outbursts of temper when crossed in his desires.
 - Fond of good food; interested in athletics, and devoted to the "movies."

Untidy in personal habits, and extremely bad table manners, bolting food and gulping down soup or water in loud grunts.

Likes to boast of his exploits, and tells impossible stories of adventure, with himself always shining as the "hero."

Anxious to excite admiration, and entertaining firm belief in his powers and ability to influence others, and also to judge them.

Is greatly amused by quarrels which he instigated.

Shows undue interest in girls.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: of very low type of mentality; was irresponsible, shiftless, and at no time made enough to support himself at his trade of tailoring. Early in 1901, he applied to the Benevolent Society for assistance for his family, which at that time included three children. He claimed that the illnesses of both his wife and himself prevented them from giving the children the necessary attention, and that the entire family was in dire want of the necessities of life.

During the next seven years, while the Charities were supporting the family, which had, in the meantime, increased to the number of eight children, the man became very quarrelsome in the home, seldom worked, and constantly complained of illness.

A medical examination showed that he had a tubercular hip, but was able to work. He used a crutch and complained of pain in walking. He frequently drank to excess, and refused to coöperate in the attempts made for his relief and assistance by the Charities. As the children grew older, and became troublesome and unmanageable, he appealed to the Children's Bureau for sympathy, but stubbornly refused to coöperate or accept any of the suggestions made for the children's welfare.

In 1908, shortly after the birth of the youngest child, the home was broken up, as the illness of his wife compelled her stay at the hospital for a prolonged period. Then the Children's Bureau sent the older children to child-caring institutions. When the woman's health improved, the home was reestablished, but domestic conditions grew worse from year to year in the family. The

man was very abusive to his wife and the children, and quite frequently very cruel.

In 1917, neighbors appealed to the Children's Bureau to place the younger children away from the home. The man at this time was quite willing to be rid of his progeny; but his wife objected, on the score that he would drink himself to death if he were relieved completely from all responsibility. She died during the year.

Three months after her death, he married a woman of some intelligence, who cared for the poverty-stricken home, and also took an interest in the children. However, six months after the marriage, this woman applied to the Charities for assistance, complaining bitterly of her husband's treatment of her and her own seventeen-year-old boy, and requesting monetary aid. Later, she reported that her husband had succeeded in sending her son out of the home, and that she was worried about the boy's welfare. She also stated that he was exceedingly quarrelsome, that his actions were unbearable, his language vile, and that he showed absolutely no interest in his own children, whom he declared he was going "to chase out of the house."

In 1919, this woman, to whom her step-children had become attached, and whose own son had taken to the streets and been sent to a reformatory, died of a tumor. Four months after her death, the man remarried again. His third wife was a cripple and an epileptic, who found it extremely difficult to attend to her household duties.

The man then brought his wife's pitiable condition to the attention of the Children's Bureau, and begged that he be relieved from the responsibility of caring for his children, who were now incorrigible and delinquent and could not be controlled by either him or his wife. He further stated that his income was hardly sufficient to support himself, and pleaded that some assistance be rendered his wife.

He was very happy when his "burdens," as he termed his children, were taken from him, one by one, to private homes and institutions, and calmly continued his career of shiftlessness and pauperism.

He prided himself on a claim — not to be substantiated, however — that his origin had been of the most honorable and intellectual. Investigation revealed that the only relatives who could be traced were an aged mother, sup-

ported for more than a score of years by the Charities, and an impoverished brother, also a tailor by occupation.

The former, greatly affected by the infirmities of age, was relapsing into her second childhood, and was, physically and mentally, a withered relic of humanity. She sympathized with her erratic son, and attributed his failures and mistakes in life to his first wife's influence. The right kind of woman would have made a man of him, lamented the aged creature.

Her favorite grandchild was the boy, the subject of this case, and to him she gave her affection and devotion, with the result that the youngster flew to her on every occasion when there was a penalty to be paid, and an officer of law or order to be evaded. Always she shielded him, lying in his defense, and seeking, in her error, to assist him in having his own way. Frequently she would save the pennies allotted to her for her food, in readiness for her grandson's request for them. She would have harbored him permanently in her room, had not her boarding-home mistress stoutly objected to any such proceeding.

Her second son was of very ordinary intellect, who was having a hard struggle, assisted by his wife, to earn a livelihood. He too had a large family to support; but he, unlike his brother, did not shirk his responsibilities. His children presented no problems to the community and were apparently normal. Their mother was a hard-working, honest woman, who was devoted to them, and sought to give them educational opportunities above her means. She, as well as her husband, concurred in the old grandmother's opinion, that the daughter-in-law had inspired the shortcomings of the man and his children.

Mother: a woman of low mentality, grossly ignorant and improvident, who was notorious, in her neighborhood of poor and slovenly homes, for having the poorest and most unkempt one of all. She had been a poorly paid worker in a factory during her girlhood, and since her marriage had had a bitter struggle for existence, as well as constant ill-treatment and abuse to bear. To the latter she retaliated, in a degree, with quarrels and vile language, which in time she employed as fluently as her husband; but she never made any effort to escape or control the flood of poverty, wretchedness, and misery that encompassed her life.

In a period of eleven years, she bore her husband eight living children, all single pregnancies, and had three miscarriages. She constantly complained of one illness or another, and after the birth of her youngest child, remained at the hospital for more than six months, while her home was broken up and her children scattered in different homes. At all times, she displayed but a mild interest in them, being more anxious to keep them together for the purpose of retaining her hold on their father, than because their fate gave her much concern.

She finally developed cancer of the stomach, and was bedridden for several years before her death. Her known relatives were two sisters of indifferent fortunes, in a neighboring city, who manifested but a passive interest in her and her family. Both of these sisters, when communicated with after her death, pleaded that their own poverty and large families prevented them from taking any interest in their sister's children. Their letters were couched in such illiterate language, that they conveyed the impression that the writers had little intelligence and less wisdom.

Siblings: *Oldest brother*, was eleven years old at the time the home was broken up, and was sent to an institution by the Children's Bureau. The records of that orphanage show that he had been a most difficult child to manage, but that he had improved under proper care. Unfortunately for him, he was taken out of the institution by his parents at the time they reestablished their home. He had but little schooling, and was sent to work before the age of fourteen, his father swearing falsely that he was sixteen at the time.

He had difficulty in keeping a job for any length of time, knew no trade, and was taught none, and finally he began to shift around from one shop or factory to another. Gradually he became a gambler and took to wandering aimlessly to and from the nearby towns. At the time of his mother's death, he was twenty years old, and there was no reliable knowledge concerning him. He manifested no affection or interest in his brothers or sisters, lived on what he could get in ways best known to himself, and spent his nights away from home. His associates were known disreputable persons.

Before two years had passed, he was serving a sentence

at the penitentiary for assault; and after his discharge, went from bad to worse. When last heard from, he was in jail for burglary.

Second brother, had also been placed in a child-caring institution by the Children's Bureau, in 1908, at that time ten years of age; and he also was regarded as a very difficult child.

In view of his "uncontrollable temper and vicious habits," as recorded, it was not deemed advisable to return him to his parents on the reestablishment of their home, and for the following six years he lived the regular routine of institutional life. He reached the Sixth Grade in the public school, and could go no higher.

He was discharged from this Home in 1914, and, almost immediately, was sent to work by his father. In July, 1915, he was accused of stealing, by his employer, and was committed to the Reformatory. While he was there, the school authorities reported that he was very deceitful. He was discharged in December, 1916. A Big Brother, secured for him by the Children's Bureau, placed him in one job after another, and finally, in desperation, managed to get him into his own firm, where he could watch over him himself. The boy did very well here, and the Big Brother, thinking a cure had been effected, sent him to another town, to work for people who had been acquainted with his history, and were willing to give him an opportunity to make a man of himself.

Here he worked for several months, and when his reformation seemed certain, he suddenly disappeared with some money that had been intrusted to him. In December, 1918, he was arrested in another city, charged with larceny and false pretenses. He was brought to his native city, where the crime had been committed during one of his secret visits, and sentenced to one year in the House of Correction.

Since his release from the prison, his whereabouts have been unknown.

Third brother, was sent to the institution by the Children's Bureau, returned to his parents' home after a short stay, and was then sent again to the institution.

He was a normal, well-behaved child, of whom the records speak rather favorably. After his graduation from school, he was sent home, and went to work as an office

boy. He, alone of all the children, seemed to take an interest in his mother, and tried to be of some assistance to her. He gave his wages to her, and tried to help his sister with the housework, when the mother was bedridden.

However, he was unable to endure the home life for any length of time, and went to live elsewhere, occasionally sending money to his mother. After her death, he left the city, and for more than a year nothing was heard from him.

Then he returned, seemingly a victim of the *wanderlust*, which had him in its toils to such an extent that he wandered from place to place, and city to city, without the ability to adjust himself to one particular place or to any one position. He too had no training for any trade or occupation, and at present is wandering "from pillar to post."

Older sister, was six years old when the home was broken up, and was put into a private home by the Children's Bureau, till her parents started housekeeping again.

She was an obstinate, sullen child, very insolent to her parents and insulting to anyone who ventured to reprove her for her conduct, and insisted on having her own way. She did so poorly at school, that she went no further than the Fifth Grade. She hated the housework which devolved upon her, and took care of the home during her mother's illness with poor grace and still poorer ability.

After her mother's death, being at that time fifteen years old, her manners became more ugly and objectionable. She dressed flashily, and associated with boys and girls of questionable character. The Benevolent Society found it necessary to remove her from her home and placed her in a working girls' club. Here she was found unmanageable and extremely audacious, and after two weeks' stay, suddenly disappeared with six dollars which she had stolen from the girl inmates. She was found at the home of a woman bearing an evil reputation, and was committed to a semi-reformatory for girls.

After a month's stay, it was deemed politic, for her brother's sake and her own, to transfer her to the Orphanage for a short period, for observation.

From this institution she was, after a while, sent to a private home, and then, of her own volition, returned to her father's and stepmother's home. She had expressed

a certain fondness for the first stepmother, and deplored her death. For the second one, she entertained contempt and hatred, and was quite happy to grasp any opportunity to instigate and encourage discord in the home.

She had become acquainted with her first stepmother's son when still a child, and as she grew older, the friendship between the two continued during the periods of the boy's wanderings and vagaries. She had been a frequent visitor at the reformatory to which he had been committed, and on his discharge from that institution, he spent all the time possible with her.

He too had neither trade nor occupation, and had a hard struggle for a livelihood, but the boy and the girl fancied themselves in love, and were married, she barely seventeen, and he not quite nineteen. The young people made their home with the father and stepmother.

The result was disastrous. In less than a year, it was reported that the girl had been deserted by her husband, because of a quarrel due to his lack of employment. She herself claimed that she was sorely disappointed in him because he was lazy and shiftless, and could not keep a job. She had previously told the social workers interested in the family that her husband had been good and kind to her, when in reality, it was subsequently learned, he had beaten her and had threatened her life.

As her father refused to be of any assistance to her, she left his home, taking her younger sister with her; and the two are at present boarding with a very good family, which has agreed to supervise the two girls. She is employed at a shop at moderate wages, and the maintenance of her sister is being paid for by the Benevolent Society. The two seem to be attached to each other.

There is no definite knowledge regarding the whereabouts of the girl's husband. Her matrimonial experiences seem to have sobered her, as there has been no complaint concerning her conduct for a rather long period. She expresses a deep love for the deserter, and though she has had no word from him for nearly two years, her faith and belief in his innate goodness have not abated. She cherishes the hope that he will soon return, and then they will live happily ever afterwards.

Fourth brother, had been quite young at the time of his mother's stay at the hospital, and had been cared for by

the Children's Bureau, which had found an excellent private home for him.

Nothing objectionable had been reported of him while in his parent's home, until, in 1914, at that time eleven years of age, his teacher complained of his inattention and listlessness, and stated that in her opinion he should be classed as mentally deficient.

The boy was taken to the Psychiatric Clinic, and Dr. C——, who examined him, reported that he found him two years retarded, but not in need of institutional care. The following year he was reported to the Children's Bureau as being troublesome and unmanageable. On one occasion, it was stated, he remained away from home for an entire week, and on his return, refused to answer any questions concerning his whereabouts, or disclose any of his doings or activities during his absence.

In June, 1917, when he was fourteen, Miss R——, the probation officer, reported that he was responsible for the court records of several boys in his neighborhood. He was said to be the leader of a gang. A few months later, his teacher advised that he be committed to a reformatory. She said that the boy was disobedient, defiant, a truant, and interfered with the work of the other pupils.

At his mother's death soon afterward, he was sent to another home, which reported him as troublesome, and desired to be relieved of his care. He refused to attend school and insisted that he be permitted to go to work. Finally, he took matters into his own hands, and though he had no work permit, secured a position in a leather factory, where his behavior was entirely satisfactory to his employer. His boarding home mother also had no complaint to make regarding his conduct.

In view of this apparent improvement, Dr. D——, the psychiatrist, recommended that the boy be issued a work permit, and be allowed to continue his chosen occupation. After a short time, he insisted upon returning to his father's home; and a few months' later, the boy's father brought the complaint to the Children's Bureau that the boy stayed out late at night, and that he was beyond control.

For the next two years, there were repeated investigations and adjustments made for the boy, who turned from one job to another, quarreled, fought, drank, became addicted to shooting craps and smoking cigarettes, until

he left home one afternoon and completely disappeared. His present whereabouts are unknown.

Youngest sister, was ten years old at the time of the mother's death, and was admitted into a child-caring institution. Here she was disobedient and impudent, and in revenge for the punishment given her for some fault, ran away from the institution to the home of a former neighbor, after only a few weeks' stay.

The woman who had harbored her believed the wild tales of the barbarities and cruelties practised at the institution, and in turn repeated them to any willing ear. The child in this way received much sympathy and attention, and preferred to remain at the home of her friend instead of returning to the institution.

As the woman expressed a desire to keep her, she was permitted to do so, till she changed her mind a few months later, and reported to the Children's Bureau that the girl was too troublesome for her, and had caused much mischief in her home. At this juncture, the child again took matters into her own hands, and returned to her father, who had remarried.

Her school attendance was poor, and she was unwilling to coöperate with her stepmother for the benefit of the home. She had no affection for any one but her sister.

When that sister's misfortunes necessitated a change of home and living, the girl insisted on going with her, and has since been progressing fairly in her school-work, and living normally.

The Benevolent Society is maintaining and supervising her.

Youngest brother, was nine years old at his mother's death, and had already been reported for staying out late at night and being very untruthful. His teacher had complained that his scholarship and deportment were poor. He had been treated for ulcers of the head at the hospital, and had frequent illnesses.

Shortly after his mother's death, he was placed in a child-caring institution. He proceeded to run away several times a week, was returned again and again, finally being discharged and permitted to live with his father and stepmother. The latter soon brought a complaint to the Children's Bureau that the boy was disobedient and unruly, and that, though he attended school regularly, he

remained out nights till eleven or twelve o'clock, sometimes even later.

As complaints concerning the youngster increased and multiplied, and he was brought into court for several misdemeanors, the Children's Bureau sent him to the Orphanage in January, 1919.

Psychiatrist's Report concerning him. Examined January 15, 1919:

Intelligence: Mental capacity 9 years. I. C. .81.

Character: Basis appears essentially normal, but organization inadequate. Various appearances in Juvenile Court for larceny.

Health: Not unusual.

Impression: Good institutional case. Should receive intensive probational care after release.

Though eleven years old, he had not passed the First Grade, and showed no desire for any regular or wholesome routine of life. He objected violently and strenuously to any effort to restrain him in his wrongdoings, which were numerous and varied, to start with, and needed constant watching and tactful treatment.

His brother assisted in his reformation, which occurred slowly and gradually; and rewards offered for regular attendance and good scholarship at school were instrumental in influencing him to more studious habits.

He became interested in the manual-training shops, and was attracted by athletics, which helped materially to infuse a wholesome interest into his life. While his rather deficient intellect prevented him from progressing as rapidly as brighter boys, he still held his own and made his grade during the year.

His last outbreak occurred when several members of his former gang met him on the way from school, and inveigled him into joining them in an attempt at arson. He accepted the tempting offer with alacrity, and the next heard from him was several hours' later, when the office was called up by the Police Department, and the Superintendent requested to call at once at a certain station.

Obedying the hasty summons, the latter discovered that the boy and two of his former companions had stationed themselves at the entrance to a moving-picture house; biding their time, when the door-keeper was busy handling the crowd, and the cashier's attention was diverted,

had deliberately poured kerosene about the cage and ignited it. There was an immediate blaze. The explanation was, that the boys had hoped that the cashier, seeing the fire, would become frightened and abandon the cage, leaving the boys to help themselves to her cash-box. Fortunately, the fire was discovered and quenched before it had made sufficient headway to further the nefarious scheme.

In court the next morning, His Honor committed the two older reprobates to the Reformatory, and was inclined to pass a similar sentence upon the youngest; but the Superintendent prayed for leniency, and upon his personal recognizance to safeguard the community from further depredations, the youngster was given into his custody.

For a long time thereafter, the lad's movements and actions were closely guarded. There followed a period of normal conduct, which continued without a pause.

In September, 1921, it was reported that he was no longer considered a problematic case.

(b) Developmental:

His father, when asked what manner of baby his son had been, looked askance, his brows lifted in amusement at the (to him) senseless query, and replied, with a disdainful shrug of the shoulders, "He's a bad boy now—and if he was a good baby, will that make him good now?"

His contempt notwithstanding, he was pressed for some information regarding his son's infancy: and impatiently muttered, "How can I remember, when there were so many babies all the time?"

Though no facts could be ascertained concerning the first few years of his life, it is definitely known that his early childhood had been grossly neglected, and that he had grown up like a weed.

When not quite five years of age, he had been picked up in the streets by a passing policeman, who, seeing a ragged, filthy little boy, apparently in need of a home, took him to the station house. He was kept there for several days and, as no anxious parent appeared, he was sent to the Children's Society, which kept him for several months. His mother was at the hospital at that time, and the father was entirely satisfied to be relieved from the burden of his care.

Returned to his home, in which the daily routine was obscenity, quarrels, and violent temper tantrums, he too learned to squabble, fight, and swear. Unguarded and unprotected, he took to the city's streets, and finding begging a profitable medium by which the good things he desired could be attained, he took naturally to the ways and manners of the beggar.

Receiving no affection, he gave none in return to any of his family, the members of which were self-centred, and paid small heed to the youngster, who was but another one in the numerous brood. So it was that the proceeds of his begging expeditions were expended solely upon himself and his cronies of the hour.

His older brothers, who, one after the other, sowed evil deeds and reaped harvests of shame and disgrace, had a disastrous influence upon him. He became inured to drunkenness, gambling, pilfering, and other vices, while still but a child; and it seemed quite natural for him to follow in the path his elders had walked before him.

Finding the school not as attractive to him as his street haunts, he deserted the former in favor of the latter. When remonstrated with, he retorted with the language that was indeed his "mother tongue."

Living as he saw his parents live, in filth and human wretchedness; existing as best he knew how, from the results attained by begging and pilfering, he was ready to put his foot forward on his brothers' path, when the Orphanage opened its doors to him.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Liked to be waited upon, and would lean back indolently in his chair, and bully the younger boys to fetch and carry for him.

Hated cleanliness, and made every possible effort, and concocted every imaginable scheme, to avoid soap and water.

Was inclined to be miserly, and to hide, for personal use only, whatever money came into his possession, or that which he thought might offer an appeal to another boy.

Not at all affected by pain or suffering. Could stand calmly by and see tears, or listen to cries, with indifference.

Showed a marked interest in the ways and means by which men have become rich. Very anxious to be a successful business man, when he grew up.

Not at all interested in books, but absorbed in baseball, and desirous of becoming a future great baseball player.

Displayed a keen appreciation of athletics in general, and was very proud of his prowess as a swimmer, of which he boasted constantly.

Was always anxious to please the girls and show that he was "a good fellow."

(d) Home Conditions:

In the Report of the Benevolent Society appears the following note concerning the conditions existing in the home, during the early formative years of the boy's life:

"The home was very poorly kept. At one time, the mother, two of the boys, and the two girls slept in one room, which had no ventilation, and had insufficient beds."

With no personal privacy, and no regard for the decencies of life, it was inevitable that the tragic environment should dull the heart and mind of the boy, and influence him to abide in the sordidness and uncleanness with which he had been surrounded since babyhood.

After the mother's death, the element of merciless cruelty introduced by the father, when he ordered his second wife's young, dependent son from the home, and then followed the same course with his own children, could not but inculcate and encourage the unhappy qualities of meanness and brutality.

His older brothers often brought their corrupt associates to the house, which already, in itself, was sufficiently enveloped with evil, and the boy, at an early age, was introduced to drinking, smoking, and shooting craps. Very frequently, while the father was away at some saloon, the boys would be up to a late hour at night, shaking dice, and laying their plans for their wrongdoings. The boy eagerly watched and listened, and soon they became to him the "heroes" whom he desired to emulate. Not one healthy influence in the darkness and misery that had been his, in his entire short life!

(e) Mental Interests:

Shooting craps.

Playing baseball.

Speculating on the best business methods for money-making.

THE TREATMENT

By dint of much coaxing, persuasion, and promises, the worker succeeded in inducing the grandmother, with whom the boy had taken refuge, to advise him to give the Orphanage a trial. Very unwillingly went the boy, informing his cautious escort, who had her arm linked through his, that she "need n't think I'm gwant'er stick there, if I don't like that guy, 'cause I ain't."

"But you *are* going to like him," persuasively promised the worker, strengthening her hold.

"Aw, yer said the same thing about that other guy," retorted the youngster, tugging at her arm, "and I did n't like him."

"This one is different — you will like him," desperately prophesied the undaunted escort.

"If I don't, yer ken't catch me one minute there; wait yer see!" he threatened.

As he had absconded from the child-caring institution in which he had been placed previously, after only two hours' stay, and could not then be located for more than two weeks, it was no idle threat he made.

"You just wait and see how you'll like the place and everybody there," suggested the worker gently.

But he had his own thoughts on the subject, and was not to be influenced; he just awaited a favorable opportunity for action, and it came as they turned the corner. As the worker, thinking that her promises and assurances were having the desired effect, relaxed her determined hold for a second, he tore his arm from hers, and disappeared before her very eyes. The rest of the day was spent in a fruitless effort to locate him, and also the whole of the next day.

Finally, the worker, confronted by the Probation Officer, who had been entrusted with the ruling of the Court that the boy be given proper disposition by the Children's Bureau, or be sent to the Reformatory, begged for a further extension of time in which to locate her slippery charge. Then she flew in desperation to the head of the Big Brother League, and implored his aid in the matter.

This gentleman had had frequent interviews with the boy, and had stated that the youngster had excellent qualities, which, though held in abeyance at present, might, under proper influences, be developed for his ultimate salvation. He had been instrumental in prevailing upon the Bureau to give the boy a trial at the Orphanage, and now he readily agreed to assist in the search.

After two more days spent in hunting the known favorite haunts of the boy, he was at last located at his grandmother's home, where, weary and exhausted, he had just come for refreshment and recuperation. He greeted his friend, the Big Brother leader, surlily, and informed him of his intention not to go to the Orphanage.

The other spent a half-hour in argument and appeal, and at the end of the hour, presented himself at the office of the Orphanage, very ill at ease, despite his usual poise and the dignity of his years, and seemed unable to give expression to the special business that had evidently brought him at that particular hour.

He had diplomatically made an attempt to come to the root of the matter troubling his mind, but finding that tact could not cover a request that must be tactless, brought out with some difficulty: "That rascal refuses to come here, until the Superintendent has come to his home and permitted himself to be sized up and judged. If you impress him favorably, he'll go with you. Otherwise, he won't. Will you come?"

"Yes," was the answer.

It was important to make the visit quite early in the morning, as the boy was accustomed to leave the house right after his breakfast, and was gone for the rest of the day, and perhaps for the night. Escorted by the Big Brother guide, it was not quite seven o'clock in the morning, when the Superintendent knocked at the door of the very poor dwelling in which the grandmother had her home. The poor old woman, disheveled and unkempt, was hobbling about the small room and laboriously serving her grandson with rolls and milk, while he, already fully dressed in his rags, was impatiently tapping the table with his fist.

The woman, abashed and embarrassed at sight of her early visitors, courtesied and apologized profusely, while her grandson, non-committal, stared suspiciously from one to the other of the unwelcome guests.

"That's the guy?" he questioned, his thick, square forefinger pointing to the person whom he was "sizing up" with keen, shrewd eyes.

"This is the guy, all right; what do you think of him?" inquired the "guy" in question.

He was evidently reserving his opinion for a later moment. "Yer know I'm a bad 'un?" he demanded.

"Well? What of that?"

"Donchu care?" in very great surprise.

"Why should I? It's not the measles; nobody can catch it from you," he was informed, quite cheerfully.

"What fer do yer want me to come to yer place?" he asked, his brows knit in suspicion and distrust.

"Did n't specially ask for you at all. It's simply my business to take boys who are sent to the Home."

"U-u-u-um!" He was thinking. "Do yer beat boys?" he queried, suddenly.

"No! I like them too well to beat them."

"Why do yer like 'em?" with a supercilious glance from his steady, black eyes.

"Because I was a boy once myself, and remember how a boy feels."

"Aw," very eagerly, he burst out, "was yer a bad 'un too?"

His grimness relaxed a bit in the laugh his question called forth; but he was persistent. "Was yer too a bad boy?" He insisted upon an answer.

"Don't suppose I was altogether an angel. Boys usually are n't, you know," he was told.

"Aw right!" he responded irrelevantly, "Guess I'll go with yer, and try it out."

He went, and on the way, he agreed to bind himself by a promise that, for a whole week, he would make no attempt to run away in case he "did n't like it," but would instead bear himself peacefully and patiently for that length of time, and then step into the office and state his intentions. If he did like the place, he was to remain indefinitely; if not, he was to be permitted to return to his grandmother.

The first few days were very trying to him. He was restless, ill at ease, and walked to and fro in the yard, like a caged animal; but he kept his word and made no attempt to escape. He became immediately interested in the Scout and athletic activities, and hearing that there was to be a baseball meet, asked permission to be allowed to take part. "I'm some ball-player, I am, believe me," he remarked. "Yer just watch me give it to 'em."

The boys, delighted with a possible asset for their team, welcomed him with open arms, and when they witnessed his really excellent batting, hailed him as a prize beyond price. Their adulation pleased him immensely, and he became interested at once in their games and projects. The Scouts, their uniforms, activities, hikes, and good times, were so enticing to him that, before the week was up, he strode into the office and announced, "I want ter be a Scout, so I'll stay here fer good."

"Likely to change your mind if things don't suit you as well as you think they will?"

"Yes," very frankly and laconically.

"Very well. But do you promise that you will first step into the office and say you are ready to leave?"

His mouth closed in a grim line. Such an intention had not been in his mind, when he stated his decision, and the idea of not being a free agent did not quite appeal to him. He stood silent, his brows meeting in a heavy frown from the perplexity of his confused thoughts.

"Will you promise not to leave the Home without permission?"

The insistent query further disquieted him. "Lemme think it over couple of days and tell yer?" he asked.

"Of course; take your time! Think it over carefully, because once you make the promise, it's for good, you know."

He nodded his head, and without another word, walked out of the office, apparently absorbed in deep thought. Now and then, during the rest of that day, he was to be observed sitting unusually inactive and engrossed, as if some weighty problem was burdening his mind and rendering his body lethargic.

Though not a Scout, special permission was accorded him the next day to join in a long anticipated Scout Rally; and it was suggested to him to go into training for the baseball meet shortly to be held between the Home's baseball team and that of a nearby school. He was delighted to participate in the first, and eagerly grasped at the opportunity to take part in the second. He had been tentatively admitted to school, in a very low grade, and nothing was said to him about school-work or the desirability of entering any of the vocational classes in the Home. He was simply under constant supervision, and in view of his interest in things athletic, stress was laid upon the sports, games, and Scout activities open to the boys of the Home.

In his borrowed baseball togs, streaming with perspiration, and panting from his exertion in practising for the coming game, he came into the office punctually at the time designated, and stated:

"If yer likes me, guess I like yer."

"That means that you have decided to stay here for good, and will not leave without permission?" he was asked.

"Sure thing," he responded, and nonchalantly walked out of the office.

School-work was now seriously broached to him. He preferred to qualify himself for the Scout tests, which he desired to pass as speedily as possible. He was given very firmly to understand that, as his school-work progressed, so would his athletic activities be encouraged. With very poor grace he permitted himself to be

influenced to regular school attendance, and would work off his spleen in the late afternoons by playing baseball in the yard, or attending the manual-training classes, in which he manifested a keen interest.

At the end of six months, he had become assimilated to the routine of work and play in the institution, and was improving rapidly at school. He had gotten into many scrapes and difficulties with his supervisors and teachers, but none of them were more serious than to merit a stern reproof at the office and the deprivation of some anticipated pleasure. He would sulk and vengefully mutter indistinct sentences under his breath; but always he apologized and was ready to make friendly overtures.

One evening, he marched into the office sullenly, an open letter in his hand, his brows knit and his lips puckered. "I got this here thing this morning," he began, his thumb tapping the paper in his hand, "an' I got to speak to you about her."

His six months' schooling had changed his "yer" to "you."

"Go right ahead!" he was encouraged.

"She writes me that from the Reformatory, where they sent her," he clenched his fist as he spoke, "and she don't like it there. I want her to come here."

Having made his astounding request, he sat down on the nearest chair, without invitation, to await further developments.

"First, who is the 'she'?"

"My sister," he replied shortly.

The case was immediately recalled as one which the Children's Bureau had deemed best suited to the Reformatory, by reason of its many delinquencies, and the fact that the girl was past sixteen years of age.

"Why do you want her here?"

"Because she don't like it in the Reformatory," he replied coolly, "and I don't think it is a nice place for a girl."

"Is it a nice place for a boy?"

He blushed, and stammered, "S'pose not — but it's worser for girls."

"How do you know?"

"Well," he hesitated a moment, and then continued quickly, "'cause it did n't do none of my brothers good, an' it's not goin' to do her no good — an' it's a whole lot worser for girls to be bad than boys — 'cause, well, you see, girls can't be no hoboes like boys. They got to have a home."

To strengthen his argument, he submitted, as proof, the pitiful letter of the girl, which appealed to him to arrange matters with

the old grandmother so that the writer might have a place to run away to from the Reformatory. "You know I could n't run away like J——, A——, B——, and S——, 'cause I'm a girl, and I'll be caught quick; but I got to have a home pretty quick, or I'll do something terrible," ended the note.

He was promised that the matter would receive consideration, and nodding his head in satisfaction, he remarked, "Guess this is a better home for her than that old woman's, ain't it?" and passed out, contented that he had performed his self-imposed mission.

The letter and its writer were duly discussed at the next meeting of the Children's Bureau; and after investigation had ascertained the fact that the girl was very unhappy, it was decided to permit her to stay at the Orphanage temporarily, till a suitable private home should be secured for her.

The boy was delighted with the success of his manœuvre, and showed his appreciation by appearing in the office the day after his sister had arrived at the Orphanage, and announcing, "Guess I'm all right now, and I'm going to be better. I'm going to make my sister behave herself, and I guess I can help you out with one of them new bad eggs too."

His offer was remembered some time later, when his youngest brother, quite a serious "problem," was admitted to the institution, and was put in charge of the older brother, who was now a full-fledged monitor, and had rendered service more than once with some incorrigible little tacker. The boy had been quite anxious to get his little brother, who had managed to get quite a big Juvenile Court record, into the Orphanage, and had promised to guide and guard him.

He felt the responsibility of curbing the smaller boy's delinquencies, which were many and varied. Frequently, he would come into the office, dragging his brother after him, and appeal for assistance and advice in controlling him. "It's no use," he would state desperately, "he's in bad, and I can't do nothing with him."

The task sobered him, and his efforts for the welfare of the youngster had an excellent tonic effect upon him. It had been suggested to him that being an example for his brother to follow might induce the younger boy to reform his ways, and he tried desperately hard to make his conduct beyond reproach. As he became accustomed to regular school attendance, he learned to apply himself to his studies, and made rapid progress. He averaged two grades a year, and attained the higher grades in less than two years.

The manual-training teacher found him an apt pupil, and encouraged him to become his assistant in teaching the younger boys; he also became a Scout and was the "bat" of the baseball team. As his small brother gradually improved, he appeared happier and more contented, and his own expression, "Guess I'm all right now!" might well have been applied to him. He was deemed a most hopeful and promising case, when oncoming puberty played havoc with his hitherto harmless and inane liking for girls, and his career of rectitude received a sudden setback that was nearly fatal.

A complaint was brought to the office by one of the girls' supervisors who stated that for several nights she had distinctly seen a slight figure hovering in the doorway between the girls' dormitories, about the time that the older boys retired for the night. Always at her approach the figure noiselessly disappeared, and she had no inkling as to who or what it might be.

Supervisors were immediately installed in the dormitories for the night, and the night watchman requested to be on the lookout. The figure did not return then, according to report; but the watchman came one morning with a story to the effect that he had heard the light patter of footsteps in the girls' dormitories at a late hour, and upon investigation, discovered a white-clad object moving cautiously about. At sight of him, the intruder silently flew out of the door at the other end of the room, and ran nimbly up the stairs to the next floor, where the boys' dormitories were located. He stated that he had without hesitation run after the apparition, but that it had disappeared like a wraith, and must have been, according to his light, which was that of several centuries past, the ghost of a departed ancestor coming to visit a bereaved orphan.

The watchman's conception of the visitation not being accepted, the guard was tripled the following night, but no apparition rewarded the vigil. The next night, one of the watchers claimed to have seen a shadow moving down the banisters, which, at a stir from her, immediately vanished upstairs. Not one of the girls in either dormitory had any knowledge of the intrusion, and all were unaware of the watchers in their midst, every precaution being taken to keep such knowledge from them. At the end of a week's ceaseless vigilance, the culprit walked right into the Matron's arms, the Superintendent was summoned, and, late though the hour was, a lengthy conference followed.

The boy sobbed out a contrite confession, that he had prowled about in the dormitories in the hope that some girl might be willing

to accept his advances. He could offer no explanation beyond stating that he could n't help it, and was very sorry.

He had attended the special small gatherings of the older boys, weekly, in the office, when lectures were given on sex-hygiene; but now that knowledge was supplemented by very clear and frank information regarding sexual matters. The lack of decency and morality in his conduct was forcefully presented to him. He was heartbroken, and pleaded to be given another chance in the institution, appalled at the chastisement to which his contemplated act entitled him. During the interview, efforts were made for the first time to show him how his brothers' iniquities had ruined their lives, and how much greater than theirs were his advantages, and opportunities to lead a worthy and respected life. He finally left the office, terror-stricken, crestfallen, and imploring "Just one more chance; please, just one chance!"

Ordinarily, a boy guilty of such a misdemeanor would be considered a menace to an institution, and be sent at once to a reformatory, to which some of the Board members felt that he should be consigned summarily; but in view of the chaos such a procedure would undoubtedly cause in the boy's awakening soul, the matter was carefully weighed and considered. It was recognized that he had reached a critical juncture in his development, and that his welfare depended chiefly upon the action to be taken.

It was finally agreed to give him the chance he implored. He was called into the office and given an insight into the risk taken with him, and all that his subsequent conduct meant to those so intensely interested in him, that they were prepared to do battle for his sake. He listened attentively, and pressing the hand extended to him, said earnestly, "I swear by my life that I will never in my life forget this. I swear that you will never *never*, be sorry for this chance."

As he was leaving, he turned for a moment, and said in a broken tone, "I wish somebody had given my brothers a chance too"; then he left, sobbing bitterly.

After several months had passed, no regrets were entertained, even by those who had thundered against his continued presence in the Orphanage, for the chance — or, better, risk — that had been taken with him. It seemed that he had passed the turning-point, or, perhaps, crisis, of his adolescent life, and he became sober, industrious, and ambitious. He decided to learn printing, with the view of adopting it as his future vocation in life.

He was now in the Eighth Grade at school, and having made every effort to qualify, became the monitor of a younger group of

boys, to whom he painstakingly performed his duty. He was interested in the children's activities, and conscientiously tried to make "his boys" the best behaved and cleanest group in the Home.

In return, the small youngsters admired and loved him, and the older boys regarded him as a most worthy member of their large family.

THE RESULT

From the Benevolent Society's Records:

"In 1920, Frank L—— completed the Eighth Grade and went to work. He is the first and only one of his family to be a school graduate, and is reported as doing very well and giving satisfaction to his employers.

"He was discharged from the Home, where he had been kept till he had qualified at his work as a printer, in July, 1921, and has been placed in a private home."

From letter dated May 29, 1922:

"I am very glad to comply with your request to give you a report of Frank L——. The boy was discharged from the Orphanage July, 1921, and placed in a boarding home. We received splendid reports of him; he has had but one job and is still employed at the printing establishment of H—— G——. He comes home at an early hour, and conducts himself very satisfactorily.

Yours very sincerely,

L. O. G.,

Executive Secretary, Children's Bureau."

CASE C

ISIDORE S——, "A KNIGHT OF THE STREETS"

Entered December 5, 1918. Age 9 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Afflicted with *Wanderlust* to the *nth* power. Bunking out for weeks at a time.
- (b) Chronic truancy.
- (c) Selling newspapers without a license.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Very bright, yet three years in the First Grade.
- (b) Constant truant; "hooked" school four days out of five.
- (c) Not interested in any study.
- (d) Very disorderly and disobedient; inciting schoolmates to disorder and rebellion.

3. HOME

- (a) Petty pilfering only when completely "broke."
- (b) Disobedient and unmanageable.
- (c) Very seldom remained at home for more than two days in succession.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Refused to recognize any authority.
- (b) Would steal from fruit-stands and lunch-rooms when hungry.
- (c) Prided himself on "belonging to a gang," but was not known to engage in any juvenile delinquencies.
- (d) Started his wandering at the age of five, and was frequently picked up in the streets by policemen and taken to the police station, where he was kept till called for by his mother. Passed a good part of his very early childhood in police stations.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Attractive, blond child; in appearance no older than seven years.
- (b) Very frail and thin. Ten pounds underweight.
- (c) Curly hair in tiny ringlets over his small round head.

- (d) Skin of face and hands cut and torn, and body bruised with black-and-blue marks.
- (e) Many teeth missing and others badly decayed.
- (f) Hands scarred, and covered with many bruises; nails broken. Enuresis.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — following report in the Children's Bureau:
"Referred, 9-9-18, at the age of nine, with the complaint of truancy.

"Diagnosis: Bright boy, with no interests, disgusted with his circumstances.

"Social adjustment poor.

"Binet-Simon, 9 plus.

"Later examination, October, 1918, Dr. D—— reported as follows:

"'The boy is mentally above normal, almost to the point of precocity. He may develop definite delinquent tendencies. Strongly recommend immediate institutional care.'"

- (b) Personality Traits:

Extremely careless and slovenly in attire and habits.

Very poor eater, and very fussy about food. Would rather go without eating than eat anything he did not like.

Extremely obstinate, and determined to have his own way.

Very poor sleeper. Often troubled with insomnia.

Frequent nervous jerks and movements of hands or feet when angry or excited.

Very impulsive; able to change from a frown to a smile, or *vice versa*, without a moment's notice.

Warm-hearted, but displaying no inclination for affection.

3. SOCIAL

- (a) Heredity:

Parentage unknown.

- (b) Developmental:

The wife of a small shop-keeper, who for years had bewailed her childless lot to friends and neighbors, imagined she heard the crying of a baby at her door, in the dead of night, and rose to investigate.

It was some time in February, a bitterly cold night. On opening her door, the woman nearly fell over a small

clothes-basket, in which lay a tiny baby, crying lustily. It was a male infant, but a few days old, and was wrapped in blankets. There were no means of identification, but the woman neither wanted nor sought any. She and her husband legally adopted the child, and the woman gave to him all a mother's care and devotion. He was a strong, sturdy baby, and had few ailments during infancy.

The boy was three years old when his foster-father died, and, two years later, his foster-mother married again. Her second husband was a widower who had five children by his first wife.

The man was elderly, asthmatic, and unable to work. His three daughters supported the family, and the two younger boys were both cardiac cases and had been wards of a child-caring institution for several years after their mother's death. Both of them had been diagnosed as high-grade morons. From the first, the father resented the addition of the boy to his family, claiming that, as he was a foundling, he was state property.

The mother's enmity was aroused by his stand, and while she redoubled her affection and devotion to the boy, hoping to atone for the stepfather's neglect, discord and unhappiness became the tenants of the home. It was at this period that the boy, leaving the house in a fit of childish rage over some reprimand that had been given him by the man, wandered away and stayed out all night. He was picked up by the police and found in a station house the next day by the frantic mother.

His experience evidently opened hitherto undiscovered delights to him, as his wanderings began right after that occurrence, and he now regularly disappeared several times a week from his home. His mother had started him in the kindergarten, but he absolutely refused to attend, preferring, extremely young as he was, to wander through the streets. The poor woman was sorely tried, on the one hand by the refractory child, and on the other by an indignant husband, who objected to the child's presence in his house. To add to her woes, the illness which had been troubling her for some time had been diagnosed by several physicians as incipient tuberculosis.

Believing that she was on the verge of death, the poor creature hastened to the Children's Bureau to arrange for the boy's welfare. In view of the fact that the child was a

problem at home, it was suggested to her to place him in a child-caring institution. To this she reluctantly consented, several months later, when her efforts to adjust matters for herself had totally failed.

In October, 1915, at the age of six, the boy was admitted to the institution; but his wanderings continued without any abatement. At the end of a year, the Superintendent, claiming that he had exhausted all his resources for the boy's improvement, without effect, prayed that the youngster be sent to a reformatory. But in view of the extreme youth of the small culprit, he was sent to a boarding home instead.

He wandered away constantly from this home also, and was then placed in a semi-disciplinary school, from which he continued his wanderings, disappearing for weeks at a time. He then appealed to his mother to take him from the institution, promising to reform his customs and ways. The good woman eagerly grasped at the possibility of his reformation, and secured his discharge. In a short time, his wandering spirit again asserted itself, and he alternately appeared at and disappeared from home.

Shortly before his presumptive ninth birthday, he was picked up in the streets, at midnight, by a benevolent gentleman of substantial means, whose pity he aroused by a very sad "hard-luck" story. Impressed with the appearance of the boy and by the unfortunate adventures related to him, the would-be benefactor took the lad to his home and cared for him for several weeks. At the end of that time, having grown attached to the youngster, he decided to adopt him legally, and applied to the Child Labor Bureau for advice in the matter. It was suggested to him to seek information in the Juvenile Court, where a record of the boy was on file. In the Court, the gentleman was informed that the boy had a home, to which he must return.

Later, on the advice of the psychiatrist who had examined him, the boy was admitted into the Orphanage.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Very fond of the "movies," and frequently would be found in his favorite moving-picture houses. Was able to describe at length almost every important feature in the lives and careers of the movie stars he most admired. Was also greatly interested in the newspaper columns dealing

with the movie heroes and heroines, and frequently wrote to the dailies, asking questions concerning them.

Very loving to animals. Would care for them most tenderly; but when the *Wanderlust* urge attacked him, he deserted them, without care or thought for their well-being.

Seemed extremely unhappy when reproached for wrongdoing, and would permit himself neither rest nor consolation till sure of a full pardon. Then would quite cheerfully resume his life at the point where he had left it, and placidly continue his existence, till the next outbreak.

Displayed but a passive interest in boys' games and pursuits, but was very eager to hear, not read for himself, stories of adventure and the outdoors.

(d) Home Conditions:

The home which had cradled his infancy had undoubtedly surrounded him with the love and care of devoted parents. In the home of the mother's second marriage, he confronted troublous times, it is true, but never was the affection and devotion of the woman, who had reared him, withdrawn from him.

While the home was very modest in its appointments, the neighborhood, though poor, was good and honest, and actual want never existed in it. At sundry times, the Charities assisted the family with medical care and attention, and also provided some of the necessities prescribed for the tubercular mother; but the boy's needs had always been carefully supplied.

He either could not or would not encourage a friendly attitude toward his mother's stepchildren, and found none of the average boy's interests and pleasures in the home.

In the institutions to which he had been sent, he was unable or unwilling to adapt himself, and was not a whit influenced either by the large or small home. He determinedly followed the bent of his mind, wherever he was placed.

(e) Mental Interests:

None.

THE TREATMENT

The mother herself brought the boy to the Orphanage. Trailing after him, her hands loaded with various packages of different sizes containing anything and everything, from candy to a toy menagerie, she deposited her bundles with marked relief on a chair, and

breathed heavily as if exhausted. She was small, very frail in appearance, and coughed incessantly. Her clothes were neat, but of very poor material and extremely threadbare. In marked contrast appeared the boy, who, though very thin, was bright-eyed, eager, and evidently very much alive. He was dressed in a "Buster Brown" velvet suit, its spotlessness loudly proclaiming its newness, and both his arms and hands were employed in holding onto an immense ball and a huge bag of marbles, and at the same time propelling a wooden horse on wheels.

"Them 's all my things; nobody 's gwan to get 'em," he announced by way of greeting.

"Issy, darling!" admonished the woman warningly, her pale cheeks flushing painfully. Then she turned quickly from him, clasped her hands in sheer nervousness, and pleaded: "Please be good to him and excuse him this time. He 's only a little boy and not old enough to have much sense yet."

The boy lifted his head immediately from his calm contemplation of his many possessions, scowled angrily at her, and proclaimed, "That 's a big lie! I 'm a big boy an' I have too got sense, and don't cher go an' tell 'im I ain't."

The woman looked distressed and unhappy. "I said that because you were a bad boy — sometimes — you know, darling," she faltered, in an evident attempt to pacify him. "If you 'll be a good boy," she continued, caressing his curly head with her pitifully thin fingers, "and be a good little gentleman and not run away any more, I 'll bring you anything you want."

"Aw right!" promptly responded the youngster. "I want a watch an' chain." Then, as an afterthought, he added, hastily, "Not tin — I want 'em gold — When yuh gwan ter bring 'em?"

"Watches and chains are not used to bribe boys here to be good. They stay here of their own free will and behave themselves because they find out that it 's lots more fun to do good things than bad ones," both of them were informed.

"Guess they must be big fools," retorted the small lad, wrinkling up his nose in contempt of the "fools."

"O Issy, darling!" cried the mother, aghast at his audacity. "He does n't mean anything like that — honest, he does n't know how to say what he means," she timidly ventured in extenuation.

"I do too," stoutly maintained the boy.

The woman put her finger to her lips in warning. "Sh—h—h!" she pleaded, visibly trembling in her distress.

He tossed his head, not at all daunted. He looked fearlessly and expectantly at the Superintendent, as if challenging an anticipated

reproof. As none was forthcoming, he seemed rather amazed at the silence which confronted him, and finally gave voice to his surprise.

"Mister, ain't yuh 'fraid of bad boys?" he queried.

"Not one bit, son!"

His lips opened slightly. "What 's yuh doin' to 'em?" he queried, more in curiosity than fear.

"You 'll soon see for yourself."

"Chee! I ain't 'fraid," he asserted indifferently, heedless of the "Issy darling!" that was uttered several times in warning.

His supervisor was then summoned, and without further comment to him, he was turned over to his new guardian. Without reluctance, he prepared to follow his guide, collecting most deliberately as many of his treasures as he could carry, and motioning with his head toward the chair where his mother had deposited her packages, said quite naturally to his escort, "Yuh can take them things for me."

"You may have those things later yourself, when you come to the office," he was informed.

He looked up suspiciously, seemed to be thinking, and then responded, "Aw right, mister." Turning to the woman, he murmured coolly, "Good-bye, mom!"

The mother rose and clasped him and his bundles close to her heart. As he wriggled out of her embrace, she fumbled in her shabby purse, and extracting several coins, silently held them out to him.

"Put 'em in me pocket," advised the boy laconically, his hands being too full for even such an addition to his possessions.

She did as requested, kissed him passionately, and pleaded gently, "Darling, please be good! Be a good boy and don't run away from here! They 'll be good to you."

He vouchsafed no reply to her entreaties, accepted her embraces with a marked air of boredom, and passively permitted himself to be led away by his supervisor, without further notice of the woman, whose eyes followed him till the door had closed after him. Then she gave way to her grief and sobbed bitterly.

"He is all I have in the world," she moaned. "If his father had lived, he would never have taken to the streets in the first place. This man don't care for him — so what could the poor baby do, but run away? Believe me, it 's not his fault, because his heart is good and kind — I know him well! — You 'll soon see what a fine boy he is."

She waited a moment in suspense, as if fearing a denial; but finding instead that her opinion concerning the youngster was not

gainsaid, she opened her heart and gave her confidences freely. It seemed as if she were trying to relieve herself from the burdens that weighed upon her soul.

Finally, from the bosom of her gown, she carefully drew forth a fifty-dollar Liberty bond, and held it out, saying huskily, "For him."

"Presented to him by friends?"

She shook her head sadly and negatively, her eyes full of tears. "I am the only friend he has," she said, quietly.

As it was known that, during the past year, the Consumptives' Aid Organization had been assisting her, the appearance of the bond naturally prompted the question, "What sacrifice did you make to procure the bond for him?"

"Well," — she hesitated, and then bravely continued, — "you see how it is — I am going to die soon anyway." Here followed a violent paroxysm of coughing. "And I got to provide for him. My husband is awfully poor; I can't hide a penny from the house expenses. So — please don't say anything to the Society — promise me you won't!"

The promise given, she continued: "You know the doctors want me to have lots of milk and eggs, and the Society gives me money for that — so, I did n't buy the food, but bought the bond for the boy instead."

She seemed amazed that her action was condemned instead of commended, as she evidently had expected. "But I am his mother," she insisted; "Who will provide for his education and his future, if I don't?"

She was assured that the Orphanage would give to the boy every possible advantage and opportunity, and that he would not lack friends. A verbal understanding was made that the bond should be kept for the boy, only on condition that in the future she appropriated the funds sent her for her own sustenance and benefit. But at the last moment she sought to palliate the terms of the agreement.

"But it's a waste of the money," she pleaded in defense of her project; "the doctor told me that I could n't live longer than six months at the most."

"Possibly he'll change his mind if you'll follow his instructions and use the money in taking care of yourself," was the suggestion made to her.

But she shook her head sadly and slowly brushed the tears from her eyes. "I can't help it; I must think of him before myself," she said. "He is just starting his life, and I am finished."

However, before she left, she had made a definite promise to expend the money, sent her weekly by the organization interested in her welfare, for the purposes intended, and seemed more at ease regarding the boy.

Later, the boy presented himself at the office to claim his possessions and renew the acquaintance made earlier.

His attitude was quite friendly, and he smiled as he entered. "Yuh know, I like this place," he confided.

"Why?"

"Oh, 'cause there 's lots of boys and they got lots of fun; but I like yer dog best of all," he stated frankly.

"How should you like to have a dog of your own here?"

"Oh, chee! kin I?" He jumped in the air in excited delight.

"Yes, if you have good reports from your supervisor and from school for two weeks," he was told.

His expression changed most lugubriously at once. He raised his hand as if to ward off a blow.

"But I hate school," he vehemently declared.

"Why?"

"'Cause I don't like it," was the very definite answer.

"What do you like?"

"Oh, lots of things!" in very evident surprise.

"What, for instance?"

"Peanuts, an' taffy, an' the circus, an' movies, an' live bunnies, an' pigeons, an' a little dog, an' —."

"Suppose you get all that," was put in, as he paused for breath, "would you go to school every day and behave yourself, like a regular fellow?"

He was quite clearly in a quandary. On one hand, beckoned the tempting acquisitions he desired; on the other, frowned his pet detestation, the school. He hesitated for several moments, and was struck by the brilliant idea of compromise.

"I 'll be good if yuh want me to, right here in the house," he offered.

"That 's not enough! If you are going to be a regular fellow and a good sport, you are going to school, too."

He looked up pleadingly, his large blue eyes bright with tears. "Just lemme stay here and not bother about school," he begged.

"Can't do that; you know if we keep you out of school, we 're liable to be arrested."

"Oh, that 'll be all right," he cried eagerly, "I 'll get yuh out — I 'll tell 'em it 's my fault."

"It 's nice of you to want to take the blame; but since it won't

be very nice to let a little fellow be punished because a big one did n't do his duty, you simply must make up your mind to be a good sport and go to school."

His dismay and alarm were most ludicrously expressed by the heavy frowns and contortions of his bright little face. He wept, he appealed, and he made extravagant promises at reform, if only he were permitted to remain out of school. The classroom was to him a bugbear that loomed dark and terrible upon his horizon.

After a careful investigation had revealed the fact that he had no genuine reason to regard the school as a dreadful chimera, to be avoided, he was taken for a stroll, made happy with the purchase of "Whitey" and "Browney" (two pretty rollicking rabbits), and quite casually landed in the neighborhood of the school.

Holding his pets tenderly, he was introduced to the principal, and to his stupefaction, was enrolled as a pupil, and with the other children went to school after luncheon.

As was expected, his pets drew him home, and for several days, the monitor in charge of him had no difficulty in combating the *Wanderlust* germ. He was entranced by the antics of the bunnies, and spent all his time, when not at school, in caring for and watching them. He informed his mother, who came to see him after three days' stay in his new home, that "I love 'em better 'an the whole world," which caused the poor woman, eager for every crumb of affection she could beguile from him, to give vent later to the philosophic remark, "It 's the way of the world to think of the mother last!" But she was quite happy that, as yet, he had had no wandering spell.

A few days afterward, while feeding his pets, he suddenly paused in the process, and without word or sign to anyone, silently disappeared. For two days, his distracted monitor roamed the streets searching for him, and finally discovered him at a crowded corner, selling newspapers. He was brought home repentant, and very much the worse for two days' and nights' wear and tear of the city streets.

"I just could n't help it," he explained, "something made me want to run away, so I run away."

Despite his promises, a few days later he again disappeared. This time it was the police who telephoned the office to the effect that a wretched little vagabond had been picked up late at night, who claimed that he was an inmate of the Home. A hurried trip to the police station, and then a woebegone, grimy, and starved little youngster, very contrite and repentant, was on his way back to the Orphanage. "I know I 'm awful bad," he sighed regretfully, "but

I can't help it — I just got to go. Guess I was born crazy like that son of a b—— told me."

"Whom do you mean?"

"Oh, that guy she got married to," he replied.

"Who is the 'she'?"

"Don't cher know?" he burst out eagerly; "she ain't my mother — only 'dopted me."

"Who told you so?"

"That — " he hesitated, and then changed the words that had been at the tip of his tongue — "that guy was always throwing it up to me," he continued.

At the Home, he was washed and fed and sent to bed. Waking at noon the next day, he dressed and presented himself at the office, inquiring anxiously, "What's yuh gonna do to me?"

"What would *you* do to a boy like yourself?" he was asked.

He replied without hesitation: "Aw, put him in the crazy house or get him drowned."

Instead of heeding his suggestions, he was given a good dinner, and then taken into the office for a talk. First, objections to "swear words" and vile language were clearly presented, and then his adopted mother's devotion and affection for him were pointed out to him. He was informed that he was too bright and intelligent to be "crazy," and that it was up to him to do the right thing and show his mother's husband that he had been "born right."

He nodded his head eagerly. "Sure, I will," he promised.

That same afternoon, notwithstanding his tender age, he became a member of the printing class, and was taught to distribute sticks of type. He also joined the carpentry class, — which for a time interested him, — and found himself confronted by a curriculum of work and play, which left him to himself very seldom. He was unadaptable at school, and it was not till his ardent desire for a puppy was tentatively granted upon condition that he bring a good report from school, that he gave any serious attention to his school-work.

For several weeks he plainly made every effort to conform to rules and regulations; and then, on the way home from school, managed cleverly to evade the monitor's eye, and ran off again. For three days, an unavailing search was conducted for him; then he was again picked up by the police, this time in a township nearby, footsore, weary, and apparently on the verge of starvation.

He was abject in his penitence, and made extravagant promises of reform, pleading to be forgiven again. This time he gave the strange excuse that a large hand seemed to be beckoning to him,

and he just could n't help following it; but at the same time he promised that, if the hand beckoned again, he would follow it no more.

With the dog he craved, as a bait, he was set to work again and his movements carefully watched. A month passed, and he was progressing favorably at school and having no difficulty at home, when suddenly he again disappeared. This time he was quickly apprehended by the police, as an irate fruit-vender caught him stealing some bananas, and after administering a very severe beating, complained to the officer on the beat. He was brought home stiff and sore from the pommeling he had received, and sobbing out his heart in his sorrow and regret, pleaded for "just one more chance. A dog would n't let me run away no more. Please let me have a dog," he pleaded.

He was told that it depended solely upon him to earn the dog. He redoubled his efforts, and naively petitioned both his supervisor and his teachers to "please watch me all the time and don't let me run away till I get my dog."

Undoubtedly he must have had many a struggle with the *Wanderlust* in the several months that passed and saw him adhering to his last promise, "not to run away no more." At the end of the term, he was promoted to the Second Grade and received the reward of a dog. He was overjoyed with this addition to his live possessions, which included a kitten, three pigeons, the rabbits, and a canary in a cage which his mother had brought him, and which, for safety, was kept in his supervisor's room, but was cared for by him.

He spent a very happy summer, participating in all the outings, games, and parties given the children, and attended to his small duties, with his favorite pet, the dog, always beside him. "Did n't I say the dog would n't let me run away?" he asked triumphantly, as the vacation passed, and he had not left the house once without permission.

His poor mother, believing him cured, was elated, and in the exuberance of her joy, brought him as many sugar-plums and dainties as were permitted. Once, finding him away at a ballgame, the poor creature waited all afternoon with her offerings, till he returned, his dog clasped fondly in his arms. In response to her effusive greetings, he remarked ungraciously enough, "You did n't have to wait for me so long at all — you know where my locker is, don't you?" The unhappy mother wept over her heartache in the office, but expressed her gratification, even while the tears were coursing down her cheeks, that the boy's reformation made her last days peaceful.

At this time, he manifested an interest in the Junior Boy Scout Troop, and prayed to be allowed to become a member. This was promised him as a birthday gift on his tenth birthday, provided his record was clear of any taints. It was deemed a desirable opportunity to speak to him on a Scout's love and devotion to parents and friends, and he listened readily, and when told, "Now start with your mother, and show her how much you appreciate her affection," he replied, "All right, sir!"

He was as good as his word, to the intense happiness of the kind little woman who had loved and cared for him. He tried to commit the Scout laws to memory, and though he expressed himself as regretting that "school had opened already," he nevertheless made no further objection to the schoolroom.

Not till the winter was well advanced, did he have another outbreak of the *Wanderlust*. He and his dog suddenly disappeared one evening, right after supper, and could not be located in any of the "movie" houses in the neighborhood or in any other favored haunt.

Toward midnight, when search had been abandoned for that night, a loud, shrill voice, reinforced by a dog's bark, was heard calling the watchman's name, and asking to be "let in quick; we're freezing!"

He was taken aback when a different "watchman" from the one he had expected opened the door for him; but he gathered his confidence and courage together quickly, and said, while his teeth chattered with the cold, "I come back myself this time. Did n't I tell you that the dog would n't let me run away? He did n't — he just made me come back — and please excuse me this time. Honest to God, I'll never do it again."

Again he was as good as his word. His last outbreak remained the last.

As he grew older, he became more interested in the manual-training classes, showing a marked preference for the printing plant. He distributed type quite rapidly and accurately, and when he laboriously succeeded in setting up and printing, all by himself, a card bearing his and his dog's name in very prominent capitals, his pride and delight knew no bounds. As an afterthought, he also printed a card bearing his mother's name, and presented it to her. The poor woman was overjoyed with the gift, which to her was priceless, and vowed she would keep the bit of pasteboard next to her heart as long as she lived.

Though he no longer attempted to "hook" school, he was not very enthusiastic about his studies; still he ranked well in his grade,

and was regarded with favor by his teachers, who considered him rather a hopeful case for the future. He gave his pets the most scrupulous care, Jimmy, his dog, remaining his prime favorite, and the daily recipient of lamentations over the enforced partings compelled by a heartless school-system.

"Jimmy, you stay right here and wait for me till I come home. You're not going to run away like a bad boy, will you?" was his daily parting admonition. And Jimmy wagged his tail, and boy and dog were at peace.

Later, after he was duly honored with a Junior Boy Scout membership, he became a valuable unit in the Big Brother organization. A tiny tacker, chronologically younger than he, but of his own type, was admitted to the institution, and as an experiment, it was decided to test him in the rôle of Big Brother.

He was called into the office. "Well, son, since you're a fine little man now and a good Scout, think you can be trusted with a big piece of work?" he was asked.

He nodded his head vigorously. "Sure I can!" he said emphatically.

"Think you and Jimmy can keep little Frank, the new boy, from running away all the time?"

His face beamed with pleased and proud smiles. "Just you see! Me and Jimmy'll fix 'im," he gloated. As he was leaving, eager to start with his work at once, he turned suddenly from the door-step, and asked, "If we make a good boy from Frank, can I be a monitor then?"

The tactful explanation, that he would have to wait several years longer to attain such a dignity, only half satisfied him, as he tossed his head with a gesture of impatience and exclaimed, "Chee! I wish I was grown up already!"

His response to the task presumptively assigned to him was instantaneous and effective. The belief that he was in charge of a "rummy" (as the runaways were termed in the boys' own vernacular) was a novel and gratifying experience to him. He felt his responsibility, and it was interesting to watch him guard his "little brother," and shrewdly take note of his every movement. He was at the youngster's side at every twist and turn, remonstrating, lecturing, and condemning any effort the other made to "hook" school. In his anxiety to make a success of his "job," he even offered to share his pets with his charge, only the favored Jimmy being excluded from the generous offer.

The Home publication now engaged his interest, and as he grew older, he took pride in the fact that he also contributed his labor to

the production of the small magazine. The monitors at this time deemed it advisable to increase the subscription list of the paper by instituting a "drive," and it was he who carried off the honors and won the prize for obtaining the greatest number of subscriptions.

Physically, he gained in weight, and he appeared healthier and sturdier. Good food and a regular, wholesome life had a tonic effect upon him, and his nervous disorders completely disappeared in time. The boys' games and outdoor sports finally attracted him, and he learned to participate in them, with true happy, boyish abandon.

Possibly a case for vocational guidance at a later period; but at the time, he was a normal boy living in the environment best suited to his needs, and benefiting accordingly.

THE RESULT

The Superintendent of the Institution of which he is still an inmate, kindly submitted the following information concerning him, June 19, 1922:

"He is a bright, happy lad, perfectly normal in every respect. I was surprised to learn that he had been a problem at any period in his life. To my knowledge, he has had an unbroken good record from school during the past year, and has not left the Home without permission at any time.

"His scholarship is good, and at the next promotion he will be admitted to the Junior High School. He enjoys Scouting and outdoor sports, and appears to be greatly interested in printing.

"A few months ago, we were notified that he had been left \$350 on savings deposit in a local bank, by a woman who died of tuberculosis. It is understood that she was his adopted mother. This money, in addition to a Liberty Bond, valued at \$50, will be applied for his future education and welfare.

"When he learned that I intended to visit B——, on my way to the Conference, he begged that I take with me his love and fondest remembrances to his dearest friend."

CHAPTER IV

PILFERERS

CASE A, ELSIE G——	"THE PRIMA DONNA"
CASE B, PHILIP L——	"RAFFLES, JR."
CASE C, OTTO L—— (BROTHER OF PHILIP L——)	"A STRAGGLER"

CASE A

ELSIE G——, "THE PRIMA DONNA"

Entered Institution for Dependent Children, February 10, 1906.

Age 12 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Stealing large or small sums of money, whenever and wherever obtainable.
- (b) Purloining toilet articles for personal use, and appropriating any garments of seeming value in her eyes, with the view of subsequently pawning them, at a favorable opportunity.
- (c) Crafty; cunning; shrewdly able to form a link of circumstantial evidence, convicting some other child of her misdeeds.
- (d) Inveterate liar, tale-bearer, and mischief-maker.
- (e) Sullen; extremely obstinate and discontented.
- (f) Spells of hysterical crying and screaming when reproved or chastised.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Several years' retardation caused by frequent illnesses, some real, and most assumed.
- (b) Refractory and disobedient. Especially fond of "making a fool of the teacher," and being considered "smart," and "so brave," by the class, which was usually entertained by her antics and impertinence.
- (c) An artist in caricaturing the teacher with chalk and pencil, and writing, and passing around the class, notes containing the most freakish and ridiculous sentiments regarding that much-tried person.
- (d) The ringleader in all mischief and insubordination.

3. HOME

- (a) Stealing from mother, uncles, and aunts, and avowing her innocence of the thefts committed. Frequently accusing a brother or sister of her own wrongdoing.
- (b) Impishly bearing tales from mother to relatives-in-law, and *vice versa*, and then serenely enjoying the discord and unhappiness which followed.
- (c) Impertinent, defiant, and unmanageable.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Begged neighbors to be permitted to do their errands; but when entrusted with their purchases in answer to her request, would appropriate the money, and spend it upon such trifles and pleasures as she desired. To the neighbor she would then bring some hard-luck story concerning the loss of the money.
- (b) Delighted in the quarrels and animosity she caused among the neighbors with her tales, which she brought from one family to the other. Revelled in learning gossip and scandal, to spread broadcast among her victims.
- (c) Despising authority and fond of organizing the children on the block to defy and play pranks upon the street's policeman, whom she hated and feared. He had, upon various occasions, threatened to haul her into the Juvenile Court, and she wanted "to get even" with him.
- (d) Petty pilfering from the cash-boxes in stores in her neighborhood; also stealing from the homes which had neither knowledge nor suspicion of her propensities.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Quite tall for her age, very slender and wiry.
- (b) Sparse, dry brown hair; wan, pinched features, the eyes a lustreless blue, cold and expressionless.
- (c) The face was unchildlike, and attracted attention by reason of the maturity and cold indifference to the world that it seemed to convey.
- (d) Frequent nervous twitchings of the mouth. Constant biting of the nails had mutilated the right thumb and forefinger to such an extent, that they were practically minus their nails.
- (e) Troubled with eczema, insomnia, and enuresis.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination:

Physicians had in turn diagnosed her case as "exceedingly high strung, very neurotic, and in urgent need of change of environment. Disciplinary measures strongly advised."

(b) Personality Traits:

Fond of feigning illness, and receiving the care and attendance bestowed upon an invalid. When "ill," quite

languid, sad and drooping, a doleful image, inviting compassion and sympathy.

Inclined toward neatness and orderliness, only in so far as personal effects were concerned.

Liked to pose and imagine herself wronged, suffering, and misunderstood by everybody.

Had special aptitude for biting, cutting remarks, and a choice flow of bitter invectives at the slightest provocation.

Inordinately fond of pretty clothes, trinkets, cosmetics, and perfumes.

Believed herself possessed of a remarkable voice, and would offer that information at first acquaintance, and also submit proof of her pretension, by singing snatches of popular songs in a soprano voice decidedly out of key.

Boastful; vain; extremely jealous and envious of any gift received by, or privilege accorded to another child.

Anti-social. Only playing at friendship to further her own ends.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: was the youngest of a family of five brothers and two sisters, who were all more successful in finding their proper niche in life than he. The former were all well established in some business of their own, and the sisters had married well.

He had been delicate from birth, and had been the favorite of his parents, who planned a scholarly career for him. He had received an excellent education in the furtherance of his parents' ambitions for him, but remained an impractical dreamer, who had no definite object or purpose in life. He wanted the world to recognize its many sins, and wrote innumerable tracts upon the subject, which generally landed in the waste-basket.

The death of his parents entailed upon him the necessity of earning his own livelihood, and he accepted a clerkship in his oldest brother's manufacturing establishment. Shortly thereafter he fell in love with one of the operatives of the place, who was poor and friendless, and against the opposition of his entire family, married her.

The result was estrangement from his relatives, which cost him his clerkship, and deprived him of the advice and assistance of his brothers, which had stood him in good stead before his marriage. As he was of but mediocre

ability, and unskilled at any work, he had great difficulty in finding and keeping jobs. He earned very little, and his family, which numbered five living children after he had been married twelve years, led a precarious existence, till his brothers, appealed to by sympathetic neighbors, came to his assistance.

At that time, he was suffering from tuberculosis, and died soon after, leaving no provision for his family.

Mother: a woman of fine physique and attractive appearance, had ordinary intellect, but always maintained that, if she had been given advantages, she would have shown the world "a thing or two." Her claim that her lineage was a most proud one, and that her father had been a man of erudition and wealth, was not substantiated by the facts, which were exactly contrary to her statements.

Her only known relatives were two sisters, who had married day laborers and were struggling to eke out an existence for their numerous broods of children. Their mentality could not be classed higher than high-grade moron.

She asserted that her married life had been very happy, in spite of extreme poverty, and deplored her widowhood with loud and bitter lamentations. Her brothers-in-law arranged for a monthly allowance to be settled upon her and the children, which she eagerly accepted, and for two years after her husband's death, managed to keep the family intact.

Then, asserting that her health had been undermined by her troubles and ceaseless ministrations to her children, and that she was tired of being supported by charity, she applied to two different institutions for relief. One, an Orphan Asylum, accepted the older boy and girl, twins, and the other, a newly established institution, acted favorably upon her applications made for the three younger children, thus relieving her of all responsibility toward her family.

Her relatives-in-law objected to the disposal she had made, maintaining that it put them in an embarrassing position to have their nephews and nieces reared in charitable institutions. She, however, insisted that she was tired of dependence and charity, and desired to become self-supporting. Disregarding advice and objections, she returned to her former work in a factory.

She visited the children regularly, and appeared neat, well dressed and contented.

A year or so later, she developed into an incipient case of tuberculosis, and was constantly undergoing treatment for the disease. At infrequent intervals she worked, insisting that she must be "independent."

Siblings: Older brother, good mentality, was a normal, healthy boy, who was greatly benefited by the educational opportunities afforded him by the Orphan Asylum.

His character was highly commended, and his ambition and achievements were such as to leave no doubt that he would make a good and desirable member of the community, after he left the institution.

In addition to his college studies, he was interested in music and athletics.

Older sister, of average mentality, was extremely fond of "good times," and was rather a problem, as she was addicted to petty pilfering and lying.

Her scholarship at school was fair, and she was quite handy with the needle, to which she took readily. She was good-natured, inclined toward laziness, and so easily led that she was considered a weakling.

In time, she earned her livelihood by her needle.

Younger brother, low mentality, extremely filthy in habits and about person.

Had no definite ambition; could be influenced without difficulty, and was chiefly interested in food and having "a bully time."

He had poor character formation and seemed spiritless and easily discouraged.

After he had been graduated from the Grammar School, he was taught a trade, and ultimately became an honest and plodding workman.

Youngest sister, was a pale, flaccid little creature, undersized and underweight. She was tongue-tied and suffered with chronic catarrh. Her mentality was average, and during the number of years she spent at the institution, she never presented any difficulties. She was quiet, gentle and docile to every command.

At school she was obedient and attentive, and worked desperately to keep up with her class. Her mind was rather sluggish but her industry enabled her to reach a fair average in her studies, and she was graduated from

school at the proper age. She then received a business training, and at the time of her discharge from the institution, was holding a position as stenographer and doing satisfactory work.

(b) Developmental:

As an infant, she cried constantly, and, said the mother, "She used to make me so mad, that I often wanted to throw her out of the window. It was her father who walked the floor every night with her; I could n't stand it."

In her early childhood, she had had scarlet fever, diphtheria, and then broncho-pneumonia, which succession of ills had left her a frail wraith of a child, extremely irritable and unhappy. According to her mother's report, she wanted to be fondled and caressed all the time, and was very jealous of the care and affection given the other children. In the mother's words, "She was n't the only child I had, and she wanted us to give her everything, not caring about the others at all. She threatened to kill the new baby that came after her, and we had to watch him all the time, as we were afraid she would really do it. 'We got enough children without him,' she told me, and she prayed to God that he should die."

As she grew older, she became the tyrant of the family, and loved her father best, as it was he who gave her most affection and indulged her in her caprices. "She never loved anybody but him," asserted the mother, "and he was the only one who could do anything with her."

Unfortunately for her, the father, who was the only influence in her life she heeded, had been so beset with cares and troubles, that of necessity what attention he gave her was cursory and incomplete, and his death deprived her completely of the only mentor she would recognize.

For the two years following her father's death, she practically followed the dictates of her own erratic will, with the most demoralizing results. In the institution in which her mother placed her, she found inexperienced people who were attempting child-care on a large scale, and she fiendishly recognized the powers and advantages the situation offered to her. For some time, she played the people against one another, and emboldened by her success, reached out for more and different things.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Very poor eater. "Just let me have sour pickles, sauerkraut, lemons, tea and candy. That's all I want for meals," she frequently begged.

Fond of nursing grievances, most of them imaginary, and threatening retaliation and revenge for fancied wrongs.

Would sit for hours blankly gazing at nothing in particular, a lackadaisical expression upon her face, biting her lips and nails alternately.

Superstitious to a degree strange and violent for so young a child. Saw signs, warnings, and prophecies in anything and everything, from a ray of moonlight falling upon her head or over her shoulder, to a black cat crossing her path. The former occurrence acted pleasantly upon her but the latter, as frequently as not, threw her into hysterics of fear and terror. An attack of somnambulism was once directly traced to the fact that she had seen a black cat, whether the same or not was not ascertained, four times in one day, and each time the cat had looked at her and run directly in front of her. It meant, she explained, that the devil had taken abode in the black cat, and intended to "get me."

It took several doses of bromide to allay her anticipations of disasters and nervous terrors, when by accident she once dropped and broke a pocket mirror. For several weeks, she hysterically insisted that she had been doomed to seven years of bad luck, by reason of the mishap.

Dreams and their significance, as outlined in the "Old Witch's Dream Book," a prized possession, were of great interest to her. With the aid of the book, she would decipher the meaning of her own dreams to her satisfaction or dismay, and would also diagnose the night imagery of other dreamers. Every dream, no matter how trivial, had some meaning for her, and often she had her dormitory shuddering with horror over some prophecy of ill she made, in analyzing the dream of some unhappy child.

She was also intensely interested in another book, "Black Magic, or How to Make a Fortune with Cards," and would pore over its pages in rapt attention. Shuffling cards and telling fortunes were the direct results of the fruits of her reading. She also attempted to tell fortunes through the medium of tea-leaves in a cup of tea.

No interest in outdoor sports or games, or in any normal, wholesome pastime or pleasure.

(d) Home Conditions:

At all times, her home had been in a good neighborhood, and while poverty had sadly affected the environment, in no way could it have influenced her moral attitude. It was learned through various sources, that, despite her mother's assertions of absolute happiness during her married life, there had been constant friction between man and wife, and that always the girl had championed her father's cause.

The two diverse characters had clashed constantly, and the man frequently accused his wife of lies, which she resented bitterly.

At a later period, the girl told of a quarrel which had remained in her mind, when her father told the mother, that she "did n't know how to tell the truth."

After the man's death, the home maintained for the family by his relatives was the scene of frequent misunderstandings and contention, caused by mutual hatred.

(e) Mental Interests:

Dreams, superstitions, and fortune-telling.

THE TREATMENT

When she was first noted and her acquaintance made, she was swathed in heavy blankets, muffled up to her chin, and was listlessly reclining in a wheeled chair, which the nurse had put in a sunny corner of the Home's small hospital porch. She turned indifferent eyes to the door as the sound of strange footsteps attracted her attention, and answered the greeting given her with a critical and hostile gaze. "Guess you're the new Superintendent, ain't you?" she inquired languidly.

"Yes. How do you feel?"

"Terrible. I did n't sleep all night and I got a bad dream, and now I got a headache and I got to be sick till I get to be matured," she explained, all in one breath.

"What does she mean by having to be sick till she matures?" the nurse was asked, in a corner of the hospital, far removed from the alert ears on the porch.

The young woman ventured an explanation. The physician who had examined the child several days before had stated as his opinion that the various nervous disorders and minor physical

ills, from which she had been suffering from time to time, were caused by oncoming maturity, and advised quietude, rest, and absolute relaxation for the patient.

"Did the doctor state at what particular time the child might mature?" the nurse was further questioned.

"No; but we expect that it may happen any day," was the reply.

Several days later, the nurse pounced into the office, angry and excited. "I have reached the limit of my endurance with that girl," she complained. "What do you think she did now? Nothing else than tell Mrs. C—— [the housekeeper] that the box of handkerchiefs she has been missing since yesterday was taken by me from her room when she was out."

"What did you do?"

"Why, I distinctly resent being considered a thief, and gave her a sound scolding and accused her of taking the handkerchiefs herself. She steals and lies abominably."

"Then what followed?"

"The girl screamed and yelled her head off, and is just over an attack of hysterics," was the information given.

"Is there anything really wrong with her at the present time?"

"N-o," hesitatingly replied the nurse, "but she is likely to mature any day."

"Then suppose we assume that her maturity is quite likely to be a normal function, and send her out of the hospital?"

"But the doctor —" the nurse began, and irresolutely stated objections.

Relieved of all responsibility in the matter, the next day she very gladly removed the blankets from her patient, to the latter's extreme amazement, and advised her to get dressed and make her appearance in the office.

The girl came in with the air of an injured saint, and heaved a sigh as she sank into the nearest chair.

"Oh, hello! Feeling better this morning?" she was asked.

"A little tiny bit," she agreed dolefully.

"How about school?"

"Oh, I could n't go," she burst out quickly, her languor unexpectedly dissipated.

"Why not?"

"Oh, because the doctor said that I must do nothing and rest till I get matured," she expounded earnestly and clearly.

"Since then the doctor has changed his mind and feels that you should be given the same chance as the other girls to go to school

and have good times, and not bother about maturing at all for some time," she was told.

She burst into tears which came readily and quickly. "But I like it up in the hospital," she asserted.

"Don't you want to be smart and educated?"

"Ugh!" she ejaculated contemptuously, "I'm smarter 'n any of them things here, an' I got more sense than my momma any day."

"If you're so smart now without an education, just think what school will do for you. A smart girl is needed here in the office — how about helping out?"

There was something about the proposition that seemed to please her immensely, and she leaped at it with avidity. Not until weeks later was her eagerness explained.

"I know how to telephone, and the voluntary teacher showed me how to typewrite, and I always brought the mail to the other Superintendent, and I know all the people who come in here — " She went on breathlessly, boasting of her long list of accomplishments, quite forgetting her rôle of invalid.

On the spur of the propitious moment, she consented to return to school, and also agreed to resume all the activities that her "illness" had stopped. She was quite anxious to start her office-work at once. "I knew all about them envelopes that have the children's money in them," she confided.

"What do you know about them?"

"Oh, when one of them wants some money, they take them out of the envelope and mark it down. You got to watch them, 'cause if you don't, some of them envelopes can't be found the next time. Some of them kids are awful thieves — wait, you see."

Thinking to ingratiate herself with the new authority, and believing the time specially opportune for further disclosures of the iniquities existing in the large household, among both children and adults, she completely forgot her ills, present and future, and eloquently launched her attacks on young and old. She was even unsparing in her remarks upon the directors of the institution, and gave the information that "they think they know it all, but they don't know nothin'."

Feeling that she had made the impression she desired, she readily consented to permit herself to be escorted to school, and, in short order, had breakfasted, dressed, and presented herself with a smile, for the ordeal facing her.

On the way to school, she criticized without stint the principal and teachers, and deplored the fact that none seemed to understand and appreciate her, either at home or at school.

"My father was the only one who knew how smart I was," she lamented, "and he had to die."

"Did you love him?"

"Better'n the whole world!" she exclaimed enthusiastically. "Sometimes he comes to me by night and talks to me, and I feel happy."

Her record in the school was one of continuous absences for the period extending to a full school-year, about the time she had been an inmate of the institution. "She has been attending school, on an average, half a dozen times during the month, and our School Attendance Officer was always informed, at the Home, that she was ill. When she did come, she was so troublesome, that it was a relief when she stayed away," complained her teacher.

A long talk with the principal and teacher followed, and both kindly agreed to give their earnest coöperation in dealing with the girl. She came into the office at the close of the school-day, her eyes bearing the expression of a martyr, and seemingly she was on the verge of exhaustion.

"Oh," she sighed, "I'm so tired I'm nearly dead."

The complaint was completely ignored. "Do you know that the principal was told that you are such a bright girl that it's a shame you should be in such a low grade? And we have a bet on, that you make two grades this term!"

"A — h — h!" she ejaculated, her mouth wide open in her astonishment.

"Mean to say that a bright girl like you can't do it, and get ahead of the babies in your class?" she was asked, in assumed surprise.

She became animated at once. "Of course I can," she boasted; "I can do anything I want — but — but — I get sick all the time — and — ain't I goin' to be matured?"

"Of course you will, some time, but you're not going to sit still and let everybody younger and not so smart as you get ahead of you, are you?"

"But they can't get ahead of me — I'm too smart for them," she argued.

"Perhaps. But then they are learning lots of things that you'll never know unless you go to school," she was told.

"What good will them things do me?" she questioned, with contempt in her voice for the "things."

"They'll help you become an educated, refined young lady."

"They won't make me rich like I want to be when I grow up, will they?" she asked.

"They might help you considerably in all your desires," she was assured.

"I don't see how," she burst out, all her apparent fatigue dissipated in her eagerness; "when you're rich, you got lots of money — and that's not money they learn us in school."

"True. But is n't it necessary to learn how to count the money you have, and be wise enough to know just what to do with it?"

"Oh, I know what to do with money — spend it and buy lots of nice things — and I never count, I — I — I —" She stopped suddenly in confusion, blushed red, and looked greatly distressed.

"What do you do?" she was encouraged, gently and quietly.

"I — I —" she mumbled; and then, making an effort, blurted out, "I'll go to school if you want me to — all right."

No remark was made about her sudden change of subject. She looked anxious, as if fearing further questioning; but to her very apparent relief, her confusion had been unnoticed, so she was permitted to think. Her face became quite calm, when she was told:

"All right! We'll regard that as a promise to attend school from now on regularly and faithfully, in spite of everything."

She nodded her head, and that afternoon installed herself in the office as assistant, general factotum, and privileged nuisance. Between her self-imposed duties, she made a feint at studying her lessons. As she was leaving the office for her evening meal, she noticed the president of the institution entering. At once she deviated from her course, and flew to him with every indication of affection; and he in turn fondled and caressed her, congratulating her upon her apparent return to health.

"She's a wonderful girl," confided the President; "only it's too bad that the poor thing is sick all the time. She's so smart, she knows everything."

To this information, he added later, that, since its inception a year and a half ago, the institution had suffered considerably by the disappearance of checks and sums of money sent through the mail. Also, that the children who had odd little amounts in envelopes in the Superintendent's desk frequently found their funds lessened or altogether missing, nobody knew how or when.

"It could n't be any of the adults around here, as we at first thought," he observed, "because we changed the entire force twice in a year, and the same thing continued. I think," he said sadly, shaking his gray head with mournful emphasis, "that we must have some very bad boys here, who are clever thieves."

"Perhaps girls?" was mildly intimated.

"Oh, no!" he replied emphatically; "the girls here are gentle

and good." Then he resumed, "I have been thinking for a long time of employing a detective, but I'm afraid the matter might become public and give us a bad name."

"In what way?"

"Don't you understand that the people would refuse to support an institution which cared for bad children? They would n't want to give their money for the purpose of rearing up thieves for the community; and," he paused and forcefully brought his clenched fist down upon the table in front of him, the better to emphasize his argument, "they are right! Bad boys have no business to be here at all. They belong in jail or the reformatory, because they are simply growing up to be criminals."

As he was leaving, he bethought himself of a suggestion. "That girl is so smart, may be she can help you catch the thieves," he advised.

Early the next morning, the girl was noticed in the vestibule peering out into the street.

"Expecting somebody?" she was asked.

"Yes, sir, the postman," she responded brightly. "If I would n't get it for you, then them kids get hold of it, and that's why there is always mail missing."

An interview with the postman elicited the information that it was she who usually waited for him and took the mail. She had explained to him that she had been assigned to that duty. "Even when she's sick, she either waits for me, or sends some kid to meet me. She's some fine girl," was the man's verdict.

He was instructed to deliver the mail direct to the office in the future.

"You'll see how that mail is going to be gone," warned the girl, when told that she was to be relieved of mail duty for the present.

She was right. During the next month, important communications sent to the Home had not been found in the mail; and though the desk was constantly locked, small sums of money were as constantly missing from the envelopes in which they had been placed. There had also been frequent reports from the children that various things were missing from their lockers; and the employees of the place also brought complaints of losses they had sustained, both in money and in articles of value.

As for the girl, though her dreams, aided by her dream-book, had foretold that she would be sick at least for a week, and unable to attend school, she nevertheless, for the first time in her career, attended school a whole month in succession without absences.

Several times she had made efforts to be excused on the score of some illness which seemed imminent; but always the danger was minimized, and always surprise was expressed that "so smart a girl should give any attention to so small a matter."

A class had been organized in sewing and embroidery, and she took very kindly to the needle. She seemed very much interested in dressmaking, and for several hours after school each day would be intent upon the dress she wanted to make for herself. It was to be, as she expressed it, "the first dress to be made by any girl in the Home"; and she pleaded that, when finished, "it should be put up in the glass case for everybody to see how nice it was made."

Finally, the decoy, sought for several weeks, came in the form of a bulky letter addressed to the treasurer of the Home. The girl was in the office at the time. It was noted how she eyed the letter, and quickly withdrew her eyes when she thought herself observed.

"Do you know Mr. B——?" she was asked.

"Sure," she replied quickly; "he's the treasurer here."

"Do you know what a treasurer is?" she was questioned.

"Sure," was the answer, "he's the man who keeps all the money."

Unknown to her, the letters were counted, and the treasurer's put on the top of the pile. She was then left alone in the office for ten minutes. As expected, there were several letters missing, the treasurer's among them, and the girl was out.

She was sent for immediately.

"Were n't you told not to leave the office alone for a moment?" was put to her in a tone of severity.

"I — know," she burst into violent sobs without warning, "but — but I got such a bad headache all of a sudden, and went to ask the nurse for something — I was coming right back."

"Do you know that several letters are again missing?"

She brushed the tears from her eyes, and seemed surprised and sorry at the same time. "So quick them kids got in — ain't it awful?" she remarked.

"Well, this time it's going to get the one who took them into trouble, and we'll catch him."

"How?" she asked instantly.

"Because the treasurer's letter is marked with a peculiar ink that's bound to get upon the fingers of the one opening it, and it stays there for some time."

She cast a hasty glance at her fingers. "See!" she cried, "mine are all right. There's nothing on them."

"Very well, we'll look at all the children's fingers. Ask Miss G—— to please step into the office."

"All — right, — sir." She appeared quite frightened.

Miss G——, the head supervisor, was requested not to let the girl out of her sight for a moment. She reported later that her charge seemed to be in trouble, but refused to unbosom herself of her woes. "All she does is to moan about a dream she had, which told her she should get into trouble," said the woman.

Early the next morning, upon entering the office, what appeared to be several folds of creased and torn wrapping paper, in the form of a large oblong, was discovered on the ledge of the desk. It bore the name and address of the treasurer of the Home, evidently hastily scribbled with a pencil. When the paper was removed, the letter was found intact.

Nothing was said to the girl, though she haunted the office till school-time and appeared very ill at ease. Late in the afternoon, when she presented herself for her few office duties, she was asked to write the names of the officers and directors of the institution, as rapidly as possible. The treasurer's name was naturally among them.

Without any suspicion, she produced a duplicate of the handwriting on the wrapping paper.

Both sets of handwriting were then presented to her. "Well, what have you to say?"

She burst at once into her ready tears. "I — I — did n't write that," she indicated the wrapping paper.

Her protestation was completely disregarded. "You'll now tell immediately what you have done with the money and the checks you have been stealing since you came into the Home," was the command given her in no uncertain terms.

She answered with an hysterical attack, during which she screamed and avowed her innocence, yelling to an unseen outside public to have mercy upon a poor orphan who was being wronged, ill-treated, and abused. Then followed loud threats to tell the president and all the directors of the Home how she had been tortured "for nothing"; and finally the noise became so penetrating, that it was deemed expedient to close the windows.

"You may scream as loud and as long as you like," she was told quietly, "but you are not going to leave this place till you have confessed what you did with the money you stole."

"It's — it's a big lie," she screamed, "I ain't a thief — I — never took nothin'."

"Very well then; we'll have to see what the police can do with you."

Very abruptly she stopped in the midst of a yell, her mouth

open, her eyes staring wildly at the telephone, which, so far as she knew, was really forwarding a call.

"Connect me with the Police Station of the Fifth Ward," she heard, though the operator could not with the receiver muffled, and it was most effective.

With a wild cry, she flung herself at the telephone, and attempting to prevent further discussion, with one hand held over the receiver, she pleaded, "Don't — please — don't call the policeman — and have me arrested. I'll tell — I'll tell you — everything."

The receiver was at once returned to its hook, and in very calm tones, she was advised to control herself for a few moments and then tell her story.

"I — I got it all in my trunk in my locker," she finally panted.

A messenger was despatched for her "trunk," which was really a toy made in the shape of a trunk, and designed to hold the elaborate wardrobe of a doll or two. It was locked. Slowly she produced a tiny key that she wore on a very narrow ribbon about her neck, and hesitatingly opened what was truly a unique and original receptacle for stolen property.

There then lay revealed a goodly assortment of checks, notes, greenbacks of various denominations, and, to add a touch of glitter, large and small silver coins, gold rings, pins, brooches, and some lace-edged handkerchiefs and collars.

"How did you get keys for the desk and for the office-door?"

She hung her head. The question was repeated more sternly.

Sobbing, she lifted her heavy eyes brimming with tears, and begged, "Please — please have — pity on me!"

"Where are the keys with which you opened the desk and the door?" was the insistent question.

She attempted to evade the issue by hysterical sobs and pleas for forgiveness. Finding that they were of no avail, she finally put a trembling hand into each of her stockings, and produced one key after the other. "This one — is from the desk," she confessed brokenly, "and — and — this one — fits to the office."

"How did you get them?"

"I — I — once took — them off a bunch of keys — from the other Superintendent," she faltered.

Then, changing her tone of voice to urgent entreaty, "What — what are you goin' to do to me?" she sobbed in quavering accents.

"That's for later consideration. Do you know how much money you have here?"

"N-o-o," she stammered. "I — I — can't count — good yet. I just made a bunch — and collected them."

"For what purpose?"

She shrugged her shoulders helplessly. "I — I don' — don' — know," she faltered despairingly. "May — be — 'cause I want to be rich like my uncles and aunts, — an' I want to — to — have my voice trained to be a big singer, — an' it costs a lot, everybody says."

"Elsie, did you steal the money because you wanted to have your voice trained?"

She looked up eagerly and nodded her head. "Everybody — told me that it — costs an awful lot of money," she began hopefully, but was interrupted.

"The truth now, Elsie! For what other reason did you steal?"

The words upon her lips became indistinct mutters. Her eyes fell, and she burst into renewed sobs.

"I — I — could n't help it," she wailed despairingly; "something always makes me take things — honest — I can't help it!"

"What is the something?"

"Something — inside — here!" she indicated the region where she assumed her heart was located. "An' I can't — can't help it!"

"Have you tried?"

"Yes, — yes, lots of times," she cried quickly, "but it don't help." Then, clasping her hands in appeal, "You won't send me where — they send bad people, who — steal? Please, — please, — I can't help it!"

"If you do the things bad people do, why should you expect not to be sent to the place where they are sent?"

She wrung her hands in an abandon of woe. "Oh, I don't want — to go there! I'm afraid — I knew something awful was goin' to happen to me."

"How did you know?"

"Oh, I had a terrible dream — and I knew — I was goin' to be caught, and — and that black cat followed me to school this morning."

It was the "black cat" which suggested an idea.

"Elsie, do you still love your father's memory?"

She nodded her head vehemently.

"Do you know that your dead father sees and hears you now from his home in Heaven?"

She shuddered and turned white. For a moment she looked as if she were going to faint. "Y-e-s," she whispered, looking about her fearfully.

"Did he love you?"

"Better'n anybody else," she said fervently.

"Do you understand how unhappy it must make him to know that his best-beloved child is a thief?"

"Oh! oh! oh!" She bent double as if in pain. "I — I — never — thought — of that!"

"And thinking of that now — will that help you to fight off the something that makes you take things?"

She nodded her head eagerly. "Yes, it will. I'll swear — I'll swear by my dead — father — that I'll never — never be a thief again."

In the future, the mail was not tampered with, and the children's funds were safe, even though, later, she was often entrusted with the care of the small bank-accounts. The promise she had made seemed to be binding, and there was no theft that could be laid at her door. She made very evident attempts to apply herself to her school-work, to the delight of her teacher, who discovered in her an apt and versatile pupil, while at the Home her conduct and, in natural sequence, her health, improved to a degree that seemed little short of miraculous.

A large public entertainment being planned in celebration of a holiday, the coach noted that she had fair dramatic possibilities, as well as a good voice, and she was given a leading part, which required her to both sing and act. She studied her rôle with vim and vigor, and on the day of the performance scored a triumph surpassing that of any of the other children. She was told by some admirers that she was the *prima donna* of the occasion, and instantly her pride, faith in herself, and ambition rose to the heights. Tired but happy, she came to the office that night before retiring, her eyes shining, her face wreathed in smiles.

"Don't you think my father was happy to-day when I was the *prima donna*?" she whispered softly.

"Yes; to-day his soul was well pleased with you."

"I'm so glad," she murmured. "You know, I've been trying real hard — you know what."

The time was now deemed ripe to start the undermining of her superstitions, dream-book, and fortune-telling. It was carefully explained to her that progress and success in life were independent of black cats, broken mirrors, cross-eyed people, and other omens of ill luck, as the "Old Witch's Dream Book" had it. The fabric of dreams, she was informed, depended more upon the digestion than upon the imps of evil who were in league against the happiness of human beings. She listened attentively, and for a time it seemed as if the wholesome influences brought to bear upon her were in the ascendant.

Suddenly, one morning, the candy-dealer of the neighborhood presented himself, dragging her after him. He had intended turning her over to the police, he declared, but only yielded to her pleas to be taken to the office instead, because of the friendship he felt for the institution. His complaint was, that she had been "holding up" his cash-box and his candy, for months at least; and it was finally in desperation at his losses, that he had been compelled to institute himself a detective and catch the thief. He had caught her but a half-hour ago after weeks of futile watching. "Some clever thief!" he ejaculated.

The girl hung her head, sobbing quietly to herself. She attempted no defense this time. But after the dealer was finally persuaded to leave her to the justice of another authority than the police, and had gone away, she gave vent to her grief, and pleaded for pardon and mercy. She confessed that, while she had scrupulously avoided further stealing from the mails and from the children's funds, "because it was all charity money, and my father would feel so bad," she just could n't help her desire to "pick up money."

"I know it was wrong, but I could n't help it," she pleaded.

Tentatively, the Reformatory was held before her. She was frightened and dismayed, and begged to be given another chance. "I'll write a note saying that you can send me to the Reformatory the next time I steal," she suggested; "just you give me one more trial."

The plea was accepted, and she wrote the following, which was put in the safe for future reference if necessary.

"I, Elsie G——, don't want to go to that place where bad girls are kept; but if I steal again, then they can send me and I'll have to go.

Yours truly,

Elsie G——."

Her thirteenth birthday came and went, with no complaint of pilfering to her score. She had, meanwhile, become a valued member of the sewing, embroidery, dramatic, and art classes, and was doing excellent work. Her temper tantrums, "illnesses," and various difficulties showed marked improvement, so it was somewhat of a shock when the office was unexpectedly called up by a department store, and informed that one of the girls of the Home was being detained for stealing.

She was brought home, the wreck of the Elsie who had buoyantly left, but an hour ago, to make some purchase for a supervisor.

"Could n't help it — it came on me — and I took it," was her explanation. She pleaded, however, with all the tears and eloquence at her command that the note in the safe be disregarded. Another chance was, with apparent reluctance, given her, and she was closely watched for some time. When surveillance was about to be abandoned, it was discovered that she had suddenly developed a new habit of entering rooms when the occupants were out, and rifling purses. Where, formerly, any articles that attracted her were grist that came to her mill, now only money tempted her. She also plucked up courage, and very deliberately began to pick the pockets of coats left in some room, or on their wearers when they stopped to greet her. She began to make frequent and unsolicited visits to her uncles and aunts, receiving permission from her supervisor on one pretext or another; and always at the end of the visit, there came an indignant relative, furious and threatening.

There were frequent conferences now held with her in the office; and, always bathed in tears, and shaking with sobs, she would implore pardon, and petition and plead for another chance. "I don't want to do it — honest to God, — I don't," she would cry chokingly; "but something makes me — I can't help it."

An appeal in her father's name had the more lasting effect, but always, when some time had passed, and it seemed as if she were really on the road to a complete cure, there came a grievous fall from grace. Always, it was in some way different from her former procedure; and unfortunately she seemed to have a fount of originality regarding her means of acquiring ill-gotten gains.

For a time it seemed as if the Reformatory was, after all, the last and only resource left. In view of her undoubted ability to master any subject taught her, and a good general intellect, it seemed better to give her another and yet another chance before disposing of her definitely to an institution where she would be thrown in contact with older and more hardened sinners than herself. Finally, as one trial after another had failed, a last desperate remedy suggested itself, after a talk given her on one of her pet superstitions.

It was not without misgiving as to the probability of shock upon the already high-strung nervous system of the girl, that the last effort was made to save her from herself.

She was sent to a room to fetch a book. As expected, she went directly to the bureau drawer first, after ascertaining that the room was unoccupied by calling out, "Anybody in?" found the purse she sought, and was extracting the bills from it, when a

figure enveloped in a white sheet moved slowly toward her, uttering in low but distinct tones, "Elsie, you swore in my name to steal no more. I am given no peace because of you — "

The purse and the bills dropped from her hands. She turned, horrified, and waiting to hear no more, fled shrieking from the room and flew to the office which had been left open for her refuge. Here she threw herself on the floor in a heap, and lay huddled up, moaning, white and trembling. Her eyes distraught, and her breath coming in gasps, she was so unstrung, that she even failed to recognize the figure which entered and quietly closed the door.

"Why, Elsie, that you? What is the matter?" she was asked gently.

She turned slowly, her face ghastly with the fear imprinted upon it. "Oh! oh! oh!" she moaned.

She was picked up, and her hair stroked; and again she was asked, in apparent surprise, "What has alarmed you, child? Tell me all about it!"

She flung out her arms with a gesture of terror, and then slowly murmured, "Oh, it's you! — thank God! — I am so frightened!"

"Who did you think it was?"

She shivered. "I — I could n't see — I was afraid."

"Of whom?"

Convulsive sobs followed. "I — I — just saw — my father!" she breathed between gasps.

"Your father?"

"Y-e-s! He — he — spoke to me."

"What did he say?"

She shuddered. "I — I remember his voice — I knew him — I would know it any time. He said — he said, that I was a thief! That he was given no peace in Heaven — because I was stealing — and he was coming to me to — maybe kill me — " she broke off with another wild shriek, shaking from head to foot, and sobbing wildly.

After she had been somewhat calmed, the silence was broken. "It was a bad thing to promise something in your father's name, and then break it, was n't it?"

"But — but — if I keep it now — honest, honest — HONEST! — will God let him have peace — will He — will He?" she questioned breathlessly.

"Remember that God forgives his children, and that your father loved you and will still love and forgive you, if you keep the promise you made in his name."

"I will, I WILL!" she said earnestly, raising her hand as if to strengthen her promise.

And she did!

They were no physical or mental after-effects as the result of the shock she had received. She remained four years longer in the institution, and during that entire time, there was no theft on her record. She developed normally, becoming an attractive, slender girl, bright, and talented in music and dramatics. Her voice had been tested, and in an effort to bring out whatever possibilities it had, she was given vocal lessons. Time, however, brought the disappointing verdict that at best it was but an ordinary soprano voice, and a singer's career was abandoned for the girl. Subsequently, she used her training in voice-culture for the entertainment of her friends and herself, and also to teach the first rudiments of singing to the younger children at the Home.

She excelled in handiwork, and it was at her laughing instigation, that a "crazy quilt" was started by the members of the sewing class, to be awarded to the first girl who married.

At no time was she a sex-problem, but in her last year at the Business College, she became greatly infatuated with a boy student of her own age, and the two decided to elope and get married. Fortunately, she had developed a habit of coming to the office for refuge and guidance when tempted to wrongdoing, and in this particular instance, though she offered no information, her blushes and furtive glances were warning signals not to be disregarded.

"How about a walk, little girl?" was suggested to her.

She nodded mutely. For a long time, the walk was in utter silence. Suddenly she asked, "When a bride elopes, does she take her wedding-dress with her?"

"The eloping bride does not stop for a wedding-dress — that's why she elopes; she is in too much of a hurry."

"Then I don't see the fun in getting married, without a wedding-dress and a veil," she announced.

"Neither do I."

"But what are you going to do if you love him with all your heart and soul?" she asked wistfully.

"Show him to my friends, and have them arrange the wedding, with the silk dress, and the slippers, and the veil, and the cakes, and everything that goes with a wedding."

"You won't be angry? And you want to see him?" she questioned earnestly.

"Why, of course! Anybody who loves my little girl, I am ready to love."

"If you should n't happen to like him, you won't chase him out?" she pleaded.

"Positively not! The reception-room is yours to entertain him whenever you like."

She was wild with delight, and immediately poured out her confidences freely about her "love," the proposed elopement that was not sufficiently attractive without a wedding-dress, and her plans for the future as a "married lady."

She entertained her "sweetheart" twice, the second visit winding up with a quarrel, upon which she burst into the office, and announced, "I just told him to chase himself. He has less sense than our older boys here. I'm so glad that I did n't run away and get married to such a boob. And without a wedding-dress, too!"

Her romantic spirit now found peace till several years later. She turned her mind, now freed from love-entanglements, to her stenographic course, and was graduated with honors.

The dream-book, cards, and most of her superstitions had been gradually discarded, and by the time she was ready to leave the institution, her abnormalities were of the past.

Not till she was well past her nineteenth year, and had given good and sufficient proof of scrupulous honesty in the responsible position she had held with the same firm for several years, was she told the truth of the ghostly fraud that had been perpetrated upon her.

She admitted at the time that, as she grew older, a doubt now and then about her father's visitation had crossed her mind, but she expressed her gratitude for the patience and care that had helped her to win her fight. Never, she vowed, would she forget to regard honor and honesty as sacred.

THE RESULT

Letters selected from correspondence with the girl, from 1915 to 1922:

November 15, 1915.

My dearest Friend:

It seems to me impossible that I should want to run to you for advice, and find, with a sudden big heartache, that you are miles, miles away from that dear spot on W—— St. I wish you would consent that I should come to B—— and take a position near you. Why could n't I send mother my salary every week? I can't do much with her anyway, as she insists upon having her own way, even though it is not at all good for her.

She is very sick, coughing most of the time, and the doctor wants her to go to a Sanatorium; but no, she insists she must go to her beloved shop and earn money for herself. Won't you please write her a letter and persuade her to give up working, and go to the Sanatorium for a while? You know she always minded you when you told her something.

Jack, Mollie and I, bring into the house \$40 every week, and don't you think that this is enough to keep us all going along, without her having to work in that dingy shop? Mollie likes to have a good time and go out with boys, and I often scold her for coming home so late at night. Please write her something too; it might help some. She has been keeping steady company with the same young man, since last summer, and I suspect that she likes him very much, though she refuses to tell me.

Believe me, I'll be glad when she gets married, as I always have to quarrel with her to give most of her salary into the house. I never thought it takes so much money to run a home. Is n't it funny that I have to worry about the whole family now?

Please answer soon.

Always your devoted

ELSIE G——.

My dear, dear Friend:

May 24, 1916.

Give us congratulations!

Mollie is going to be married in two months, and I am so glad that I could jump for joy. I am only sorry that you never met the young man. He is a grocer, and keeps his shop in a good neighborhood, and I think he will make a good living for Mollie. Anyway, he likes her and she likes him, so I should worry about their future finances! I wish you knew him though and liked him — I'd feel a whole lot better about the whole thing then.

Would it be possible for you to come to the wedding? Oh, how I'd like to see you and I have so much to tell you!

I just got a three-dollar raise per week, and I am very glad, because living expenses are getting higher here, and Mollie is not going to bring anything more into the house.

Jack is getting along very well in his engineering work, but Arthur is not making out well as a plumber yet. He seems to be half asleep all the time, and I am constantly scolding him to wake up. Mother is very much better now. At last she is staying at home and keeping house, and it does her good. Bertha is going to high school and is getting to be quite a young lady.

My, how the years fly!

With a barrel of love,

Your own devoted

ELSIE G——.

March 11, 1917.

Dearest Friend:

You were right as always, and I'm so glad I took your advice and spoke to mother first. She did not object even once to Harry, though I was terribly afraid she would. I told you that she has always been quarreling with his mother ever since I can remember, and is always calling her terrible names. It's like a stone off my heart that she is n't making trouble for me now.

I am so glad you like Harry and remember him, and think he is the *right* man for me. Don't I remember what you used to tell me about Mr. Right? Well, I am sure now that Harry *is* the right man — and I am so glad you approve of him. It makes me awfully happy.

When would it be convenient for you to come to C——? We will arrange the wedding for that time. My friend likes you nearly as much as I do. I told him some, not *all* of the things you did for me. I feel terribly ashamed when I think of some things sometimes, and can't bless my father and you enough.

Do you remember the crazy quilt? By rights, it belongs to me as I am really the first of our girls to get married. It's still on exhibit at the Home, and I just hate to ask them for it. Do you think it would be all right if I just mentioned the matter to our old sewing teacher, and asked her to sort of take it up with the right people?

Yours with lots of love and devotion,

ELSIE G——.

October 4, 1918.

My dearest Friend:

This is the first time I am permitted to sit up since it happened, and after much pleading, they finally consented to let me write a few words to you.

I am the Mother of the Finest, Darlingest Baby Boy in the World — and I am so happy!

He is named after my father, L—— G——, may his dear soul rest in peace!

Think how wonderful! — My own baby is just now sleeping on that crazy quilt I started so many years ago!

Your very happy, happy

ELSIE G. B——.

December 27, 1919.

Dearest Friend:

We are just over the Christmas rush, and we had a fine season. We are all well and happy, and the baby is a splendid boy. I wish you could see him. I am so proud of him; he is as bright as a bright silver dollar. I think he has my father's brains, and I am praying he should have better luck though.

Now, mother feels happier since both boys are back from France. She was always worrying about them, and never saw the postman coming, that she did n't imagine all sorts of horrors. Uncle Sam certainly made a man out of Arthur, and Jack is going back to his old firm. Bertha is earning now \$20 a week. My goodness, I had to work years before I got \$15! But then times have changed and any kind of a typewriter starts with \$10 or \$12, to-day. I'm not jealous a bit — honest, I'm not! — but it does n't seem right, does it? Things are awfully high here in C——. Is it the same in B——?

Mollie has two babies and her husband is doing very well. I'm beginning to think we are what is called a successful family, don't you think so?

Ever your own devoted

ELSIE.

September 25, 1920.

My dearest Friend:

I just felt that I'll feel better if I write to you about it.

Last night I was reading the paper, and came across, for at least the tenth time this month, the story of Mrs. K——, the Society woman, whom the M—— Co. are suing for stealing. Her lawyers claim she should be excused because she is a kleptomaniac, and the trial is going on now. It just got hold of me so, you can't imagine — she has disgraced her family and must be heartbroken — what is going to happen to her, I wonder?

It made me think how thankful and grateful I ought to be to my dear father first, who because he could n't take care of me himself here, begged God to send you to me, and then to you, who saved me from God knows what. If that woman with all her advantages, is where she is now, good God! what would have become of me?

May God bless my dear father's soul and you!

Your devoted

ELSIE.

March 2, 1921.

My dear Friend:

You will be glad to hear that Bertha is engaged — and to one of your boys, J—— H——. I am trying to arrange that they should spend their honeymoon somewhere in the East, so that they could come to see you. I, too, hope to arrange a trip for myself soon — and you can just guess where I am going to come.

All's well with the boys, mother, and Co.

Your

ELSIE.

Extract from letter, dated February 15, 1922:

My little girl is just three weeks old.

Can you imagine me as the mother of a family? Is n't it all too wonderful? Sometimes I can't realize that I am the same Elsie G——. But one thing is sure. I'll never stop praying to God that He should be good to me and give me the sense and wisdom to bring up my children to be good, honest and happy.

CASE B

PHILIP L—, "RAFFLES, JR."

Entered March 4, 1917. Age 13 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Pickpocket.
- (b) Member of a gang of thieves.
- (c) Bunking out for days or a week at a time.
- (d) "Running wild," and terrorizing the neighborhood with petty thefts, breaking windows, and other juvenile misdeeds.
- (e) Persistent truancy.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Truant. When supposed to be at school, would be in his haunts, executing some mischief.
- (b) Very troublesome; disobedient and impertinent.
- (c) When threatened with expulsion, laughed in the principal's face, and coolly remarked, "I just double dare you to do it."
- (d) Stole from the teachers and the pupils.
- (e) Influenced several of his classmates to "hook school" with him.
- (f) Several years' retardation.

3. HOME

- (a) Defiant to parents. Unmanageable and scornful of any attempted restraint.
- (b) Stole at every possible opportunity.
- (c) Stayed at home only when hungry, worn out with excessive wanderings, or in need of clothing.
- (d) Gave vent to violent temper, and constantly abused the other children. Used vile language.
- (e) Recognized no authority, and was without supervision of any kind.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Associated with the most troublesome boys of the neighborhood from earliest childhood, and, later, influenced younger boys to join his gang.

- (b) Organized and led frequent depredations against the store-keepers in the neighborhood, causing much trouble and damage.
- (c) A general nuisance.
- (d) Favorite haunt was the wharf, where he would steal fruit being unloaded from ships, and pick the pockets of sailors, whom he would direct to saloons.
- (e) Especially fond of picking the pockets of drunkards.
- (f) Several times in the Juvenile Court, on charge of picking pockets in crowded street-cars.
- (g) Sold newspapers without a license, and used the papers as a means to help him in picking pockets.
- (h) Had been committed for six months to a semi-reformatory school.
- (i) Juvenile Court Docket Entry.
10-8-14. Minor without proper care. Probation officer reports that boy has a good mother but a drunken father.
Postponed till December 8. 2-9-15. Benevolent Society will look after him. Case dismissed.
- (j) Benevolent Society Record. March, 1915, to 1917.
"Boy exceedingly troublesome. Is truant from school. Steals and bunks out for days. Has been found asleep in a wagon with a drunken man."
Committed to a disciplinary school, but no improvement after his release.
Dr. P——, Probation Officer, suggests reformatory. March, 1917, admitted to the Orphanage.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Very poor development. Small in physique, having the appearance of a nine-year-old boy.
- (b) Intelligent face, features small and shrewd, eyes dark blue, very bright and keen-looking.
- (c) Eight pounds underweight for his height, complexion pale and sallow, and very badly neglected teeth.
- (d) No constitutional defect.
- (e) Enlarged tonsils and adenoids.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:

Intelligence: Two years above chronological age.

Character: Poor hereditary basis. (Father a drunkard.) Boy's behavior indicates poor character organization, and a neurotic temperament.

Health: Underheight and underweight. Needs building up.

Impression: A boy in need of good disciplinary training, preferably in an institution.

(b) Personality Traits:

Inclined to be neat about his person. Tidy habits.

No sex-tendencies, but anxious to make a favorable impression with the girls.

Likes to be petted and admired. Craves affection, and would give his all to one of whom he is fond.

Very liberal and generous disposition.

Would admit a wrongdoing and assume entire responsibility for it, to shield a friend.

Would lie readily and confess a fault indifferently.

Pleasure-loving. Very fond of sweets.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: a carpenter by trade, who made good wages when working, but, owing to his habitual drunkenness, was frequently out of work, and nearly always penniless.

He was nervous, irritable, and gave the following reasons for drinking:

First, his wife did not love him, and he had to hide his sorrows in drink.

Second, his employers did not appreciate him sufficiently, and he was compelled to drink to forget his disappointment.

Third, his sons were becoming criminals, and he had to find a solace in drinking.

Fourth, the world displeased him greatly, and he was compelled to drink to prevent himself from going insane thinking of the wrongs done to innocent people.

He squandered a dollar as soon as he earned it, and absolutely felt no responsibility toward his family. When not drunk, he was affectionate and gentle to the family, and made extravagant promises to reform. He would suggest to his wife, at such times, to call at his shop for

his money before he could receive it. When she did so, he would go home and beat her brutally.

He neglected the children during their early childhood, and cruelly abused them till they were old and strong enough to defy him. He was rather afraid of his oldest son when drunk, and ashamed of him when sober. He claimed that he could not understand the boy's incorrigibility, as none in his family had ever been "bad"; and he always regretted that he was too intoxicated to appear in court when either of his sons was apprehended for theft or other misconduct.

He sadly admitted that it was "too bad" he was born to be a drunkard, but every man had to be what fate decreed for him; and while he should have preferred not to drink, still, how could he be expected to fight with an adverse fate? He was quite willing that his family should be maintained by the Charities, saying rather naively, "But they have to be supported somehow."

The man had one sister who was normal; she was married and had a family of several children, all apparently normal. There were some distant relatives in other cities, but they were unable or unwilling to assist him. As far as could be learned, they were normal, respected people in their respective communities.

Mother: small in stature, delicate in appearance; was a quiet, unassuming, and retiring little creature.

Her character was very pliable and had been moulded to the will of her husband, who completely dominated her. He used "to like to take a drink" before their marriage, but he had promised her that, when she became his wife, he would give up drinking. She never was quite able to comprehend how it happened that he had not kept his promise to her, and wondered passively whether she was not in some way to blame. Devoted to him and the children, she suffered cruelly at his hands.

Once, acting upon the advice of friendly neighbors who sympathized with her, she left her home after a particularly severe beating administered by her husband, but could not stay away from the children, and "was sorry for him"; so she returned too soon for her absence to make any appreciable difference to her husband.

Though her boys were fond of her, she had no influence over them, and they refused to accord any respect to her

wishes or grant her any authority to command their actions. She was exceedingly unhappy and miserable, and unwisely made confidants of her neighbors, who, while they pitied her, yet mercilessly discussed her and her unfortunate affairs.

She tried to keep her tiny home clean and comfortable, and worked very hard to make both ends meet on her scanty income. Her boys' delinquencies caused her pain and sorrow, and she was quite anxious to coöperate for their welfare.

Her one known relative, a sister, lived in another city, and was of no assistance to her.

Siblings: *Sister*, average mentality, fair appearance; had been working in a factory since early girlhood, and had given part of her salary to her mother, regularly.

The girl was passive, easily pleased, and apparently was satisfied with conditions as they existed in her home, as she made no effort either to change or improve them. She had had few educational opportunities, was not ambitious for any such advantages, and made little progress at her work.

She took a minor interest in the opposite sex, but made poor, ineffectual little attempts to preen up a bit and look pretty.

Like the mother, she lamented the failings of her brothers, but was unable to exert any effort for their benefit or improvement. Her father's weakness she accepted as meekly as her mother did, and was apparently inured to the brutal, unfatherly conduct accorded her by that parent.

Brother, two years younger, delinquent and incorrigible; was admitted to the Orphanage after various commitments to disciplinary school and reformatory. (Under "Pilferers," Case C, his history is fully recorded.)

Youngest brother, fairly bright and intelligent. Too young for any definite analysis; appears normal.

(b) **Developmental:**

He had been a very small and sickly baby, prematurely born. His father's ill-treatment of his mother during pregnancy may have hastened his birth. He had colic, convulsions, infantile disorders, and was not expected to survive. After three months, he was bottle-fed.

His early childhood was a series of contagious diseases,

which, his mother said, "he picked up one after the other." The father's drunkenness was undoubtedly responsible for the delicacy of the child, who in his mother's arms was frequently carried to various saloons in search of the father, or to different neighbors' homes, where the mother poured out her grief. She admitted that she seldom had the means to care for the child, who, in consequence, was neglected and oftentimes starved. His sister, five years older than he, assumed charge of him when his mother attempted to supplement the family income with her earnings at tailoring, during his infancy.

As soon as he was able to crawl, he took to the streets, and shortly made the acquaintance of older boys who taught him to pick pockets and utilized him for that purpose. His small size and nimble fingers were soon recognized as specially desirable adjuncts to the gang, and he was promoted to a certain leadership, in which he gloried. He influenced his younger brother and the other boys in the neighborhood to learn his ways and become members of his gang.

Through his father, he became acquainted with a number of "drunks," who were an easy and rich harvest to him and his gang. Led by him, the boys would be waiting at the corner of the saloon for the staggering drunkard, with the remnants of his pay, as their legitimate prey. It was considered a delightful lark to handle several drunkards at one time. As often as not, his father was the victim.

Sent to school at the age of five, he quickly decided that he preferred the streets, and neither his mother's entreaties nor the threats of the school attendance officers had any effect upon him. The times he did attend school he utilized for pocket-picking from the teachers and pupils. At one time, in the principal's office, awaiting attention for misconduct, he very neatly found and carried off her purse, almost under her eyes.

As he grew older, he joined another gang which contained older and more hardened young reprobates, and shortly abandoned his former companions for the benefits to be derived from the more experienced associates. Under their tutelage, he learned to pick locks with as much skill as he could pick pockets, and he preferred their company to the others.

He would now disappear from home for days at a time; and when his mother's anxiety was aroused, she would appeal to the younger boy, who knew how to hunt him up and bring him home. Later, he did the same for his brother, who followed his footsteps, and even outdid him at times.

It was the later gang that initiated him into the advantages of "wharf life"; and here he flourished, till his boldness ultimately brought him in contact with the law. He outwitted the probation officers who had him in charge, and while he improved at the disciplinary school at which he was placed, on his discharge from the institution he returned to his former associates and environment with a vengeance.

Had not his last chance been given him at the Orphanage, he would have been sent to the Reformatory till his majority.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Careful about personal appearance. Quick in movement, alert in action, and dexterous in obtaining results.

No interest in sports. Would rather fix a doll for a girl than fly a kite. Indifferent to animals.

Although considerable ill-gotten gains had been squandered by him, he had no sense of money-value.

Ready to give up his last cent, and then quite as ready to pick a pocket or a lock.

Very handy with tools and machinery. Showed great interest in the fireman's work, and later, helped to look after fires in buildings.

Very anxious to do anything to avoid attending school. Spoke privately with the employees in the house, and requested them to seek his assistance, so that he might be permitted to stay out of school.

Became great friends with the cook, in hope of becoming her kitchen assistant.

(d) **Home Conditions:**

Though the mother had tried in her timid, futile way to safeguard the home for the family, her husband's drunken brawls completely minimized her efforts as far as the two boys were concerned. The youngsters had neither the necessary, wholesome food for their active, growing bodies, nor any influence strong enough to keep them from the streets, where they spent most of their time.

The fact that the mother made a pitiful effort to keep the home neat and clean meant nothing to the boys, who would as soon sleep in or under wagons as in their beds. They picked up the manners and language of the street gamins, their obscene vocabulary being further reinforced during their father's drunken spells.

There was some affection existing between the mother and her oldest son, but either the attachment was not strong enough, or no effort was made to test its strength, for the salvation of the boy. In his early childhood, he feared his father, who brutally beat him in drunken fury; but as he grew older, he espoused his mother's cause, and kept many blows from descending on the poor woman. The father feared him, in turn, and would keep away from the house when the boy was there.

The boy resented the neighbors' knowledge of the family's affairs, and would not brook their interference. He would order them from the home, and then seek to get even, by some theft from the individual who had dared to moralize and sympathize.

(e) Mental Interests:

How to manufacture a key that should fit every possible lock.

How to employ electricity to open doors and windows noiselessly.

THE TREATMENT

The first few days of his stay at the Home were uneventful and peaceful. He was obedient, well-mannered, and apparently anxious to please. But his first Sunday at the institution was a memorable occasion for all within the portals of the place, whether as resident or as visitor. Silently, unobtrusively, and skillfully, he went from the pocket of the director in the office to that of the humble visitor in the children's hall, and democratically and impartially extracted from each whatever contribution his nimble fingers could "touch." Then he made a clean getaway with a substantial sum as the result of his prowess.

The monitor who had been appointed his Big Brother, feeling that his absorption in a ball-game held at the Home grounds that afternoon had been responsible for the other's defalcation, earnestly and thoroughly searched every nook and cranny favored by the city's youthful reprobates. After several days of fruitless effort, he pounced upon him after nightfall, in a forsaken lot near

his home, surrounded by his gang of ragamuffins, who were making merry with sandwiches, ice-cream cones, and bottles of pop, and enjoying an account of his escapades.

"Cheese it!" he cried to his comrades, who scampered away, like rats to their holes; and then, facing the older boy, who was seriously regarding him, he announced, "I was coming to sleep there to-night anyway; I ain't got no more money." And he willingly accompanied his mentor.

He was brought into the office, much the worse for the wear and tear of his wanderings, but otherwise unrepentant and unashamed; rather prepared to boast of his exploits.

"Do you think it right to pick a man's pocket? How should you like to have your pocket picked by somebody?" he was asked.

He looked up quizzically, his eyes gleaming and his mouth puckered in amusement. "I just dare anyone to pick my pocket — let me jus' catch 'im."

"What would you do?"

"Huh?" he queried. "Jus' won't let him. I ain't no duck to have my pockets picked. I'm too quick." With that he turned his pockets inside out, and said with a doleful grin, "Ain't got nuthin' in 'em anyway now."

"But you have n't answered the first question. Do you think it right to pick a man's pocket?"

He looked thoughtful and evidently perplexed. "Well," he said after a pause, "the man ain't goin' to give you the mon', so what's you goin' to do about it?"

"How about earning it?"

He screwed up his small face in mockery and laughed outright. "Say," he questioned, "what do you earn a week?"

Rather a rude question, but he was answered to his satisfaction, for he shrugged his shoulders triumphantly and waved his hand in derision. "Gee," he said, in cool, scornful tones, "I can make more 'an that in a day. I got a talent in my hands, I tell you," — he flung out his hands and regarded them lovingly, — "they can make more money for me than you know. Bet cher life, they're all right."

"Who told you about the talent? Who said your hands were talented?"

"That guy in the school said they're so quick and — I guess I forgot that word — s'pose he meant smart, and that they're sintinctly talented that way."

Suddenly he leaned across the desk. "'Scuse me," he said; and the next moment, he held up triumphantly the watch that his light

fingers had "touched," even before his intentions were realized. "You see," he said, laughing merrily, "how I do it? One! two! three! — and it's gone! Ain't it some talent? Here, take your watch! I don't want ter keep it — jus' took it to show you."

"For what else have you a talent? Anything you'd like to be when you grow up?"

He scratched his head thoughtfully. "Well," he ruminated, "I guess I got a talent for locks, too. I can make a key for any lock made. Want ter see me? You jus' show me a lock, and I'll show you how I open it," he boasted.

"But what do you want to be when you grow up?"

"Guess I'll blow up safes with dynamite, and make lots of money and have bully times."

"Suppose you're caught and put in prison, what then?"

His eyes narrowed and he tossed his head. "But I'm a slick one, I am, honest! I ain't no fool — Wait till I grow up, then they can't catch me."

"If you're slick, how is it they caught you now?"

"Aw, gee, them blokes can run down the little fellars easy. When I'm big, I bet you the cops can't get me."

"All right," he was told; and then came the question, which, unknown to him, held his fate. "Say, how would you like to be partners and stay here till you grow up?"

His astonishment was plainly manifested in his face. "You want ter be my pardner?" he queried, as if not believing his senses.

"Your partner, son," was the emphatic reply.

"Sure thing," he cried gleefully, and extended a dirty little paw; "shake," he said.

"Now it's all arranged," he was informed very quietly. "You stay here till you grow up, and come to your partner every time you want to pick a pocket or a lock, and talk it over."

There was rather a rueful expression on his face at that. Evidently instinct warned him of a trap, and for a moment he repented; but he was a game sport.

"Sure, you got to do that with pardners," he said, bravely enough.

A solemn compact was then entered into, by which he bound himself to come to his "pardner" when ready to do any "job," and not to run away without due warning. In return, he was to be given a good home, plenty of "eats," and be taught in the manual-training classes whatever he liked.

"In couple of weeks, bet you I'll know how to make a key for all the locks in the world," was his parting remark, as he left the office to be cleaned up and fed.

The next morning, bright and early, he was in the office. "Say, pardner," said he, "you got lots of junk in that basement. I know a place where the geezer will pay you lots of money for that."

The "junk" referred to consisted of various supplies left by the plumbers who had been working in the basement the previous day.

"All right, son," he was informed, "if the junk belongs to your partner, you may sell it for what you can get from the dealer. Let's go down and see."

Standing before the "junk," he was told that, inasmuch as the materials lying there belonged to the plumbers, his "pardner" did not think it quite right to dispose of them before notifying the owners.

"But they won't give it ter you. Wait, you see!" he warned.

Meanwhile, awaiting the arrival of the plumbers, it was suggested to him to accompany his "pardner" to school. His eyes mirrored his indignation and dismay. It was obvious that he repented of the bargain into which he had permitted himself to be drawn, but loyalty to one's "pardner" was paramount. "I never had a pardner like you," he observed, as he gravely permitted himself to be persuaded to take the unbeaten track to school; "you're funny. What's you want ter go to school for? Don't cher know enough?"

During that sober, conventional walk to the school that morning, it was painstakingly explained to him that education assists a man in his profession; if he intended to be a pickpocket when he grew up, why, a knowledge how to count the money he would pick from pockets would undoubtedly rebound to his advantage. Further, people would not be able to charge him double the amount of a thing because he did not understand figures.

"That's so," he said, thoughtfully; "them darn geezers first want to see your junk and then pony up a jit [nickel] for what's worth a buck [a dollar], if you don't watch out what they hand you out. Plenty times they cheated me."

"But they never would have done so, if they knew that you could count," he was told.

"That's so," he said again; "but say, pardner, I don't have to stay in the poke [school] all day?"

"Of course not," as he gazed up keenly, suspicion and combat in his eyes. "The only thing is, that you're some smart guy, believe me, and is there any reason why you can't win the school prize as well as another fellow who is n't so smart?"

"Sure thing I can," he said heartily; "got to dig [study]."

By dint of careful reasoning, that it would be a remarkable thing for him to show all those who did n't believe that he could, if he wanted, carry off honors in school, as readily as he carried off the contents of pockets, and that learning would enable him to get even "with them skinnners," he reluctantly consented to give the matter a "try out."

He was placed in the ungraded class, under the charge of a very able and well-trained teacher, and his Big Brother was instructed to call for him and accompany him home. "Watch out for that junk!" was his good-bye to his "pardner."

That day in school was a sad one for his conceit. "Say," he confided regretfully, "them little guys know more 'an me."

"Going to let them get ahead of you, eh?"

"Nix on the job," he fired back; "I'll show 'em."

He left for a game of ball in the playground, but returned almost immediately. "What did I tell you?" he queried angrily. "Them plumbers don't want to give their junk away."

"Let them keep their old junk then. You just show those fellows in school you can win the prize away from them, and you and your partner will go downtown and have some good time."

"All right, pard, I'm it!" He saluted brightly, smiled, and went back to the game interrupted by the tempting "junk."

Hardly was the game over, when the manual-training shops awaited him. Here he felt quite at home and was busy and contented. He showed a marked predilection for printing, which was immediately utilized for his benefit.

For several weeks he was not left a moment to himself, though he was kept unaware that the constant supervision was intentional. He, at first thought, regarded his Big Brother, who was his shadow, as a necessary institutional evil; and later, became fond of the fine, wholesome boy who was his friend and comrade. Two or three times a day, he would glide into the office with suggestions of various "jobs" to be done. Always a lengthy argument would follow about the inadvisability of "hooking" school or a class because of a "job that was n't worth while at all."

"But I'll lose my talent in my fingers if I stop for a long time," he protested.

"Nonsense! Give your fingers a rest and they'll grow stronger and bigger to do whatever you want them," he was told.

Temptations however assailed him so strongly that several times he managed to elude vigilance and run away for a day or two. Then he would return, himself, come very quietly and shamefacedly into the office, and seek pardon most humbly. "You know,

pardner," he would say apologetically, "it's not right to do a job without you — but you're a funny kind of a pardner, anyway."

Long private conferences and walks would ensue, during which a moral sense of right and justice would be brought home clearly to him. His affection for his mother was noticed, and that excellent quality was used as an additional means to work upon his character. His mother's hard lot in life was fully presented to him. It aroused his sympathy, and he expressed himself as willing to do anything to lighten her burdens. When it was forcibly presented to him that having a pickpocket for a son would be even a greater tragedy to her than having a drunkard for a husband, he blinked in amazement and blurted out, "Why, I won't ever beat her like him. You don't get drunk when you are a pickpocket."

As the most convincing proof of his mother's future agony, in case he became an adult pickpocket, the mother was requested to come to the office, and in his presence the matter was brought up. The poor woman burst into tears, and hoped that death would be good to her and take her away from the world before she witnessed any such unfortunate ending of her oldest son.

"Well," said the boy magnanimously, wiping the tears from her eyes and patting her heaving shoulders, "don't carry on like that. If you want to die if I pick pockets, well, all right then, don't die, and honest to God! I'm going to try not to do it." Then he shrugged his small shoulders in surprise. "Funny!" he ejaculated, "that she did n't get fits before. She knew I was doing it all the time, and she did n't want to die before. Guess she's tired of them beatings."

He responded very favorably to the normal, wholesome influence of home thrown about him. Good food, early hours and healthful recreation had excellent results upon his physique. He gained in weight and seemed stronger. He was allowed to spend much of his spare time with the fireman and other employees in the building, of whom he was fond. He frequently visited the kitchen and assisted the cook in peeling potatoes, paring vegetables and sharpening her kitchen knives. At one time, the cook missed an old-fashioned gold brooch and suspicion was directed to him. Taken into the office and questioned regarding the matter, he freely admitted his guilt.

"When I took it," he explained, "I meant to take it to the old geezer on E—— St., who met me yesterday in the street and said it was a shame such a smart boy like me should be doing nothing for a long time. You know he would melt the gold and nobody

would know something about it; but — I felt that it was n't right — something made me think that I ought to tell you first — and I could n't make up my mind, so I hid the pin, till my heart would stop bothering me."

He himself returned the pin to the cook with apologies.

He also liked to be sent on errands, and would at first return with his pockets laden with ill-gotten goods; but subsequently, he vouchsafed the information that he would turn back to the stores and disgorge his pockets, "with them loons [the shopkeepers] knowing nothing about it."

In school he won the monthly prize given by the principal to the best student of the ungraded class, and of course was fêted downtown and taken to a theatre. He enjoyed the treat immensely and remarked, "Say, it's bully to be a swell guy." In three years he reached the Sixth Grade, and as he had manifested great interest in the printing plant, and had actually been one of the leading printers on the monthly publication of the *Home*, it was decided to permit him to take up printing, with the view of turning his avocation into a future trade for him.

He was offered a mechanical training in a technical school, and joyously wanted the opportunity, till he was informed that he would have to be graduated from the public school, in which he still had two years' work before him. He hesitated and avowed his aversion to continue schooling. "What's the use?" he asked; "I'll never be a teacher anyhow; and besides, I don't want to be a teacher and bother my head with lots of stupid kids. I'd rather anyhow be a printer and make money doing good jobs." As these jobs were decidedly to be preferred to his former "jobs," he was encouraged at the vocation he had selected; and on his sixteenth birthday, he announced, "Now I'm ready to start in the world for myself like Benjamin Franklin." With the latter as an example and guide, there were no further doubts entertained about his future.

He had not taken kindly to games and sports, but had manifested a rather tame interest in the Scouts, which, after a while, became stronger; and after a year had passed without any outbreak on his part, he was permitted to join the Scout Troop. Returning from a hike one day, he complained that he felt unwell, and came down with influenza, which was then ravaging the city. During his illness, he was given every possible care and attention, for which he felt both gratitude and amazement. "Say, partner" (it had become partner instead of "pardner"), "you know, I've been thinking an awful lot while I lay here. Everybody has been

so good to me and been doing and making things for me, and I giving them so much trouble and bother, I guess it pays to be good; I don't suppose anybody would care whether a pickpocket lived or tossed the bucket. I guess no pickpocket for me ever."

Some time before, his younger brother had been admitted to the Home, and was now duplicating the elder's former exploits. He was genuinely grieved and concerned about the boy's delinquencies, and would frequently argue and plead with his brother to behave himself. Often, he took the law into his own hands, and administered a beating to the culprit, who would calmly assert, "Aw, chee, I'm not badder 'n you were." This never failed to enrage him, and he would expostulate long and volubly. He would then come into the office, sad and weary, and would remark hopefully, "Well, you see he is very young and has no sense. When he gets older, he would n't be so foolish." He was the Big Brother assigned to the boy; and it may be said for him that he performed his duty most conscientiously and faithfully.

It was the printing instructor who announced that the boy was able to work as a full-fledged printer, and it was he who assisted him to procure his first job as a printer's assistant. He earned a small salary for several months, and was retained at the Home till his earning capacity would permit him to return to his own home and assist in the support of his mother. Before he had been employed a year, he was earning \$15 a week.

"Good-bye, partner, thank you!" he said to the Superintendent when the latter parted from him.

THE RESULT

When he left the Orphanage, he had \$200 that he had saved from his salaries, and he informed his mother that "now good times are coming for you." He sought and found a small apartment in a better neighborhood, undertaking to pay the rental himself; purchased some new furniture, which was sorely needed; and informed his father that now things would be changed and, if he wanted to remain at home, he must simply give up drinking.

The father, frightened and greatly intimidated by the determined action of his oldest son, promised. Fortunately for him, as well as for the members of his family, prohibition coming into effect, he was perhaps better able to keep the promise he had been forced to give. Also, the son took it upon himself to see that the father was employed at his trade of carpentering, with the happy result that the mother was able, for the first time in her life, to realize her hope of a home.

In March, 1922, a letter received by the "pardner" from the boy, stated that "things were just swell." In view of the fact that he was now employed in a printing-shop, the boy was in receipt of a higher salary, and asked his friend whether he did n't approve of his contemplated plan to keep his father to the straight and narrow path, by offering to purchase a home for the parents.

"You see," he writes, "my old man now sees that he made a big mistake all his life and wants to be a man now. If he'll know that I stop paying for the house the moment he breaks his word, I guess that will keep him right, don't you think so?"

He has been living at home, giving his salary to his mother, and trying his utmost to create and maintain a home for the benefit of the entire family.

CASE C

OTTO L——, "A STRAGGLER"

(BROTHER OF PHILIP L——)

Entered December 15, 1917. Age 11 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Stealing at every possible opportunity.
- (b) Member of a gang of evil-doers and pickpockets, and completely under its influence and control.
- (c) Stealing from market-stalls and fruit-stands, and selling what he could.
- (d) Offering assistance to hucksters, for the purpose of stealing from them.
- (e) Incurable liar.
- (f) Bunking out for weeks at a time.
- (g) Smoking cigarettes and the butts of cigars found in the streets.
- (h) Using vile and obscene language.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Constant truancy.
- (b) Defiant to school attendance officers and teachers.
- (c) Evil influence on other children.
- (d) Inattentive, disorderly, and disobedient.
- (e) Several years' retardation.

3. HOME

- (a) Audacious and unmanageable.
- (b) Objectionable language to mother and younger brother.
- (c) Stealing from parents, and keeping change when sent on errand by mother, or a neighbor.
- (d) No feeling of responsibility, desire for affection, or interest in home displayed.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Completely under the dominion of his gang, he obeyed its dictates implicitly.
- (b) No leadership ability; blindly followed the commands of the stronger will influencing him at the time.

- (c) Antagonistic to neighbors, upon whose cash-boxes he set the gang, while he hid and watched depredations.
- (d) Would frequently act as "stool-pigeon" for his friends.
- (e) Would help his brother in attacks upon his father and other "drunks."
- (f) In Juvenile Court three times from 1916 to 1917.
 - 10-24-16. Charged with being habitual and incorrigible truant. Committed to the P—— School (semi-reformatory).
 - 11-13-17. Minor without proper care. Had tramped for weeks and run away to Philadelphia. Committed to the Children's Bureau.
 - 11-29-17. Minor without proper care. The boy had been committed to the Children's Bureau. He stole money and ran away from the institution in which he was placed. He was then given to his parents, from whom he also stole and ran away. Mother asks commitment. Sent to the Orphanage.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Fine physical specimen. Several inches taller than older brother and fifteen pounds more in weight.
- (b) Light brown hair, very fair complexion, bright blue eyes, and freckled face. Small features.
- (c) Well-developed, sturdy, and strong hands with a powerful grip.
- (d) Good vision. No tonsils or adenoids.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report, November, 1917:
 - Intelligence: Essentially normal. I. C. .94.
 - Character: Poor hereditary basis. (Father drunkard.)
 - Health: Essentially normal.
 - Impression: Poor environment undoubtedly responsible for boy's poor behavior. Would recommend that he be placed in a good private home in the suburbs and supervised as much as possible.
- (b) Personality Traits:
 - Cheerful, pleasant, and easy-going.
 - Will tell a lie — eyes wide-open, clear, and frank, assisting him in his declaration that he is being wrongly accused.

Untidy in person and strenuously objects to enforced ablutions.

Readily makes promises, and as readily breaks them.

Easily influenced by anyone who cares to take the trouble to lead him.

Very obliging disposition, and always prepared to answer any call upon his services.

Fond of good times and likes "plenty of eats."

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity: Same as Case B.

(b) Developmental:

He had been a large baby at birth, weight ten pounds, in marked contradistinction to his older brother, who had been a puny weakling. The mother said that he had been no trouble at all — "he just raised himself." He had been weaned early, but "ate and drank everything, even beer," according to the information given by his eldest sister, who, in the main, had been entrusted with his care during infancy.

He never "caught sicknesses" like his brother, and even failed to be affected by the latter's contagious ailments, though he had been intentionally put into the same bed by the mother, who believed that, since a child had to have the "children's diseases," it would be best for the two boys to have them at the same time and be done with them.

Like his brother, he took to the streets as soon as he could crawl, and very early became a disciple of the various "gangs" and loafers that infested the neighborhood.

It was his brother who initiated him in wrongdoing, but, unlike the latter, he had no leadership ability. He was the willing and easy tool of any juvenile reprobate, younger or older than he, who chose to make use of him, and at no time took the initiative in any contemplated mischief.

Unlike his brother, he had no affection for his mother, who showed more partiality to him, by reason of his attractive appearance, in which she took great pride. He appeared to have more influence with the father than any of the other members of the family, and the paternal parent showed his special liking to the boy by taking him to his

favorite saloon and there regaling him with his favorite drinks.

At the age of eight, he was exceedingly troublesome and difficult at home; and a year later, in 1915, his mother found it necessary to report him to the Children's Bureau as incorrigible. He was put under probation, but continued to steal and remain away from home for nights at a time.

In October, 1916, he was committed to a disciplinary school, where he remained for nearly a year. On his return home, he resumed all his former activities and associations with avidity, his wrongdoings becoming so numerous and glaring, that he was brought before the Juvenile Court for the third time, at the age of eleven.

He was given a chance in the Orphanage, where his brother was at that time showing marked improvement.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Constantly pleading to go on errands, appropriating any money given him, and bunking out.

Always ready with a plausible lie in explanation of any wrongdoing or misdemeanor.

Has a mania for tramping.

Would seek divers ways and means of avoiding attendance at school, the favorite method being to ask "to leave the room," which, being granted, would mean a leave-taking for several days.

Liked to look for deliveries made by the baker and fruit-vender, and steal from the wagon, while the men were busy. Would offer to watch the horse and wagon while the delivery was being made; which offer, being accepted, would result in much stolen booty, later sold throughout the neighborhood at a fraction of its cost to the legitimate owner.

None of his brother's interest in mechanical things. Mopping the floors attracted him, nothing else.

No sex-tendencies.

Cruel to animals.

(d) **Home Conditions:**

Same as in Case B.

(e) **Mental Interests:**

None.

THE TREATMENT

It was indeed a very interesting and human procession that wound its way through the crowded streets, closely following and exhorting him, in its own choice vernacular, not to yield to any wiles that might be exerted upon him, but to remain faithful and loyal to the "gang."

Escorted by the dismayed young social worker, who vainly employed moral suasion to disperse his allies, he walked proudly to the Orphanage, pledging his allegiance to his friends, and giving scant heed to the anxious pleas of the worker and the threats uttered weakly and uselessly by his mother. The unhappy creature had petitioned the Judge to send him to the Orphanage, to be with his brother, instead of to the Reformatory, as His Honor had contemplated, in view of his record and latest exploits; and for several days she had assisted the social worker in the search for him throughout the city.

When, at last, he had been unearthed among his friends, the mother and the worker had much ado to get the consent of those worthies to permit him to accompany them to his new home. It was only the threat of arrest by a good-natured policeman, who providentially hove in sight, and was appealed to by the distracted worker, that prevailed upon the "gang" to permit him to depart. As it was, he was joined from various nooks and corners by divers comrades, till he had quite a following dogging his footsteps and watching an opportunity to effect a rescue in his behalf.

The worker holding tightly to his arm and leading the procession, and his mother struggling in the rear to scatter the young rascals by calling them such "fearful" names as loafers, bums, and tramps, and advising them to "git away or ye'll go to jail," formed a spectacle as unique as it was interesting. As the line of young rapskillions neared the Orphanage, there was a sudden quick rush around the "hero" of the occasion, by the members of the "gang," and he would probably have left his frantic mother and the equally frantic worker to bear each other company right there and then, had not the irascible old doctor of the neighborhood appeared upon the scene.

That gentleman, living next door to the institution, was at once the avowed friend and enemy of all boys in general, and those who both loved and mocked him across his fence, and from his tree-tops, in particular. He sized up the situation in his own way, grew red and angry, raised his stout cane, and pommeled indiscriminately the youngsters within its range, to the tune of "Now, you young villains, will you behave yourselves!"

"Hey, Dippy, cheese it!" yelled a voice, the good doctor declared, from somewhere over his head; and in a twinkling, "Dippy" and his followers were flying in all directions, while the distressed young worker was expressing her gratitude to the "man sent by God," as the mother insisted.

With one hand brandishing his cane and the other holding to the ear of the youth who but for him would now have been a free agent, the doctor came puffing and panting into the office, and announced, "If this young rascal thinks I am going to tolerate a bad boy around here, he is very much mistaken. Just let me catch him in my yard." Then in an undertone, "Fine little chap, that! Hope he turns out all right. That gang of ragamuffins would have got him, had n't I chanced along. Glad he's getting a chance — wish those other little devils could, too!" And the doctor, suddenly recollecting the call to which he had been hastening, departed, after admonishing the lad not to think of picking any of the apples from his trees without receiving permission first.

"Chee, yer got apples?" was the only retort made by the youngster, his eyes shining in anticipation of imaginary feasts.

His mother, now bursting into violent sobs, besought him to be a good boy, not to run away, to have mercy upon her broken heart, and so forth, to which he responded with a sharp, curt, "Aw, shut yer trap!"

The young worker, shocked at such unfilial conduct, impetuously cried out in remonstrance, and lectured him on the error of his ways; to which he replied indifferently, "Say, yer mind yer own durned business."

"Well, young man, if that's the way you speak to people, it does n't seem that we're going to be friends," he was informed, in very cool, deliberate tones.

He spun round like a top. "Yer wanta be friends with me?" he questioned.

"Why not?"

He disdained to make an answer, but asked a question himself. "Are yer the boss here?"

"Why do you ask?"

"'Cause I wanta know the boss."

"What for?"

"'Cause I wanta know 'im," he insisted.

"And when you do know him, what then?"

"I wanta see if I'll like him."

"Suppose you don't like him; what will you do then?"

"Dunno," he shrugged his shoulders carelessly; "I'll ask Dippy — he's smart."

"What will you do if you do like the boss?"

"Aw right, let 'im be friends with me an' Dippy."

"Well, look! Now do you like the boss?"

He looked with a keen, appraising glance, which seemed to size up and judge everything and everybody in the office, and then countered with another question.

"Say, do yer lick boys that 're bad?"

Before a reply could be framed, his mother suddenly broke silence, and burst out incoherently, "That's it! That's it! All he is afraid of is a licking. Just give him a good licking, please, and —"

"Say, why don't yer dry up? Shut yer trap, I 'ready tol' yer," her son interrupted, with a dark frown.

"Seems that your mother is right, young man. Perhaps a good licking might teach you to be respectful to your mother," he was told, in a severe voice.

"Got 'nuff lickings 'ready," he replied sulking.

"Not enough, not enough," put in his mother.

"Aw, say," — He checked the invectives upon his lips and looked rather frightened. Then, in a meeker tone, he addressed the "boss": "But I did n't do nuthin' to yer." His voice was decidedly conciliatory.

He was still afraid of a licking, despite the many to which he artlessly confessed.

"Do you think it's nothing to have to listen to you saying nasty things to your mother and this young lady?" he was asked.

He looked from one to the other; he was evidently puzzled. "'Twas n't ter yer. How'd it hurt yer?" he queried in his amazement.

"A man is not a gentleman who listens to a fellow insulting ladies and does not give him a licking for that."

"Aw, but they 'sulted me; they mixed in my business," he pleaded in extenuation.

"Your mother has a right to mix in your business, and the young lady did not insult you when she told you how badly you were behaving to your mother," he was informed, to his apparent discomfiture. Obviously, he was afraid that a licking would be administered to him to avenge the ladies, and he was greatly distressed at the thought.

He hung his head and attempted to avert the punishment he deemed to be hovering over him, by extravagant promises for future good behavior and fervent oaths never to "speak mean to no ladies no more."

Requested to ask his mother's and the worker's pardon for the discourtesy he had shown them, he obeyed with an alacrity that boded ill for the permanence of his vows. He was manifestly too eager to do as requested, and avoid punishment, for any moral influence to accrue to him from the incident.

"Say," he apologized to the young worker, "I'm dreadful sorry I tol' yer to mind yer own business; yer don't need ter, if yer don't wanta." Then, turning to his mother with a scowl, "I'm not gonna say bad things ter yer any more if yer stop jabbering and limme alone." Then, wheeling quickly about, "Yer not gonna give me a licking now?"

His mother shook her head in disapproval. "If he gets off so easy, he'll be something awful," was her warning.

He turned hastily to her. "Aw—," he began, and stopped, hanging his head.

He made his adieus to his parent with a sorry grace, and was taken upstairs for a cleaning up, protesting and avowing his determination to run away, "so it's no use fixin' me up." His brother, evidently ashamed of his behavior and very much annoyed, came into the office, crestfallen and embarrassed, very anxious to say something, but not knowing just what would be appropriate for the occasion.

Being encouraged, he said apologetically, "I guess I'm afraid he's worser'n I ever was. He's some tough guy, believe me!" He coughed uncomfortably and managed to blurt out at last, "Want me to give 'im a licking?"

The offer was accepted with apparent gratitude and thanks, but it was carefully explained to the "Big Brother," who, in reality, was several inches shorter, and frail in comparison to the sturdy youngster, that different ways and means would have to be found in dealing with his brother.

"All right," he said, with a deep sigh, "I'll talk to him, but I'm afraid it's not going to do good; he's too tough."

The older boy took his responsibility as Big Brother in fact, and also by appointment, with grave earnestness. It was he who lectured and watched over the boy, and, when discouraged, would come into the office dragging the youngster after him, and lodge his complaint.

"I talk to him and I talk to him," he bitterly lamented on one occasion, "and I might just as well talk to the dog, who would have more sense and listen to me, I'm sure. He ran away four times this week to his friends —"

"Aw, they're your friends too," interrupted the boy.

"Keep still," returned the other, with an angry shake of the head; "I got nothin' to do with them no more." Then he continued: "And I found Dippy telling him to rob that store, so I punched his nose and made him come home."

He had kept his threat to "run away," and had been "on the run" for the first month of his stay in the institution. Again and again, upon his return, which was always forced, never voluntary, he would reiterate his promise to be "a good boy and not run 'way no more," and would, with tears and entreaties, seek to ward off the threatened punishment of a licking, which he greatly feared.

In school he had been started in the First Grade, as, despite his really good intellect and the time spent in the disciplinary school, he was hardly able to read and write. It was with great difficulty on the part of the teacher, who took infinite pains with him, and by promises of the "good times" that he liked, at the Home, that ultimately he learned to go straight to school, without suddenly side-stepping on the way, and disappearing, till sought for and found by his brother.

He was not interested in the manual-training classes or in any of the other activities that engrossed the boys. Games and sports offered no inducement to him. He did evince a certain desire to become a Scout; and when asked for the reason, said that it would give him a chance to go "tramping." Pressed to tell why he loved to "tramp," he told how easy it was to go to the "farmer ladies," and get money and goodies from them. "All yer have to tell 'em is that yer're a poor boy with a stepmother who beats yer, and yer father drinks, and yer had to run away from home; and yer have some good time, believe me!"

He was promised "good times" without the necessity of tramping for them, if his conduct came up to the standard. He gradually permitted himself to respect and obey those in authority, but refused to recognize the right of any person to be respected who, according to his estimate, occupied an inferior position, or who, according to his theory, did not dress in accordance with the part.

Once he was brought into the office by the incensed matron, who complained that he had employed disrespectful language when requested by her to leave the dining-room, which he had insisted upon turning into a play-room for several of his friends and himself.

"Why should I respect her?" he asked in shocked self-defense. "She's only a maid."

It took time and patience to impress upon him the importance

of a more democratic spirit. Finally, tired of the argument but still not convinced, he reverted to the cause of the dispute, and said, still remonstrating, "If she ain't a maid, she has no business to wear a plain dress like a maid, anyhow."

There was in him always the desire to find and submit to a master; but should the master relax vigilance and permit someone else to gain ascendancy over his mind, then he would, as readily as not, cease to recognize him as a master. While his mind was very fertile with schemes and plans for mischief, he himself never took the initiative in their execution; always there was some stronger will directing and influencing his actions.

Finding that his brother, despite his willingness and earnestness, was unable to sway him directly, another boy, one of the trusted and proved monitors, was put in immediate charge of him. This boy was with him always, and in time succeeded in gaining his confidence and respect. To him he once confided: "Honest, I did n't want to steal the perfume from the drug-store, but something came to me and said to me, 'Go on and don't be a big fool, and take it!' so I could n't help myself and, before I knew it, the drug-store man was not looking, and the bottle got into my pocket."

He was very fond of tramping to the nearest city, a distance of fifty miles, and when worn out with walking, would get a ride in a wagon, an automobile, or even a train, by means of a piteous, well-concocted story of the sufferings and beatings he had at home, and the necessity for his running away to the other city, where his own mother's sister would love and care for him. Always he was rewarded with sympathy and pity and the more substantial offerings of money which he desired. Upon his return from such a trip, he said, "People are big fools; they believe what you tell 'em."

After his wanderings, he would be kept in bed as a punishment, for several days at a time, and that seemed to him the hardest possible lot in life. He would plead to be pardoned, and pray "to be killed" if ever he should indulge in a runaway escapade again.

Depriving him of the treats he loved also had the effect of reaching his vulnerable part; and being compelled to abstain from his favorite "eats" nearly broke his heart. As he was slowly weaned away from his former gang, which had been no idle or petty force to deal with during his early days at the Orphanage, he became more tractable and less antagonistic to his elders and supervisors. The fact that several of the older members of his gang had been apprehended by the police, and were serving terms for their wrongdoings, was presented to him in all its drab and forbidding possibilities. Contrasts were pointed out to him in

the happy, promising lives of the boys in the Home, his brother's included.

As Scouting seemed the chief interest his mind could conceive, every effort was made to arouse his desire to become a Scout. At first all endeavors were fruitless; but when the Scouts returned from a hike, with enthusiastic descriptions of their adventures and pleasures, and impatiently awaited the arrival of the next one, he strolled into the office, and requested most ardently to be permitted to "be a Scout, too."

He was put on six months' probation, as his brother had been. If at the end of that time, he showed positive improvement, he should be permitted to join the Junior Scouts.

He did try desperately. Not once did he leave the building without permission or flagrantly break any rules. He did purloin the teacher's purse from her desk, but on the way home felt that he had done wrong, and turned back and himself delivered the purse to the teacher, to her consternation and utter amazement. He had improved in school, meanwhile, and was promoted to a higher grade, where he was progressing satisfactorily.

As the time of his probation was almost ended, he was sent on an errand as a test. Before leaving, he had looked intently at the five-dollar bill in his hand, and said, "It can't tell me to do bad things no more. I'm *not* going to steal it."

That was in the late afternoon. At midnight he had not returned and his sorely disappointed mentor was about to retire and abandon his watch, when the timid summons of the night-bell, being answered, brought to view a weary, foot-sore culprit, covered with dust and dirt, perspiring from every pore, and breathing heavily as if utterly spent.

From the torn bosom of his blouse, he produced a two-dollar bill, and stammered, "It wanted me to spend that, too; but honest I said, 'No, no,' to it — 'I want to be a Scout — let me alone!'"

It appeared that he had been tempted beyond his strength. He had, according to his confession, "hitched on to a truck" and then jumped on a train and landed in some country district, where, hungry and tired, he appealed to the first housewife he could find, for food and shelter. The good woman had fed him and provided a bed for him, but when he "got up in the middle of the night and something told me to swipe the kids' bank on the shelf where I seen her put it, and I wanted to be a Scout so bad, so I jumped through the window and — honest! — paid my carfare with the fiver, and come home — and please, please — let me be a Scout — I won't be bad again — honest!"

He was forgiven, but his probation period was lengthened. He also sought ways and means of earning three dollars, so that he might repay the money he had spent, and succeeded in influencing his former foe, the doctor, to permit him to answer telephone calls, sweep the yard, mop floors, and shovel snow, for a certain amount in payment for his services. He very proudly brought the money to the office when he had earned it.

He was duly enrolled as a Junior Scout, and for a long period gave no further trouble, either at the Home or in school.

Suddenly, out of a clear sky, when his reformation seemed certain, and his difficulties were regarded as satisfactorily and permanently adjusted, it was reported that he was missing.

Several of the monitors remembered seeing a strange and uncouth youth in conversation with him the previous afternoon, on his way home from school, but had attached no importance to that, thinking that the boy was a schoolmate of his. His brother, taken into consultation and given a description of the unknown companion, immediately cried out in dismay, "Why, that's Dippy! He'll sure get him into trouble now."

Investigation revealed that "Dippy," who was eighteen years old and had been an inmate of the Reformatory for the past six months, had managed to outwit his supervisor and escape from the institution the day previous. Officers were making a careful search for him throughout the city.

Late that night, information was brought that "Dippy" had been apprehended and returned to his institution, and that a younger boy, who was accompanying him, had, at a few words from "Dippy," flown like an arrow from his side, and before the officer could take any action, had disappeared completely from view. "Dippy" refused to give the slightest information concerning the boy.

Ten days passed before any news was received of the youngster, for whom an exhaustive hunt had been made. "Dippy," when seen and appealed to, had closed his strong jaws tightly and refused even to admit that he knew the name of the boy who had been with him at the time of his apprehension.

Unexpectedly came a wire bringing the following message from the runaway:

"Please come and take me home. They are keeping me here at — Jail."

It was from a country district, about sixty miles from the city.

A hasty visit was made to the Jail, and the unpleasant discovery

followed, that his excellent conduct for more than a year had suffered a most unfortunate and serious relapse.

It was learned that he had boarded a train leaving the city, clad in his Scout uniform and absolutely penniless. When the conductor came for his fare, he cried bitterly and told a sad story of a dying mother who wanted to see him, and whom he was trying to get to before she died. He aroused the sympathy of the passengers and the conductor, and the money was raised among them for his fare. Then he was landed in the country town that he said he wanted to go to.

Here he applied to a farmer for a job, telling a pitiful tale of the cruelty and suffering he had had to bear from a wicked step-mother, till he was compelled to run away from home; and as the farmer was both anxious to secure help and to assist the "poor boy" at the same time, he employed him at eight dollars a week and his full keep. As the boy was large and well developed, the farmer readily believed he was of the age — fifteen years — that he claimed.

For the following three days, both the farmer and his wife thought that, by some miracle, they had been sent a gem; but when, on arising on the morning of the fourth day, they discovered that twenty-three dollars and the "gem" were missing, they abruptly changed their minds.

While they were hunting for him, the boy jumped on the train, and was taken to the next county, where he again found an unsuspecting, generous employer, whom also he victimized, and then proceeded to repeat his interesting experiences in the next town to which he had tramped.

Unfortunately for him, however, this time he landed in the house of the sheriff of the town, and through the sympathy he aroused by a most harrowing tale that he told to the sheriff's wife, was admitted to the home.

That evening at supper, the sheriff asked his young guest regarding his previous whereabouts, and was regaled with the information that the boy had been an inmate of an institution where he had been beaten and starved till he could stand it no longer, and was compelled to run away. As he was very anxious to work and make his own living, he would be most thankful for any kind of work, no matter how hard and difficult.

But the sheriff had been eying the rather new scout uniform and the fine, sturdy body which it clad. "You don't look starved, sonny, and that's a mighty fine suit you got on," he said.

Nothing daunted, the boy told a story of his father dying and leaving him some money with which he had been purchasing food and clothes, unknown to the brutal institution; and to prove the truth of his statements, produced a roll of bills, which he said was the remnant left him of his father's fortune.

The bills aroused the sheriff's suspicions and he watched the boy intently. When all was still at night, the sheriff, hearing a slight noise in the boy's room, lay awake listening. Soon he heard a soft footstep at his door, which was craftily opened, and the boy entered, going directly to the sheriff's clothes on the chair. The boy's lodgings were immediately transferred to the county jail, and the next day, the sheriff, learning of the boy's latest escapades and real address, sent the wire.

It was a truly repentant boy, with a shamed, hang-dog air, who was brought into the small, dingy office of the county jail and compelled to face the friend to whom he had begged the sheriff to send his message, craving assistance in his plight.

His sobs were so violent that his body shook with them. "It's all on account of Dippy," he cried. "I did n't want to be bad no more. But he flew the coop, and he came to see me and he said he knew how we could do a job and make lots of money and go away for good. And at first something told me not to do it and then something said I better do it, and Dippy told me I got to do it, or he would go and tell lots of bad things he knows about me — so I could n't help it and I ran away with him. We were going to do the job when the cops caught us — and Dippy whistled to me to run away — so I run away."

"Why did n't you run home then?" he was asked.

"Because I was afraid — and — something told me to run away to W—— and then something told me to take things from the farmer and — and — I'm sorry — and I'll never be bad no more, I swear by God!"

He continued his pleas and promises on the way home. "Please — please give me another chance — please!" he urged continually.

While it was a mooted question whether or not to give him the chance he begged, he settled the matter for himself by again yielding to the "something that told me to take it," and purloining from the good doctor who had befriended him a much-prized volume, and then attempting to convert it into cash in a pawnshop. The doctor's name on the fly-leaf was the cause of his subsequent betrayal.

In view of these circumstances, it was deemed advisable to com-

mit him to a disciplinary institution for about a year, and at the end of that time, transfer him, either to the Orphanage again, or to a properly supervised private home.

The fact that he had been able to withstand temptation for a long period indubitably attested to the possibility that wholesome environment and proper discipline might in time enable him to cope with temptations successfully and permanently.

THE RESULT

On February 27, 1922, in reply to a letter addressed to the Superintendent of the disciplinary school to which the boy had been sent, requesting information regarding his conduct at the present time, the following report was given concerning him:

"Replying to yours of the 24th inst., would give you the following information in reference to the boy you are interested in:

"He has worked out very well, and is now paroled and working at —, at silver-plating, and is getting along very nicely."

CHAPTER V

CHARACTERIALLY DEFECTIVE

- CASE A, PETER E—— "THE AUTOCRAT"
- CASE B, PAULINE E—— (SISTER OF PETER E——)
"MAGGIE" OR "MRS. JIGGS"
- CASE C, ANNA AND MARY J—— (SISTERS)
"STRUCK BY LIGHTNING"

CASE A

PETER E——, "THE AUTOCRAT"

Entered January 14, 1915. Age 13 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) At age of seven, organized and led a band of tough youngsters who terrorized the neighborhood.
- (b) For three years lived in the streets, engaged in fights, gambled, and picked pockets.
- (c) Had a violent and ungovernable temper, and when in a rage threw the first thing nearest his hand at the one who had enraged him.
- (d) Was an incorrigible liar.
- (e) At age of ten, he became bolder, and his petty thefts turned into thievery, for which he was finally taken to the Juvenile Court by outraged neighbors who had suffered from his depredations.

2. SCHOOL

- (a) Constant truant.
- (b) Would not concentrate on work; and when reprimanded by teacher, would retort with vile words and missiles.
- (c) Retarded three years.

3. HOME

- (a) Could not be controlled by parents.
- (b) Used obscene language and beat the younger children.
- (c) Petty thefts.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Was hot-headed and a scrapper.
- (b) Was anti-social, and determined to have his own way at all hazards, fabricating to save his own back.
- (c) Bullied all younger and weaker children.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Height and weight normal.
- (b) Well nourished; health essentially normal. Normal physical development. Proud, erect carriage.
- (c) Perfect specimen of boyhood; handsome; large, dark, and intelligent eyes, having a frank and clear gaze.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:

Intelligence: Two years above normal. I. C. 1.15.

Character: Poor hereditary basis. Neurotic. Violent temper. Good mental ability, but no control.

Health: Normal.

Impression: Boy is a victim of environment. Wandering from one institution to another distinctly injurious. Is a border-line case, and in need of intelligent, careful handling.

Social information was inadequate to make further suggestions possible.

(b) Personality Traits:

Clever, keen intellect and good general ability.

Irritable; cruel when crossed in any whim or fancy, and very obstinate.

Vicious at times.

Exceedingly vain. Audacious and overbearing.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: with no education or training for any occupation or trade, is shiftless, quarrelsome and adjudged neurotic. Has made no attempt to provide for family, which, since his marriage, has been either assisted or supported entirely by the local benevolent organization, for nearly twenty years. Has no idea of moral right and exhibits a vile and nasty temper when thwarted, using obscene language freely in presence of the children.

He is irreligious; will not listen to counsel or advice and has no friends. He is practically a pauper, and has never made a consistent effort to attain a self-respecting and self-supporting position.

Is notoriously brutal and cruel to his wife and children, and is greatly despised and hated by his neighbors, people who, in the main, are decent and hard-working. Threw a social worker bodily out of the house.

Is constantly complaining of poor health, which upon examination has been disproved.

Does not hesitate to fabricate and lie when it so suits his purposes.

Mother: is a weak, sickly woman, who has a tubercular history. Tuberculosis has been in her family for at least a generation. One of her two brothers recently died of

the disease, and the other is an advanced case and practically dying. She herself constantly complains of various illnesses, and was twice confined at the Consumptives' Sanatorium, once for the space of a year and the other time for five months. She is regarded as an incipient tubercular case.

During her stay at the hospital, she manifested little or no interest in the children. Morally she is a weakling, and completely dominated by her husband.

In her youth, she must have been physically attractive. Though faded, worn, and appearing at least fifteen years older than her age, some of her features still retain comeliness.

She has always been faithful and devoted to her husband.

Between the years 1896 and 1913, she has borne eight living children and has had three miscarriages.

Siblings: Eldest brother, had unhappy childhood, and though living much in the streets, had no definitely known career of juvenile misdeeds. Before the age of sixteen, however, he developed a strong spirit of *Wanderlust*, and after repeated long wanderings and returns, he finally completely disappeared. His present whereabouts, if he is living, are unknown.

Second brother's childhood and boyhood were a duplicate of the older brother's; but while he too developed *Wanderlust*, he did not succumb to it as the first one had done.

He was very fortunately attracted by the Navy instead, which he joined very young, falsifying his age.

He had a Juvenile Court record.

Third brother, was mentally defective and died quite young at the State Industrial School for Feeble-Minded.

Younger sister, is hysterical, tubercular, and extraordinarily selfish.

Her chief interests are the movies and boys. (She is "Case B," fully described in this chapter.)

Youngest brother, taken into the institution at the age of eight. Is mentally normal. Physically tubercular.

Younger sister, also put into the institution at a very early age. Normal physically and mentally.

Youngest sister, baby, is apparently normal.

(b) Developmental:

Was normal 8-pound baby. History uneventful.

Displayed an unmanageable temper while hardly more than an infant.

Refused to attend school, and at the age of seven was an habitual truant and would sell papers. He was continually bunking out with a coterie of small street gamins, and would defy and resist any influence attempted by the probation officers who were interested in the case.

When thievery finally brought him to the Juvenile Court, the Judge, being informed of his home environment, committed him to an institution for dependent children.

Here, for the first time in his life under restraint and discipline, he became so rebellious and violent, that the Superintendent reported him extremely troublesome, an evil influence to the other children, and craved to be relieved of the youngster. He advised a mental examination.

The Probation Officer had him examined at the Psychiatric Clinic and claimed that the boy was found to be bright, but showing signs of abnormality. He was then assigned to several institutions, one after the other, as each institution asked to be relieved of the small miscreant soon after his arrival.

Then Dr. C——, the psychiatrist, who had examined him and was interested in him, felt that he should be given another opportunity to make good at home, and requested that he be placed in the care of his parents, with proper supervision. Dr. C—— was greatly impressed by the brightness and cleverness displayed by the boy in his talks with him.

At home again, the boy reveled in his former associations and conditions, and finally became so unbearable, that Dr. C—— no longer objected, and he was sent to the P—— School, a disciplinary institution. Here he was very troublesome, kept running away, and would stay out for days at a stretch. When brought back, usually by the officers attached to the School, he would be extremely filthy and audaciously obstinate and rebellious.

Finally, his patience exhausted, the Superintendent petitioned that the boy be sent to the Reformatory.

But before the Children's Bureau could act upon the petition, the boy, on another wandering spell, visited the Orphanage, — without anybody's permission, of course, — to see some of his old pals who, he knew, were being cared for at that institution. Whether the reports he received pleased him, or whether he was impressed by some of the pleasures and privileges his former friends were en-

joying (which latter was probably the case), he decided that for the future he would favor the institution with his company.

So, escorted by several of his old body-guard, who, however, remained discreetly standing at a respectful distance, he advanced boldly into the sanctuary of the Superintendent and made due and firm announcement of his intentions. They were plainly, but determinedly stated. He admitted that he had absconded from the P—— School. He did not like it, he was not going to like it, and he was going to stop here — so there!

He was just giving due notice that he wanted bed and board to be prepared for him at once. "Let me see your watch," he commanded; and after looking at it, stated coolly, "I am going to that d—— place for my things. I'll see them go to h—l first, before I'll go to their Reformatory. Good night! I'll be back in an hour with my things."

Very tactfully was he taken in hand, and not until after much argument, was he convinced that the matter could not be so summarily decided. He finally graciously consented to permit an older head to think for him this time, and even agreed to abide by the promises he made, in return for a solemn pact, that his request should be duly presented to the Children's Bureau at its next meeting.

On the strength of this agreement, he returned to the School of his own free will, and actually gave less trouble for the short time he now remained there.

The Children's Bureau, which had been completing final arrangements for his admission to the Reformatory, with many misgivings granted the request that he be given a chance in the Orphanage.

Very proudly and triumphantly was his entry made!

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

No enuresis. No bad sex-habits noted. Had been accustomed to pick up the butts of cigarettes from the streets and smoke them.

Was extremely untidy about his person, and revolted at the suggestion of soap and water.

Was very much absorbed in self and recognized no right above his own.

Very fond of good food, and a hearty eater. Slept well.

Fond of books on adventure, and would himself concoct blood-curdling tales.

Liked to dominate, and always had other boys doing his bidding.

(d) Home Conditions:

His home environment had encouraged in him habits of cruelty to those younger and weaker than himself, and he had no scruples in gaining his desires at any cost.

His rebellion and expulsion from his succession of homes had served only to embitter and enrage him the more. None of the good and wholesome influences of the institutions in which he had stayed a short time had at all reached him.

At each institution, he had sought to duplicate the life in his father's house in so far as he was able.

Had never had religious instruction, and did not see any further use for a house of worship than the opportunities offered for pilfering charity boxes.

(e) Mental Interests:

Beyond devising methods and schemes for new tricks of dare-deviltry and cunning, he had none.

THE TREATMENT

His admission into the institution was greeted by his former cronies, several of whom were working out their salvation, with neither elation nor regret. Such indifference attested to his unpopularity, as the usual procedure, when a former acquaintance was admitted, was to hold a sort of a reception, at which the newcomer would be presented formally to all the inmates, followed by "eats" purchased with voluntary contributions of pennies.

He was received not only with coldness, but with actual belligerency by the other boys, who had not been favored with a previous acquaintance with him. His reputation had evidently preceded him, and the monitors who controlled the Children's Congress stood aloof from him, awaiting developments, before taking any decisive stand. "Thinks he's goin' to bawl us out again! Nothin' doin'!" announced his former comrade-at-arms, who was among the most influential of the monitors, with a determined shake of the head which boded ill to the newcomer's "bawling" propensities.

The first fortnight of his stay was attended with many happy surprises. He was smiling, obliging, and so gentle that one could not help feeling provoked that so genial a youngster should have

acquired so dark a reputation. But it was apparently only the calm before the storm, which broke loose with unexpected suddenness, when, in a fit of rage over a command given by a teacher, he threw the ink-well, unfortunately well filled at the time, directly at the teacher's head, with unerring aim. Upon being reprimanded for this offense, he threw off the mask of submission, and became morose, cranky, and violent by turns.

He appeared highly strung almost to the point of hysteria, and hurled defiance to every order. At this particular time, he appeared to take a malicious satisfaction in tantalizing his supervisors and teachers by every species of mischief his keen brain could concoct; and when confronted with his misdeeds, would put on an air of bravado that greatly aggravated the torments of his victims. His ingenuity in detecting their weakest point and then probing it with the sharpness of invectives tended to give the greatest smart, was truly remarkable in one so young. His volleys of fiendish vituperations had been his most powerful weapons in cowing and terrorizing his associates, and he enthusiastically started to reemploy them.

He was taken into the sanctuary again, and behind closed doors taken severely to task, and made to understand that no one feared his tantrums, or was bound to countenance a continued spell of his objectionable conduct. Knowing his fears of the Reformatory, which had been magnified by the constant threats made to send him there, that point was strongly emphasized as a reason for his early reformation.

After a long silence, he looked up sullenly. "What'll ye give me if I'm good?" he questioned.

The unexpected and strange query produced a train of thought. Upon investigation, the information was elicited that, since earliest childhood, he had been bribed to be good, first by his mother, then by the tormented neighbors, and finally by the ill-treated teachers and unhappy supervisors of the institutions. It had become habitual for him to receive toll from all children younger or weaker than himself, who gladly paid the tribute exacted to escape his machinations. With unconscious contempt, he described in detail how the president of one of the institutions, that had been favored with his presence, had become interested in him and decided that he would be the one to reform him. He paid the boy a weekly stipend for being good; but not having stipulated that the "being good" was not to be confined to the Home only, the school reports were such that the president protested. The boy then demanded an increased rate for being good at school also; and the outraged

president not only refused to pay the extra bribe, but losing his patience entirely, went to the school, and on hearing the outrages perpetrated by the boy, relieved his exasperation and wounded feelings by giving the youngster a good thrashing right in the presence of all the children.

"Gee, but I got even after that," he boasted, with a triumphant grin, which more than anything else told how the poor, soft-hearted president had been brow-beaten and worsted in his luckless attempt to deal with this specimen of juvenile delinquency.

Now, however, being given firmly to comprehend that in the future he would be compelled to behave himself without bribery of any kind, he found such an astonishing thing so difficult of comprehension, that he looked his amazement and was speechless. When the matter was again repeated to him, with increased firmness, he faced the bribeless situation courageously, and appeared willing to agree to the terms dictated to him. Then he was put in charge of a specially patient supervisor, and the vocational classes kept him constantly employed, so that not a moment was he permitted in which to brew mischief.

In school, his difficulties were many, owing to his unsocial attitude and the dissatisfaction he felt in being put into a lower grade than he felt he legitimately belonged to. He also lacked concentration, and while manifesting ability to a marked degree, was too lazy to apply himself properly to his studies. Every opportunity he could get, he also "hooked" school.

From a talk with the principal of the school, a lady who was a keen observer of human nature and a splendid child psychologist, it was learned that the boy had a special ability for composition.

This offered a powerful weapon for the fight. His ability in writing was commended and encouraged; he was put upon the editorial staff of the Home paper, published and printed by the children of the Home; his possible prospects as a great writer were dilated upon, and ambition was aroused in him to become a journalist. His vanity was colossal, and as the thought grew stronger and stronger in his mind how great a man he would become, and what wonderful delight he would enjoy because he had such remarkable ability, the means upon which to work his salvation presented themselves in his weakness.

Once convinced that his only chance of being regarded favorably by the world, when he grew up, would be if he had a good education and properly demonstrated it by his talents, of which, it was tacitly agreed, he had a goodly endowment, his attitude concerning himself somewhat changed. Where formerly he had been

laboring under the impression that the world was greatly indebted to him for forbearance and goodness, and did not pay its debt to him sufficiently to suit him, he now realized that the world would give him nothing unless he tried to please it. It was borne in upon him in no uncertain terms that the only alternative now open to him was the Reformatory. In his life he had met many of the relicts of reformatories, and they, weighed beside successful and money-making journalists, simply "had no show."

He started by applying himself to his studies. His work was excellent; he was constantly praised and commended, and he "showed off," by trying to be at the head of his class. At the Home, his violent temper, still uncurbed, made it impossible to put him at the head of a small group as monitor, despite some ability for leadership; but he took the leading parts in plays, games, and Boy-Scout activities, for which he received unstinted praise. He still continued to be very ugly when crossed, but was left alone and permitted to sulk as long as he desired. Gradually his tantrums became less in number and less violent, as his ambition grew stronger.

Of his sins, selfishness and lack of moral right and justice now stood out preëminently, refusing to yield to the force of precept and example.

His altercation with a former friend, who was now a shining light in the institution, over a sum of money that the latter had found at school and very properly brought to the principal's office, was so prolonged and furious that it finally reached the Superintendent. The finder of the money claimed that he was not an idiot and a fool for not keeping money he had found, and was not going to be called all kinds of bad names; the other insisted that no one who was not an idiot and a fool would give up money he had found. "There's no marks on the money," he reasoned; "it don't scream out to whom it belongs. How do we know the principal would n't keep it or, maybe, 'divvy' it up with the teachers? Them's no angels, believe me."

When he had become calm after the manifestations of furious resentment that he could not suppress, as he listened to the commendation given to the other for honesty, he was advised to watch the disposition of the money carefully, and then come in for a further discussion. When he heard the principal announcing the next morning in assembly that the sum of money had been found and would be given the loser on proper identification, he avoided the other boy. When, ultimately, the money was returned to its rightful owner, he sulked, had a recurrence of some of his ugly moods, and finally gave voice to the last impression provoked in

him by the object lesson: "Well, anyway, anybody who's so careless as to lose money deserves not to get it back."

A little later, another violent argument had to be settled in the office. At this time, he had so outraged the principles held and maintained by the other boys, that he was in actual danger of physical injury at their hands. The alumni of the institution had loyally responded to the request that they subscribe to the Charities. The monitors at a meeting expressed a hope that they too should be able to do likewise when self-supporting. To this worthy desire, the boy took instant exception. "Let them take care of their old Charities themselves," he stated.

"Don't you think you ought to show your gratitude for what you are now getting?" someone asked him.

"Why?" he questioned. "Should n't they be glad that I am not doing the things I used to? What will the rich people do with all their money, if they don't give homes to poor children who have n't homes?"

When he was given to understand that rich people could find many more pleasures for their money than founding orphanages for children, he seemed absorbed in thought for a while, and then announced, "Well, when I'm rich I'll give money if they'll put my name on a building." And then he added, unabashed and fearless, to the Superintendent: "I told them you have to be good to us and do all sorts of things for us, because you're paid for doing it; ain't that right?"

A younger sister of his, at that time six years old, was admitted to the Orphanage because of the extreme neglect of her parents, shortly after his arrival. This child, apparently normal in every respect, had been influenced by her environment to such an extent that the tiny girls in her dormitory complained about the language she used and the temper she displayed when cross. She very soon, however, abandoned her undesirable traits entirely, and became rather an exponent of peace as the following incident will attest.

The child was recovering from a severe attack of measles and was quite happy and cheerful during her convalescence. It was the custom of the Superintendent to visit the patients in the hospital daily, and the nurse on the case noticed that, simultaneously with this visit, every glass, bottle, spoon — everything standing or not lying under cover in the ward — mysteriously disappeared. She also noticed little Beatrice making surreptitious trips to and from the closet, and appearing restless and ill at ease. This continued until the visit was over; then the child would seem relieved, and shortly afterward all the articles that had so strangely dis-

appeared would be restored to their places. Greatly mystified and interested in the peculiar proceeding, the nurse watched closely and observed little Beatrice laboriously collecting and hiding the receptacles and, later, returning them.

Her curiosity was aroused and she finally questioned the child.

"I like him and I like you too," tearfully explained little Beatrice, "and I thought maybe you would begin to fight like my mamma and papa, and begin to throw things; so I just hid them all so as you can't throw them on him when you fight."

This child was most lovable and affectionate, but would be teased and tormented by her brother till, almost in hysterics, she would fly to someone for refuge. Had he been permitted, he would have abused her till she was the creature of his will, as he evidently desired to make her. During her illness, he never once inquired concerning her; nor did he make any attempt to see her when she was out of isolation, and convalescing. Chided for such indifference to his sister, he looked greatly injured and remarked, "What's the good of a sister anyhow? She can't do nothing for me."

It was his *ego* always, and everything else was subordinate to it.

His work at school began to show excellent results. In two years he completed four grades, and began to entertain the idea of attending college. When he was graduated from the public school with honors, his conduct and manners were greatly improved. His graduation was made an occasion for a gala day by the probation officers and social workers who for years had known and struggled with him. They almost refused to credit their senses when the principal gave honorable mention to their "pet" problem. At the age of fifteen, he entered the City College, and continued to maintain a high degree of scholarship. At the Home, too, he was making an effort to become one of the privileged monitors, and be permitted to join the ranks of the better boys.

The adage, "Birds of a feather flock together," is nowhere so truly exemplified as in an institution, where, with unerring instinct, each small human, unaided and unabettled, finds his own kind, and jealously guards and protects himself from encroachment of an alien breed. So it happened that, while the boy was admitted to the various activities of the older and better boys at the request of authority, he by no means was admitted to their intimacies and secrets. This hurt the boy's vanity, and he was all the more determined to attain that which seemed impossible for him to reach. To put an end to this ostracism, he was compelled, almost in spite of himself, to use control over the very features of his make-up,

which antagonized the boys. Perhaps this enforced endeavor was as much a saving grace for his redemption as anything else.

He had been put upon the staff of the Home paper when he first displayed ability at composition; now he was one of the editors and business managers, and not only did he write really brilliant articles, but he also handled honestly money received for subscriptions. He gradually became more tractable, less impertinent, and more amenable to reason.

It was the custom to put the most reliable boys in charge of a new small "problem," to act as a "Big Brother." The time actually came when he was making a conscientious effort to correct the manners and morals of the little tacker consigned to him. At that time, he was also admitted to the inner circle of the elect.

College life had a most salutary effect upon him. He became less antagonistic, grew more amiable, and even made desirable friends among the students. At the completion of his junior year, at the age of seventeen years, his father, learning that he was working after school hours and earning some little money for his personal use, came with the petition that the boy be returned to him. As the boy was approaching the age at which it was deemed desirable to continue further care in a wholesome private home, arrangements had been completed for him to leave the institution and stay with some estimable people while completing his college career. The father, however, pleaded his extreme poverty, and the plight of his wife, who had just returned from the Consumptives' Sanitorium and was in need of assistance, which he was sure that the boy, who was now "a good boy," as he expressed it, would be able to give her. Further, as the Charities had, in the interim, purchased for him a small grocery store which was yielding him a livelihood, he felt that his son was in duty bound to help him with the store instead of working elsewhere.

The parents had seldom visited the children in the Home, and at the rare intervals when they did, they had brought discontent and unhappiness to them with their unwarranted abuse and absurd demands. It now hardly seemed wise to return the youth to the unhappy environment of his boyhood; but when, after an interview with his mother, he added his entreaties to his father's, urging his mother's great need and his duty to her, consent was given, but with many misgivings.

The boy was permitted to return to his parents' home, on a solemn promise that his work at college should continue without interference.

THE RESULT

The temperaments of father and son were violently opposed to each other and the misgivings were only too well founded. A week had hardly passed when the boy came raging into the office, having his expostulating father in tow, and asserting that he was "going to stand no nonsense."

It appeared that some drunken unfortunate had fallen right in front of the grocery store, and the father felt that it was a matter of justice and propriety to go through his pockets, before, as he naïvely put it, "some loafer would be sure to steal something"; which the boy strenuously refused to subscribe to, and they would have come to blows, but for the timely interference of the mother.

The boy's conduct was commended, and the father warned to permit the boy to follow the dictates of his conscience. A patched-up peace ensued, which lasted several months, till the father, claiming that now his wife and son were sufficient to care for the grocery store, found a position as garbage-collector.

The boy stormed against this, but submitted, and worked harder to keep up with his school-work. In a few weeks, he was again in the office, this time with a happy and triumphant grin upon his face, and announced that the "grafter" would now have to be good and attend to his business.

The "grafter" was his father. The man, while on his rounds of garbage-collecting, had been inspired by a very happy scheme. That was no more and no less than not to collect the garbage of any householder who was not intelligent enough to pay him specially for the privilege. He received many tips from long-suffering citizens, who paid their toll gladly; but there were also some very courageous individuals who resented such extortion, and these came with their complaints and proofs before the District Superintendent, who was in charge of the garbage-removal from that ward. This gentleman promised redress and confronted the garbage-collector with his delinquencies. The latter, not at all daunted, made a ready confession and promised to divide his "tips" with the official in the future. This plan worked well for a while, till outraged residents came before powerful authorities and lodged their complaints, with the result that the District Superintendent was fired, as well as the "tipped" collector.

It was recognized that the boy's future would be seriously hampered in his home; but before efforts could be tactfully made for a proper adjustment of the difficulty, the chaos was settled definitely by the principals concerned.

A week after the garbage incident, the father left, to "find another job." The mother was attending to the grocery, and the baby sister, left to herself, found a box of matches to play with. The inevitable happened; and when the boy, attracted by the little girl's screams, ran in, to find her bed in flames and her dress on fire, and had the presence of mind to apply some of the methods he had learned as a Scout to good advantage, he very justifiably expected to be hailed and cheered as a hero. Especially so, as his quick-witted action had saved the baby from a terrible fate.

The father, however, saw good and sufficient reasons to find fault with him. "Why," he argued, "did not the boy prevent the fire in the first place? And since the fire had already started, why had he not had the good sense to save the baby and let the house burn up completely, so that he could receive assistance from the Benevolent Society? When would he again have such an excellent opportunity for sympathy?"

This proved the last straw on the camel's back, and the boy wiped the dust of his father's home from his feet, "forever," he vowed. He was kept in the institution till private accommodations could be found for him. He also discovered another position, where he could work after school-hours and earn his modest expenses. The family was advised to molest him no further.

At present he is working his own way through law school and his ambition has changed somewhat. He still hopes to amaze the world with the magnitude and power of his talents, but not as a journalist; rather as a lawyer. He hopes to be the great criminal lawyer of the future.

He is sensitive regarding his father, sorry for his mother, and interested in his brothers and sisters, for whom he intends to do wonderful things when he is a great lawyer. His temper is impetuous and rash, but "it's not going to get me into more trouble," he says.

CASE B

PAULINE E—— “MAGGIE” OR “MRS. JIGGS”

(SISTER OF PETER E——)

Entered February 10, 1915. Age 11 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Petty pilfering.
- (b) Unsocial; violent temper tantrums.
- (c) Deceptive, crafty, and tyrannical.
- (d) Obstinate; sullen; revengeful.
- (e) Extremely cruel to younger and weaker children.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Constant truancy for an extended period.
- (b) Troublesome and unmanageable.
- (c) Given to violent displays of temper when corrected or reproved by teacher.
- (d) Defiant and reckless.

3. HOME

- (a) Engaging in violent disputes and quarrels with parents.
- (b) Disobedient and uncontrollable.
- (c) Determined to have her own way at any hazard.
- (d) Stealing whenever possible.
- (e) Cruel to the younger children.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Associated with the street gang, and was involved in all juvenile delinquency in the neighborhood.
- (b) Impertinent and very troublesome to the neighbors, from whom she would either borrow money on false pretenses, or steal it at any favorable opportunity.
- (c) When crossed in her whims or desires, would “get even” by shouting vile names at her antagonists, and, with the assistance of other youngsters, would throw stones at their windows.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Extremely thin and haggard in appearance. Eyes dull and lifeless.

- (b) Round-shouldered, narrow-chested; spindle arms and legs.
- (c) Diseased tonsils and adenoids. Many badly carious teeth.
- (d) Frequent coughs and colds. Tubercular tendencies.
- (e) Nervous night-terrors. Occasional enuresis.
- (f) Badly scratched and bruised hands. Constant chewing upon fingers and nails had horribly disfigured both.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination: Dr. T——, in his report on the case, stated: "The girl is suffering from hyperesthesia, melancholia, and extreme nervousness, superinduced by unhappy environment. Case for institutional management."
- (b) Personality Traits:
 - Habitually frowning or scowling. Lines of discontent and bitterness already formed upon the young face.
 - Very poor eater; expressing a preference only for sour pickles and limes, also sweets.
 - Sullen, unfriendly, and suspicious. Antagonized other girls and prejudiced them against her, by unjust accusations and complaints.
 - Extremely untidy about person. Very slovenly in her habits.
 - Neither affectionate, nor craving affection.
 - Impolite, disloyal, and given to backbiting.

3. SOCIAL

- (a) Heredity:
 - Same as Case A.
- (b) Developmental:
 - The mother claimed that she had been a normal, healthy baby, and "as pretty as a picture." She had had the minor ills of early childhood, but never was affected by the contagious diseases, which frequently attacked her brothers and sisters. The mother, whose favorite child she had always been, boasted that "she was too smart to take anything like that."
 - Though she was given some slight consideration not accorded the other children, she gravitated at an early age to the streets, and rapidly learned the lessons there taught quite systematically to the neglected child.

Constant quarreling, hatred, unhappiness, and extreme poverty, were all in the curriculum of the girl's tragic environment, till her admittance into the institution.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Would sit for hours tearing a schoolbook to pieces, in apparent thoughtlessness, and chewing her pencil.

Fond of prinking in the mirror, and never too tired at night to put her thin, scraggly locks in curl-papers.

Liked bright colors, and though very careless about cleanliness, was always anxious to secure the most be-ribboned and beruffled dress.

Easily aroused to fury, which knew no bounds in its vituperative and obscene language. Always in a state of preparedness for a quarrel or a fist fight with the supervisor, or any boy or girl who dared to disagree with her or contradict her. So quarrelsome and turbulent was her spirit, that she was speedily nicknamed "Maggie" and "Mrs. Jiggs" by the children, who were then the fascinated admirers of the artist who daily ran a series of pictures exploiting the unhappy domestic life of the henpecked Mr. Jiggs and his termagant wife.

When angry, had a favorite method of "revenging" herself, by refusing food, and triumphantly avowing that she intended to die through starvation, so that "the whole institution" might be hung for killing her. Quite frequently she would go on a hunger strike for a day or two, till matters were more or less amicably settled, to her satisfaction.

Associated with the boy or girl "problems" exclusively. As the "problem" improved, so would her friendship and interest lessen. Very fond of taunting and tantalizing her former friends almost out of all patience.

Very cruel to animals other than cats, for which she displayed an inordinate fondness. She would take a malicious pleasure in devising some form of torture for the torment of some of the pets in the house, and then would deliberately fondle, feed, and hug to her bosom a stray kitten she had picked up in the streets. She gave the latter what affection her nature possessed, and, unless detected, would carry off the kitten to bed with her.

Her only interests in life seemed centred in the kitten and in the movies, of which she seemed never to tire.

(d) Home Conditions:
Same as Case A.

(e) Mental Interests:
None.

THE TREATMENT

In a shabby, threadbare coat, several sizes too small for her, without any head-covering, great holes gaping in her stockings, and her shoes practically without soles, she was brought into the office through the storm and sleet of a severe winter's day. Her hands were red with the cold, the knuckles showing large and white when tight pressure of the skin threw them in relief; but the face, though nipped by the frost, was sallow and wan. A violent cough racked her frail, thin body.

"Is n't it amazing that on a day like this, coughing as she does, she should be out on the streets, encouraging a street fight between two bad boys?" remarked the social worker who had come with her.

The child scowled darkly. "Aw, you just let up fussing about that cough. It's mine — not yourn; and anyway — it's none of your business," she retorted; then paused to catch her breath, as a fit of coughing assailed her. After its rigors had somewhat abated, she took a deep breath, said indifferently, "That's nothin' — I've had lots worser'n that," and continued to frown.

She sullenly compressed her lips in silence, and refused to make any further comment or answer any question, till the worker left. Then, with a grimace at the closed door, she growled, "She thinks she's my boss — not on her life! I'm my own boss. Nobody can boss me."

Then, with ears which undoubtedly heard not what was being said to her, she lackadaisically "listened" to the talk given to her, and vouchsafing no reply, permitted herself to be led away, still scowling heavily.

It was deemed advisable to start to improve her physical condition first. She was at once put on a special diet; rest periods and outdoor sleeping quarters were arranged for her; to all of which she strenuously objected. "Aw, who wants to drink milk like a baby? Say, what kind of a guy do you take me for anyway?" she scornfully queried. "An' eat them eggs? — say, do you want me to become a chicken? — Nothin' doin'," she gave as her emphatic decision in the matter; followed by, "Whatcha think I am, makin' me go to bed in the day?" Then she belligerently questioned the nurse who had her rest periods in charge: "Think you can freeze me out? — Nixie on your life!" After which she promptly informed her supervisor that, unless she were speedily returned to

her home, she was going to get up in the middle of the night and set the house on fire, "to get even with everybody."

Violently protesting against the injustice done her, she was taken into the office, where she promptly proceeded to have an attack of hysteria. After her chaotic mind had been somewhat calmed, a long talk ensued. It was tactfully pointed out to her that all the arrangements to which she objected had been made with her welfare in view, and that, if she were obedient and interested in her own development, she would soon become a healthy normal girl. She was further advised to compare herself with the other girls in the Home, and notice how much frailer, weaker, and retarded, physically and mentally, she was than they.

She shook her head indifferently. "I should worry!" she ejaculated carelessly. "I don't care if I do die, so there!"

Details of a world in which children of her age were happy, healthy, and having such good times that they did not want to die, were carefully presented to her, and she was further informed that such a world should be hers in the future, if she so desired. At first, she listened listlessly enough, but gradually, as a sentence or two penetrated her consciousness almost in spite of herself, her curiosity was aroused and she became more attentive. Finally she agreed, "Aw right! Guess I wanna try it"; but it was said half-heartedly.

However, in spite of this expressed desire, it was a difficult problem to adjust her to her new world. She craved pickles, lemons, candy, and ice-cream at unseasonable hours of the day and night, whenever the mood struck her for those "dainties"; and in attempting to satisfy her appetite, was guilty of deception, trickery, pilfering from the supervisors, and even from the children at times.

She hated and insulted the physician, who continued to insist upon a simple and wholesome diet for her, excluding most of her preferences from the prescribed list. Once she burst into a torrent of abuse at him; and when he attempted to reprimand her for her conduct, promptly informed him, quite frankly, that it was her intention to poison him. There were daily tussles with her elders, whose patience she sorely tried, and frequent altercations with the children, whose enmity she aroused with her tantrums.

One morning, speechless with rage, she flew into the office, pulling, pushing, and dragging several younger and smaller laughing children after her.

"She's angry because we call her 'Maggie,'" smilingly volunteered one of the youngsters.

Evidently not satisfied that the information was receiving due recognition, another curly-headed little fellow dimpled and laughed, and submitted further: "You know who Maggie is, don't you? She's Mr. Jiggs's wife, and she's always fighting with her husband."

The girl finally caught her breath at this juncture. "Don't you dare to call me names," she shrieked.

The incident was especially propitious for a much-needed lesson. It had become a favorite attitude with her to stay outside of the games or plays the children were enjoying, a heavy scowl upon her face, ready with jibes and taunts for those who had failed to achieve their goal, or did not, in her opinion, play to advantage. She would take a malicious delight in influencing girls to refuse to perform the various small duties assigned to them, triumphantly pointing to herself as an example to be emulated. The fact that her physical condition was the cause of the special privileges granted to her, was by her construed to mean that she was a proud and prominent figure, to be accorded due deference and favor.

Hence it was that the derisive sobriquet of "Maggie," applied to her, in contempt of her pretensions, by the very children whom she delighted in bullying unmercifully, had a more efficacious effect than the many reproofs and advice that had been freely given her. She resented being nicknamed so offensively, and insisted that "those kids quit making fun of me."

It was pointed out to her that the only person able to stop the objectionable name from being applied to her was herself. Just as soon as she ceased to deserve the name, so soon would the children cease to apply it to her. In great bitterness of heart, she accepted the decision, and it was noted subsequently that her spasms of uncontrollable temper were becoming somewhat more subdued. In proportion were her tormentors reprovved and discouraged. One small rascal, who presented her with a toy rolling-pin and scribbled instructions how to employ the same when flying into a fit of temper, was reprimanded in her presence, and he apologized to her, when it was discovered that for more than a fortnight there had been no violent outbursts of temper. Gradually the length of time between her spells of fury increased.

Numerous talks were now held with her in the office, in the effort to rouse in her a friendly and coöperative spirit. She would sit there, scowling darkly, non-communicative and apathetic. For her brother Peter, who was progressing rather favorably, she had neither love nor sympathy, and for the younger brother and sister, who had, in the interim, also become inmates of the Home, she

had nothing more than indifference. The only playmate she favored was a kitten she had picked up in the street, to which she was extremely devoted. Unless she was watched, it was the kitten who enjoyed the milk, broths, and tempting dishes prepared for her. Asked once why she did not offer the food to her small sister or brother, instead of the kitten, she made answer, "But I love my cat and I don't like the kids."

"Do you like anything better than your cat?" she was then asked.

"Guess so," she said indifferently, after a few moments' pause.

"What is it?"

"Pickles, lemons, candy, watermelon," — She started to enumerate, but was interrupted and the question amended:

"What would you like to have when you grow up?"

"Money," she responded laconically.

"Why?"

She looked amazed at the question, and answered, as if compelled to humor a stupid inquisitor, "Well, 'cause I want to buy lots of pickles and lemons with candy-sticks in them, and everything else I want."

Yet she was by no means feeble-minded. She had evinced, at certain times, an intellect normal for her age; and it was hoped that, with increasing health and strength, a curriculum for the employment of her dormant mental faculties might be introduced with benefit. Meanwhile, an effort was made to keep her fingers busy with the embroidery needle, to which she took rather kindly.

One of the monitors coached her in the First-Grade work, and as her health improved, she was informed that soon she should be able to be like the other girls and attend school. At this news, she became almost speechless with indignation. Finally, when she found her voice, she stormed and inveighed against school-attendance, making the most extravagant promises to be "good," if only she were permitted to continue the life she had been leading.

Her protestations to the contrary notwithstanding, she was duly enrolled in school, and entered as a pupil in the Second Grade. For several weeks she was daily propelled to school by a trustworthy monitor, though she continued her expostulations and objections, till gradually, by dint of promised rewards which appealed to her, she slowly began to apply herself to her school-work.

As she had progressed in her embroidery-work to such an extent that she was able to embroider flowers and leaves acceptably, a garment for her own use was presented to her, and she worked

pretty and neat designs upon it, skillfully. Then, her ambition increasing, she manifested an interest in the Dressmaking class, and being encouraged by the teacher, herself expressed a desire to become a member. She was very adaptable in this class, and soon was fired by the hope of being able to make for herself a duplicate of the very gaudy and furbelowed frock she admired in a merchant's window.

She now joined in the children's recreations, with much less reluctance and more animation than she had hitherto manifested, and at times even appeared cheerful and contented. Regular school-attendance, combined with systematic work and play at home, kept her fully occupied during the day, and, shortly, her night-terrors gave place to healthful, normal slumbers.

Through the coöperation of principal and teachers, her school-work improved to such an extent that, within two years, she was able to advance most rapidly, being promoted to the Sixth Grade shortly after passing her thirteenth birthday. Her conduct as well as her health was keeping pace with her mental progress, when, out of her clear sky of promise, came a menacing cloud in the shape of her mother — just discharged from the sanatorium for tuberculous patients.

Between mother and daughter there had always been a strong bond of some sort of affection, and they met with rapturous expressions of love and devotion on both sides. Speedily, however, the former discovered that the girl was essential to her happiness, and petitioned for her discharge from the institution.

Futile efforts were made to convince the mother of the inadvisability of her daughter's return to her home of discord and unwholesomeness. The mother contended that, as her disease had been "cured" and the girl was her "right hand," she should not be expected to deprive herself of the comfort and happiness only her favorite daughter was able to give her.

During the latter part of the girl's stay in the institution, her father had frequently petitioned her to come home and keep house for him; but always the girl had turned a deaf ear to his requests, and expressed herself as quite well satisfied to stay where she was. Now, however, she expressed her willingness to return to her mother, and with great regret was allowed to do so, after a promise made by the three that the mode of life the girl had become accustomed to at the Home, should be continued.

THE RESULT

Returning from one of his infrequent visits home, the brother reported that the home conditions were "simply awful," and that his mother was sick again and the girl unable to attend school because of ill health. The mother received an urgent message to call at the office, and she came, with a flood of tears and bitter complaints against the girl's behavior to her parents. She stated that for two weeks the girl had refused to utter a word, and did nothing but stare out of the window.

Investigation showed that, while it had taken two years for the girl to make some slight progress, in the little more than two months that she had been at her home, her decline in health and spirit had been much more rapid. Finding that her silence was not voluntary, as at first assumed, but was the symptom of some disease that affected her voice, which she could only raise to a sibilant whisper, medical authorities were at once consulted.

The following report was submitted:

Pauline E——. Age 13 years. Examined 6-2-17.

"Patient referred to Clinic from T.B. Dispensary because she apparently had lost her voice; seemed unable to talk above a whisper. Examination showed no physical basis.

"Family History: Father living, age 40, not normal mentally. Mother living, has T.B. Five brothers. One has T.B. One died of T.B. at R——, age 19. Two sisters, living and well. One brother very irritable, acts very ugly when he is displeased.

"Personal History: Birth and early development normal so far as known. Night-terrors since the age of ten. Patient imagines she sees ghosts. Patient has always been very capricious about her food. Cares only for sweets. School at the age of eight; now in the Sixth Grade. Patient claims that she skipped the Fourth Grade, and since then her work has seemed difficult. She says that she likes school and that she studies very hard. She would like to finish Grammar School and then go to Business College; but she feels unable to do so, because the work "is now much too hard." Patient was evidently much spoiled by her mother, and was very uncoöperative during examination in the dispensary. Frequently refuses to answer questions, and simply scowls and looks out of the window.

"Impression was that the girl was spoiled and inclined to dramatize her sensations, in order to attract interest. Talks at great length in whispers."

Diagnosis: Psychiatric Clinic — Functional Aphonia.

Diagnosis: General Medicine — Albuminuria.

While she was undergoing treatment for her physical ills, she developed the additional burden of a pulmonary complaint, and was shortly admitted to the Consumptives' Sanatorium, as a preventative measure.

Here she was a most difficult problem to handle, as she objected to the physicians and the food they prescribed for her, and insisted on being permitted to return home, as there was nothing at all the matter with her, and she was being kept there "for spite." As her health improved, and with it her voice, she was ready for discharge early in 1919. It was not deemed advisable to return her to her home, and she was sent to a working girls' club, from which, however, she ran away after two weeks' stay, and returned to her parents' home, where she was subjected to infection from her mother, and compelled to do work for which she was unfit.

Several months later, her brother, who had at that time left the Home, called suddenly at a late hour at night, and begged that assistance be given him to prevent his sister from leaving the city early the next morning, with a woman of whom nothing was known by the family.

It was learned that the father, who had originally shielded his daughter, and encouraged her to leave with the strange woman for a town in West Virginia, had at the eleventh hour repented, and had advised his son to prevent the departure.

The day had hardly dawned, when the brother, accompanied by an officer of the law and the Superintendent, went to the dock, and found the woman impatiently pacing to and fro, awaiting the arrival of the boat which was to take her and her prey from the city. In a dark corner, huddled up in a pitiful heap of humanity, on a worn suitcase, lay the girl in a restless sleep. When awakened, she rubbed her eyes, and upon recognizing the people before her, reviled them bitterly for their interference. She insisted that she was going with her "best friend," who had given her gifts of dresses, boxes of candy, and more pickles and ice-cream than she could eat.

Not until the character of the woman was very carefully explained to her, and the reasons for her surprising generosity brutally presented to her, did she permit a doubt to enter her mind regarding the other's probity.

"But she was awful good to me, and she promised to keep me like her daughter and give me good times, and let me do whatever I wanted," she insisted. "Did n't you?" she appealed to the woman.

The latter, with her eyes fixed upon the police officer, answered

hastily, "'T was all a mistake. I don't want you at all," and hastily made for the gangplank which was being lowered for passengers.

Later, it was discovered from her records in the Police Department that she was a notorious procuress.

As the girl had at no time displayed any undue sex-tendencies, her acquaintance with a woman of ill-repute was considered rather strange, till investigation brought the information that it was the father who had made the woman's acquaintance, and had introduced her to his young daughter. He claimed that he had not known the woman's antecedents.

Strong efforts were then made to remove the girl from her home, which were unavailing, as she insisted on remaining with the mother, who was ill and unhappy, and begged that she be not deprived of the solace of her daughter's company. The poor creature was unaware of the fate that had menaced the girl, nor did she know aught of the contemplated trip that had been abandoned.

An attempt was then made to persuade the girl to come to the office at least once weekly, "to talk things over," which proved more successful. She rather liked the experience of sailing in upon the older girls on Sunday afternoon, clad in one of the colorful, much ornamented dresses for which she barely escaped paying a terrible price, and boasting of her conquests at the public dances she attended with girl friends. In the office, however, she was more modest and less vainglorious, and would deplore the unhappy conditions at her home.

Finally, after many arguments *pro* and *con*, she consented to accept a course in a business school, which was offered her through the Alumni Association of the Home; and relief was felt when she took to her studies with apparent willingness and earnestness.

Shortly afterward, she came into the office one afternoon, on her way home from school, and exhibited, with much satisfaction and pride, a valuable ring.

"I am engaged to get married," was her startling announcement.

It developed that she had met a young sailor at one of her dances, and after a week's acquaintance, they had decided to get married, and he had presented her with the ring in proof of their betrothal.

She was at the time not entirely free from tubercular suspicion and not quite sixteen years of age. Her news was very disquieting, but it was essential to apply the most tactful treatment in frustrating her plans.

"That's fine," she was informed; "but are you treating us right not to introduce the young man?"

"Promise me you're going to like him?" she exacted first.

"Of course! And we'll all help you arrange the wedding if you wish," was the pleasing reply given her.

She was elated. That evening she returned with the sailor, but little could be gathered from the befuddled words that poured from his lips: he was drunk.

Very tactfully it was suggested to her to wait a year or two before getting married.

She flared up at once, in indignation. "Do you think I want to be an old maid?" she asked angrily.

It was pacifically pointed out to her that she could not possibly be an old maid for a great many years to come, and that the sailor would undoubtedly be quite willing to wait a year longer, and give her health a chance to improve.

But the mischief had been done. She was too furious to listen to any more. "You can't make me stop getting married when I want to," she declared. "I was going to let you make the wedding, but now I'll do it all myself." And she rose, and dragging the stupefied sailor after her, left in unforgiving wrath.

This unexpected *dénouement* did not prevent further measures being taken to ensure the future welfare of the girl. While the authorities were requested to investigate the past life of the sailor, who was a complete stranger in the city, the police suddenly supplied all the facts and information needed, by arresting the generous would-be groom.

The proposed match was, of course, at an end, with the return of the "betrothal ring" to its legitimate owner; but the girl grieved at the change in her plans, and again lost her voice.

She was then sent to a hospital for treatment. The following was the information received:

Report of H—— Hospital Social Worker:

4-17-21.

"Patient cured of loss of voice, in H—— Hospital, by application of electric current which made her scream."

Report of Benevolent Society:

"In 1921, the girl was living at home and working at tailoring. However, she was said to be unhappy, because there was still friction in the home."

CASE C

ANNA AND MARY J—— (SISTERS), "STRUCK BY LIGHTNING"

Entered December 31, 1918. Ages 10 and 12 years respectively

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCIES

- (a) Displaying marked sexual tendencies.
- (b) Extremely fond of stealing "jitney rides," and, when caught by the driver, would attempt to placate him by offering kisses and other favors.
- (c) Petty pilfering from the corner grocer and from the candy store.
- (d) Frequent truancy.
- (e) Staying out in the streets till late at night.
- (f) Troublesome to the neighbors, and using obscene language.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Several years' retardation.
- (b) Grasping eagerly at any pretext for staying away. "Illness" a frequent excuse for repeated truancy.
- (c) Dishonest and disobedient.
- (d) Lazy; indifferent to studies, and defiant to the teacher.
- (e) Attempted to teach their obscene habits to smaller girls.

3. HOME

- (a) Impertinent to parents.
- (b) Preferred the streets to the home.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Very annoying to the neighbors by reason of the objectionable habits taught the younger children of the street.
- (b) Would be constantly in the company of older boys, who would publicly take liberties with them.
- (c) Liked to scribble objectionable words and remarks on neighboring doorsteps and walls, to the annoyance of the neighborhood.
- (d) Greeted every reproof with a flow of gross obscenity.
- (e) Sought every opportunity to run on an errand for friend or foe; but would not return with the purchase or the change. When the victimized sender made impatient inquiries, they were either not to be found, or had some sad story to relate about the loss of the money.

- (f) To torment the neighbors who protested, they would frequently lead a "gang" of colored boys, from another street, into the hall-way of their home, and entice little girls to join them.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

(a) Older girl:

Splendid physique. Prematurely developed.

Well-shaped head, jet-black hair, and fine olive skin.

Long, narrow dark eyes, with arched brows and long lashes.

Full red lips. Badly carious teeth, and diseased tonsils and adenoids.

Nails on both hands cracked and broken from constant biting.

Ingrowing toe-nails.

(b) Younger girl:

Well-grown, rounded little body, built on more slender lines than her sister.

Black-haired and olive-skinned, with fine dark eyes and delicate features.

None of her sister's defects in nails and tonsils, but her teeth so badly diseased that she might be termed practically toothless. The contours of the mouth were already beginning to be affected by the missing teeth.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Reports:

Older Girl:

Intelligence: Normal mental capacity. I. C. 1.00.

Character: Essentially normal so far as data are given.

Health: Essentially normal.

Impression: Data inadequate for intelligent analysis.

Child appears to be doing well.

Younger Girl:

Intelligence: Essentially normal.

Character: Too few data to determine. Appears normal.

Health: Essentially normal.

Impression: Deferred.

(b) Personality Traits:

One duplicated the traits of the other. Both were very untidy in their habits, slovenly in their dress, and very careless about their personal appearance, even though they knew they were pretty.

They slouched lazily forward in their walk, and seemed to propel their bodies with difficulty. Both were inactive, inclined to be indolent and listless, and would sit staring out of a window for hours at a time.

Both were fond of good food, sweetmeats in particular, and were extremely hearty eaters.

Pleasure-loving and greatly allured by the moving pictures.

Preferred to associate with boys.

Disdainful of dolls and other toys usually fancied by girls, playing in preference with marbles and tops.

Younger speaking with a lisp, so pronounced that her speech was almost unintelligible.

Both were very prone to laughter, whether or not appropriate, or suited to the occasion.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: of low-type mentality, had no trade, and worked at infrequent intervals at odd jobs. He was a ne'er-do-well before his marriage, and his matrimonial responsibilities served only to increase his debts and vices.

In 1899, at that time quite young in years, and having only his wife and one baby to maintain, he applied to the Charities for assistance to support his family. For the next seven years, every constituent agency in the Charities of the city worked with the family in some capacity.

He refused to work, gambled with what money he could lay his hands on, drank, quarreled, and was extremely abusive to his wife and the children. In 1908, he was arrested for ill-treating his wife, and at that time the neighbors advised that the children be removed from the home, as they were neglected, starved, and often beaten by the man in his drunken fury. The case was finally referred to the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, which organization succeeded in bringing the matter to Court before His Honor, Judge W——.

The father was ordered to go to work, and the case postponed for six months. Later, the case was referred to the Children's Bureau. The man complained of feeling ill, and an examination revealed that he was suffering from tuberculosis, and that he was also afflicted with syphilis of the brain.

Within the next few years, he was arrested three times, once for beating his wife and children, the second time for assaulting one of his daughters, and the third time for non-support.

He manifested no interest in any member of his family, existed on the contributions allotted by the Charities, and indulged his vices whenever he found a favorable opportunity.

His only known relatives, two brothers in another city, were apparently normal, and refused to render any assistance, either to him or to his family. They claimed that they had become disgusted with him years ago, and had completely disowned him, as he was a disgrace to their family, which, they stated, was native American, self-respecting and honorable.

Mother: deemed feeble-minded, was coarse, quarrelsome, and fond of drinking to excess.

In appearance she was prematurely aged, having lost every vestige of the beauty that was undeniably hers in early youth. Her skin was hideously wrinkled and her mouth completely toothless, though she could not have been more than thirty-five years old at the time. Her nose, almost touching her chin, grotesquely brought to mind the generally accepted conception of a witch. The conical cap and the broomstick seemed lacking as necessary paraphernalia to her ragged accoutrements. She presented a most incongruous picture when she fondled her beautiful children.

She shamelessly neglected her poor home, was either unwilling or unable to supervise and care for her children, who were six in number and unusually well formed in body and attractive of face, and lightly accepted whatever the fates brought her.

She permitted her girls to roam the streets, while she sat contentedly chatting in her doorway, ensconced on a soap-box. At no time did she make any known effort for her own or her children's relief or assistance, and violently resisted every attempt to take them from her. She refused to permit her older girls to be taken from their home, even after each of them had given birth to an illegitimate child, at the age of thirteen.

Always slovenly, bedraggled, and quarrelsome, she was indeed a pitiful object to behold.

Of good extraction, she seemed the one blot in a family which numbered many honorable and esteemed members in business and professional classes. She was the recipient of a small income from these relatives, which she and her husband expended on the appetites that had greatly helped to destroy completely their feeble intellects.

Siblings: Oldest brother, was brought into court several times, for begging in the streets, vagrancy, and truancy. After many warnings, he was finally committed to a child-caring institution, as a minor without proper care.

On the plea of his mother, he was discharged to her, a year later, and shortly afterward was brought into the Juvenile Court on complaint of the neighbors. His scholarship and deportment at school were reported as being very poor, and he boasted that he was a member of a "gang." His institutional record had been quite favorable, but in his old environment he had quickly backslid to his former ways.

At this juncture, an uncle of his mother, a justice of the peace, became interested in the boy, and offered to care for him in his own home, in another city. His Honor granted the request, and gave the custody of the boy to his grand-uncle. The latter watched over the boy's interests, and finding that he was of average intelligence, permitted him to learn the trade he desired, which was that of machinist.

The youth did well at his chosen occupation, and at the age of twenty-two returned to his native city, and endeavored to enlighten and assist his parents. Unable to be of any service to them, he returned to live with the grand-uncle, for whom he entertained marked devotion and affection.

Later, he married a fine, intelligent girl, and the two subsequently applied for the release of the younger sisters from the Orphanage to their custody. As they manifested keen interest in the welfare of the children, and both young people were honest and sincere, their request was granted.

There is every indication that the grand-uncle's interest and work with the boy have produced most excellent results.

Oldest sister, grew up in the streets, without care and without schooling. She was extremely attractive. At the

age of ten she was brought into the Juvenile Court for some misdeed and was sent to the Home for the Friendless. A year later she was discharged to the mother, who had not ceased, during the entire time of the girl's stay at the institution, to beg for her release.

Shortly after, the mother brought the complaint to the Children's Bureau, that the girl was refractory, stayed out all hours at night, and associated with companions of undesirable character. She refused, however, to return the girl to the institution.

Several months later, the child, barely past her thirteenth year, gave birth to an illegitimate baby. The unfortunate young creature accused a youth with whom she had been associating, who was too young to pay the penalty for his indiscretion. Subsequently, the baby was given away for adoption, — despite the objections of its grandmother, who insisted on retaining it in her home, — and its mother pursued her former way.

Second sister, had been committed to two different institutions before she had attained her tenth year. It is not known at what age she was discharged to her parents, nor why; but at twelve years of age, she had succeeded in getting into difficulties with her teachers. Her attendance, scholarship, and deportment were considered unusually poor, and the school-attendance officer had been requested to investigate her home surroundings.

He reported that he had learned from the neighbors that the girl had undesirable associates, both white and colored, that she stayed out late at nights, and that her morals were questionable. The teacher substantiated these reports with proofs that the girl had not attended school more than two days out of every week, that she had passed vulgar and obscene notes to the boys in the classroom, and that she was insolent and uncontrollable. The mother stoutly denied the truth of any of these reports.

Numerous efforts were now made by the Children's Bureau to have the girl committed to an institution; but every time the mother interfered, and succeeded in frustrating the attempt.

In her thirteenth year, the girl became a mother. Upon her discharge from the hospital, she lived with her baby at her mother's home. The woman reported that the girl had been married to the father of her baby; but upon

investigation, this was found to be untrue. It was learned that the young man whom the girl accused had been prosecuted, and was compelled to pay three dollars a week toward the support of the baby.

The girl continued her associations with the young man, and, scarcely two years later, became a mother again. Two months after this birth, the young man was persuaded to marry the girl.

He is an operative in a factory, earning a meagre salary, and possessing an intellect that is not up to the average. His family connections are poor and humble, and are inclined to be antagonistic to the forced marriage.

Youngest sister, was not quite eight years old at the time her two sisters were admitted into the Orphanage. She was a very attractive child, good mentality, and was retiring and gentle in her manners.

She had stood timidly in the background of her sisters' adventures, and had made no attempt to become associated with them in their exploits. Shortly after their entrance into the Orphanage, it was deemed advisable to change her environment, and she too was admitted to the institution.

It was found that she was a tractable, easy-going child, with no undesirable tendencies. She progressed normally in the Home, had no difficulties at school, and needed nothing more than a wholesome, happy environment for her best development.

In the winter of 1921, she was transferred from the Orphanage to the home of her brother and sister-in-law, at their request, and has been reported as being very happy in her new home.

She made splendid progress in her school-work, and is regarded as a normal, promising case of childhood.

(b) Developmental:

Both girls had been normal babies at birth, and had been strong and healthy during infancy and early childhood, in spite of lack of care and attention.

Each had the usual children's diseases mildly, and though they never had the regular hours and wholesome food so necessary for the proper physical development of childhood, they still were sturdy and apparently healthy specimens.

Their unhappy home environment, supplemented by the

influences of the streets where they had spent the greater part of their short lives, undoubtedly paved the way for the juvenile delinquencies they committed. Confronted by the examples set by the older sisters in the home, and noticing similar patterns in the streets, the children developed in accordance with the immoral influences surrounding them.

The force of school morale was powerless to affect the abyss of degradation that engulfed them. No other wholesome interest touched their warped lives.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Older one constantly chewing nails and biting fingers; the younger, sucking the lower lip.

Extremely fond of candy and cake. Devoted to ice-cream cones.

No interest in books, games, or girls' sports.

Fond of watching the boys at work or at play.

(d) Home Conditions:

Practically since its establishment, the home was poorly furnished, poorly kept, and at no time was a fit place for children to live in.

At the time the oldest girl became a mother, the home was reported to be in the most miserable condition possible. The parents constantly quarreled, and frequently both were drunk. The children had absolutely no supervision or care from either of the parents.

The father made no effort to work and support his family, and the poverty at all times was crushing and deadening to the girls, who never had adequate food or clothing. Sympathetic neighbors frequently gave them shoes, that they might be enabled to attend school.

(e) Mental Interests:

None.

THE TREATMENT

They sat in the office, silent, sullen, and rebellious. Their eyes were downcast, their heads bent, and as yet they had not gotten over the shock of the sudden and unexpected bathing and combing that had greeted them almost upon their entrance to the institution. Their poor little bodies had been found to be in such a condition of neglect and uncleanness, that it had been necessary to give them more than ordinary attention. Now they felt oppressed and uncomfortable in their unaccustomed attire of fresh, clean clothes

and brand-new stockings and shoes, and moved uneasily in their chairs, while they nervously fingered their strange apparel.

Adding to their evident confusion was the fact that their supervisor was complaining on this, their first day in the institution, that they had taken fifty cents from her purse, that they had already defied her authority, and had told the other girls "bad things."

"Do you hear and understand the complaints made against you?" they were asked.

The older one tossed her head; the little one, said, "Yes 'm."

"Why did you take the lady's money?"

"'Cause we wanna run away from here," explained the older one.

"Sure, we don't like it here," added the other.

"Why?"

Both hesitated and looked questioningly at each other. "'Cause we want to go way from here," finally answered the older, who acted as leader and spokesman. "Yes 'm," affirmed the little one.

"But why should the lady lose her money if you choose to run away from here?"

"'Cause she got more money 'an my momma, in her pocket-book — I seen it. And we ain't got no money home," the older asserted in justification.

"We were gonna give momma the money," the smaller one said, in further palliation of the offense.

"Do you often give your mother the money you steal?"

"Not all the time," — very briefly, with a defiant shake of the head.

"Got to have a little bit for us," the other explained more fully.

"Does your mother ask you where you get the money?" was the next question put to them.

The older one answered with another query. "What for should she ask us?"

The smaller one was again more explanatory. "She's only too tickled to get money, 'cause she ain't never got none," she obligingly stated.

"Do you know that it is wrong to take money or other things that don't belong to you?"

Both blushed and silently hung their heads. The question was repeated.

"Guess so," the older said finally.

"Yes 'm," from the other.

"Why did you do that then?"

"'Cause we ain't got no money by ourselves," was the reply, to which the younger nodded in silent agreement.

"Do you know that the things you were telling the girls here were wrong and not nice things to tell anybody?"

The older one nodded her head affirmatively; the younger agreed with a naïve, "'Cause we know them are bad things."

"Then why should you tell them to the girls?"

The older shrugged her shoulders and obstinately tightened her lips, but the younger piped out, "Please, mister, we do that all the time."

"Why?"

"I dunno," she replied; "maybe 'cause we do."

"You understand that it is not right to do so?"

"Yes 'm," she replied cheerfully; "s'pose so."

The older one was now addressed. "Do you understand that when you do something that is wrong, knowing that it is wrong, you are likely to be punished severely?"

The child tossed her head in indifference. "If I'm smart, I don't have to get in no trouble," she stated with conviction.

"An' don't have to worry," added the younger.

"Who told you that?"

"My momma," replied the older one.

"An' my sisters Katie and Susie say that, too," the other hastened to put in, as adding weight to their argument.

"What did your mother tell you to do here in the Home?"

The younger opened her mouth to make some reply, but was silenced at a look from the other.

"Very well; if you would prefer that your mother should be sent for, to tell the things she told you to do here herself, we'll do that," they were coolly informed.

A look of alarm passed between them. "Guess you better tell 'im," whispered the smaller one to her sister.

"You tell," ordered the older, in a loud whisper.

The other obeyed, and began timidly: "My momma said that we must n't be good here, den we'll be sent back home."

"An' we want to go home," announced the older.

"Yes 'm, we do," affirmed the other.

They were, at this juncture, given to understand that wrongdoing would be attended with different results from those anticipated by their mother, and were advised to heed and obey their supervisor, if they desired to enjoy the privileges and freedom of the other children. At the same time, an account was tactfully given them of the good times and rewards in store for them,

should they adapt themselves to the environment of the institution, and a glowing tale of the future happy life before them was presented.

Slowly the sullenness and bitterness left the pretty, young faces, and they even smiled at the suggestion that the dancing teacher might be delighted with two such attractive pupils.

"Ah, I like to dance," brightly exclaimed the younger; "you know I always dance in the street with my sister when the dago man comes around with his organ."

The older nodded in the affirmative. "We always helped him get lots of pennies," she added.

"An' we never took his pennies, honest, we did n't, 'cause he was a good dago and let us play with the monkey," the smaller one chatted reminiscently.

The older, who was in possession of the purloined half-dollar, returned it willingly, with apologies, in which her sister joined; and both in a decidedly better frame of mind than they had entered, stood at the office door, about to take their leave with their appeased supervisor.

Suddenly the older voiced the thought in her mind. "We want to give our other clothes to momma. Kin we?"

As the ragged articles in question could be termed "clothes" only by the utmost stretch of the imagination, and there were no members in their home to be clothed by them, the question was rather an interesting one.

"Why do you want to send them home?" they were asked.

"'Cause you got an awful lot of things anyway," replied the older.

"We want to give them to poor children," added the smaller.

The request, for the sake of charity, was granted. Later, it was discovered that it was the mother's vision of the ragman's pittance that had influenced the request.

Their supervisor was privately requested to keep them under close surveillance for a while, and make every effort to prevent them from using obscene language to the children.

A message was then sent to the mother, requesting her presence in the office. She came eagerly, expecting to receive her children from a disarmed and disgusted institution official; but, instead, was calmly informed that her advice and counsels to her children were known, and that she would be brought into court for contributing to juvenile delinquency, unless she corrected her instructions to the children. At first she denied having advised them to be insubordinate and disobedient; then flew into a violent temper,

raging, screaming, and demanding that they be returned to her, and offering to "slap them" for "giving her away" — and further vowing all sorts of vengeance upon their heads.

She was at once a grotesque and pathetic object. Finally, when the realization came to her that neither vituperations nor lamentations would justify her conduct, and bring her sympathy, she calmed down somewhat. When she had recovered sufficient control to be reasoned with, she was informed that the decision of the judge had been to send the girls to the Reformatory; but that intercessions in their behalf had prevailed upon His Honor to give them a chance in the Orphanage. Confronted with the certainty of His Honor's disapproval of her interference with the children in the institution, she lost her audacity completely, and abjectly agreed to permit the girls to have what was undoubtedly for them, at the time, the opportunity of their lives.

The little girls were subsequently brought into the office on complaints of pilfering, and writing and saying "bad things." They were spoken to as plainly as was consistent with their youth and varied experiences, and very patiently handled. It took several months' tireless and tactful teaching and argument to convince them that their continued boasts to the older girls, that, "My sisters are younger 'an you, and they got babies already," were not quite the triumphant achievements they fancied.

Both were started in the First Grade at school; though they objected and attempted to play "hookey" at any and every possible occasion, they ultimately surrendered to the inevitable, and at first begrudgingly, then willingly, became interested in their school-work. The dancing class helped considerably. Both enjoyed dancing, and both were immensely flattered by the favorable comments evoked by their skill and grace in the dance.

Gradually, by dint of encouragement and rewards, they began to improve in scholarship and deportment. They were promoted to a higher grade, to their intense pride and satisfaction, and permitted themselves to become interested in the Domestic Science and Sewing classes. As the impertinent and obscene remarks and petty pilfering, which were the earmarks of their former environment, were obliterated in favor of more wholesome lessons and activities, they learned to live and play normally and happily.

The older girl had her tonsils and adenoids removed, and in time succeeded in overcoming her difficulty of yielding to the bad habit of biting her nails and fingers. Both received needed dental treatment, which benefited them at the time and was of inestimable value to them for the future. The younger, in particular, was

given the advantages of modern dentistry, and was probably saved from her mother's toothless fate in the prime of life.

Their morbid and unwholesome interest in boys was diverted into more normal channels, through the medium of work and play, which was arranged to absorb their time completely. After their minds had been sufficiently influenced by the happy, childlike life about them, so that their former ideas and fancies were rendered obscure and wrong by comparison and constant contact, they were released from all espionage, and mingled freely with the other children. It was observed with great satisfaction that they seemed to have completely forgotten about the "bad things" they had such a penchant for saying and writing.

As they adapted themselves to the regular, wholesome life of the Orphanage, they improved in their various classes at the Home and in school, and became charming, lovable children. At the end of a year there was nothing problematic about them.

Then the mother decided that it was about time that the girls were returned to her home. She felt that she needed assistance in caring for her daughters' babies, as well as willing ears into which to pour her various troubles and disagreements concerning these same daughters. Her request at the office for the return of the girls being refused, she took matters into her own hands, and advised the children to run away from the Home.

This time she reckoned with different children from those she had known. The girls, to her amazement, stoutly refused to heed her suggestions or desires. Losing control of herself completely in her outraged feelings, she fell upon them, berated them soundly with threats and curses, and beat them, until they were rescued from her hands, and she was forced into the office. It was with great difficulty that she was finally induced to control herself sufficiently to speak intelligibly.

"Them kids got to come home with me," she insisted.

"I don't want to go. I like to stay here; please don't take me away," pleaded the older.

"Me too," wept the younger.

At which pleas, the mother became hysterical again, and threatened to bring a policeman to arrest the wicked Superintendent who had stolen her children's affections from her. At this, the two girls burst out into wails of fear and entreaty, and each clinging to a hand of the Superintendent, as if in protection, implored their mother to be merciful and not put him into prison.

The mother absolutely refused to grant any clemency, and after a while, when the storm in her mind had somewhat abated, she left, still in high dudgeon.

Whether or not she besought the aid of a policeman, she did beseech the assistance of the court in regaining her children, by taking out a writ of habeas corpus. The girls were of course brought to court, though they pleaded that they be permitted to remain at the Home, and to write a letter to the Judge instead, praying that they should not be returned to their old home.

His Honor, who was acquainted with the case, attempted to show the mother how her children had been benefited in the institution; but she would have none of that.

"They don't love me any more," she insisted. "They mind him; they don't mind me, and they are my children and I want them."

His Honor further attempted to palliate the enormity of the wrongs that had been done her.

"Don't you realize that the influence of your home is bad for growing girls?" he asked.

"They are good children now, and my home won't hurt them," she asserted.

"Was it the best place for your two older daughters?" questioned the Judge.

"It sure was," she replied.

"Why then did each of them, when still a child, have such a sad experience?" asked His Honor.

"That's nothing," she retorted, coolly tossing her head; "such a thing happens every day in the best families."

"That may be," responded His Honor thoughtfully, "but it is decidedly unusual for lightning to strike the same house twice in the same place. So to prevent a repetition of lightning strokes, we'll permit the children to remain where they are at present."

Though the mother was outraged at the decision, the children were delighted and thanked the Judge in their own way. The older, extending her hand, said, "I thank you very much, because I like it there," and smiled happily.

The younger timidly nodded her head, murmured, "I thank you, Mr. Judge," and looked gravely at her mother.

The latter, though enraged at the turn of events, still controlled herself and made no scene, as had at first been apprehended. When, several months later, her youngest child was also sent to the Home, she made no further objections, but begged that she be permitted to visit the children whenever she desired.

This request was granted, with the understanding that at no time should she seek to influence them to any nefarious schemes or plans. She would come several times a week to see them, and hide-

ous though she was in appearance, the sight of the three beautiful children clustering about her presented a picture rarely beautiful and interesting.

There was no further difficulty with either of the girls in the Home. They were absolutely normal children, and displayed no objectionable trait, sexual or otherwise.

THE RESULT

From the Benevolent Society's Records:

"In the latter part of September, 1921, the brother and sister-in-law of the J—— children sent a request to the Children's Bureau, that the three girls be released to them from the Orphanage. Upon investigation, it was found that the home was in fairly good condition, the young man being an industrious and steady worker, and his wife, a young woman of intelligence, who appeared to be sincerely interested in the children.

"The two older girls were sent to Dr. D—— for an examination, and the following report was submitted concerning them:

"The girls were seen first in December, 1918. They have improved considerably since then. They are children of usual intelligence and appear to be well-balanced and of normal health. There appears to be no reason for feeling that the girls have any unusual sexual tendencies. It is only in the light of their family history that this appears to be emphasized. On going over the situation with the sister-in-law, I am impressed with her honesty and sincerity in helping the situation. She appears intelligent, and seems quite anxious to assist the children. Her home arrangements are such, that the oldest girl will have a room by herself within a few weeks. The income appears ample. I therefore advise, by all means, that the girls be allowed to go to the home of the brother and sister-in-law. (Signed) F. L. D.'

"Early in November, 1921, the three girls were placed in the home of their brother and sister-in-law.

"They are very happy in their new home, attend school regularly, and matters seem very satisfactory."

CHAPTER VI

PRECOCIOUS

CASE A, HARRY K—— “JUST ANOTHER EDISON”

CASE B, POLLY S—— “MISS SPITFIRE”

CASE C, CARRIE F—— “THE SCAPEGOAT”

CASE A

HARRY K——, "JUST ANOTHER EDISON"

Entered February 23, 1916. Age 11 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Constant truancy.
- (b) Bunking out for days at a time.
- (c) Violent and uncontrollable temper. Would throw "things" at anybody who enraged him.
- (d) Frequent fighting in the streets.
- (e) Objectionable language.

2. SCHOOL

- (a) Truant since the age of five years, when he first entered school.
- (b) At the age of eleven, still in the First Grade.
- (c) Obstinate; sullen; always ready to fight either teachers or pupils.
- (d) Not the slightest interest in school-work.

3. HOME

- (a) Quarrelsome and defiant.
- (b) Beyond control of mother.
- (c) His own master, doing whatever he desired, and following blindly the mood of the moment.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Anti-social and antagonistic to anyone, old or young, differing from him.
- (b) No boy friends. On intimate terms with chauffeurs, employees of garages, machine-shops, and engine-rooms. Partial to the janitors of buildings.
- (c) No moral responsibility, and prepared violently to resent the least attempt to interfere with his conduct.
- (d) Court Record: Charged with obstinate and continued truancy. Minor without proper care.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Small, dark, thin, and wiry.
- (b) Undernourished; ten pounds underweight. Diseased tonsils and adenoids. Carious teeth.
- (c) Enuresis. Afraid to sleep alone, or in the dark.
- (d) Very poor eater, fussy about food, and having definite likes and dislikes. If unable to get what was desired, preferred going without the meal.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — (Psychiatric Clinic):

When patient was brought to the dispensary, his history showed that he was extremely nervous. Backward in school (ungraded class). Various fears; quick-tempered (throws things at his teacher); obstinate and greatly spoiled by his mother. Always greatly interested in electricity. Has his own batteries at home; haunts automobile repair-shops and feels quite certain that he has a "patent" which will be worth money.

Patient sleeps poorly, has frequent night-terrors and enuresis. Is afraid the house is haunted, and sees spirits on the street, sometimes in the daytime.

Patient has never got on well at school; the boys tease him and call him a "nut." He spends all his time drawing instead of doing his school-work.

Diagnosis — Neurotic child; Binet-Simon 10 years.

- (b) Personality Traits:

Untidy in person, and so careless in habits, that he resembled nothing as much as an animated scarecrow. His face was smeared with grease, dirt, and cinders, and his hands were always coated with a heavy layer of some black substance.

Keen, intelligent, impulsive, and very daring.

Entertained definite and decided opinions regarding his ability, and would brook no interference and invited no interest.

Insisted upon being left to himself, to do as he pleased.

Always carried his "invention" under his arm jealously, and discouraged any attempts or suggestions regarding its disposal.

His black eyes, gleaming in his grimy, thin face, gave him an uncanny, wild look, at variance with his childish features.

When not employed, he would be biting fiercely at his dirt-caked nails.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: good, honest man, but had no education and no special training for any trade. Was an unskilled workman, working at anything he picked up, and was constantly struggling with poverty.

Compelled to apply for assistance for his family to the local benevolent organization. He had always worked industriously and faithfully to support his family when he obtained work, but his earnings had always been insufficient.

The Charities established a small grocery store for the assistance of the family; he took charge of the store when not employed, and helped in it morning and night when he had a job.

He was subject to bronchial attacks, which were neglected. Finally, he suffered an attack of broncho-pneumonia. He was taken to the hospital where he developed an abscess of the brain, which proved fatal.

His brothers and sisters, all very poor and struggling, were scattered in various cities, and unable to render any assistance. The family had no other resources than the charitable organization interested.

Mother: of good, average family of working people. Had rather attractive personality. No relatives or friends in the city.

She had suffered much sorrow and deprivation in her life, and had become soured and embittered. At times she was greatly depressed.

After her husband's death she went out to work, leaving her daughter, a girl of twelve, in charge of the store and the children.

Complained that she had never been able to make both ends meet, and described her poverty as the contributing factor to her children's delinquencies.

Appeared very fond of the children, and quite anxious to assist them in any way possible to her.

Was unable to guide or direct their energies, or to exert

any influence over their instincts. She bitterly deplored her inability to control them.

Her neighbors liked and trusted her, and she was sociable and cordial to them.

Siblings: Oldest brother, normal boy with average intellect; liked a good time and was glad to leave school for the chance of going to work and making money.

Had not been graduated from school, and had no desire for educational advantages and no particular bent for any trade or occupation.

He worked in a book-bindery for a while and gave his mother half of his wages. Then he got tired of that, became very much discouraged, and regarded his responsibilities as hateful burdens.

He was discontented with his home surroundings, which he claimed made him very unhappy, and finally went to New York to live with an aunt.

He returned in a few weeks, complaining that he had been unable to secure a job.

Unwillingly assisted his mother in the store. Picked up odd jobs now and then.

Has no trade and no definite aim or purpose in life.

Older sister, girl of frail constitution and very ordinary mentality.

She has chronic heart-trouble and on one occasion spent five months at the hospital.

Was retarded several years at school. Retardation probably caused by frequent long absences from school. Shortly after her father's death, she took charge of the store and the children, while the mother went out to work.

She left school at the age of fifteen, with graduation several years ahead of her.

Is a gentle, willing child, but sadly lacking in spirit and initiative.

Younger brother, a "problem" at the age of ten.

He had poliomyelitis as a baby, and the disease left both legs crippled. Uses crutches and wears braces.

Physician had advised that he be operated on to improve his deformities, but the boy absolutely refused to submit to an operation.

Capitalized deformity for begging in the streets.

Was a truant, exceedingly troublesome and disobedient.

On one occasion was found drunk in a doorway.

Sold newspapers, played with colored children (in a southern city), and displayed a fiery and unmanageable temper.

Vicious tendencies and masturbation.

Psychiatrist's Report on boy:

Examination shows boy of normal intelligence and poorly balanced disposition; quite mechanical, and with marked sexual precocity. Should be placed in an institution temporarily. Old paralysis does not interfere with normal activities.

(b) Developmental:

He was a normal, healthy baby. Had few illnesses as a child, but was always high-strung, nervous, and inclined to be irritable when contradicted.

Had always slept with either his father or older brother, and always had a light burning. While still a very young child, he had cried himself into convulsions when he woke suddenly and found himself in the dark. He never read books, was never told stories, yet was constantly conjuring up ghosts and devils, and in mortal terror of them.

Never made friends among the children; kept to himself, and from the age of five, had fixed up a tiny corner in the bedroom, where he kept bits of wire, nails, broken tools, and anything and everything that came in his way, that was of metal. He jealously guarded this corner, and would fight fiendishly if any attempt were made to disturb his "treasures."

He never played with his brothers or sister; the usual boy's toys and playthings meant nothing to him; he was happy and contented only when he was tinkering in the machine-shop next door to his home, and later, when he grew older, in the garages and engine-rooms in the neighborhood.

He refused to attend school practically from the day he started, and, when seven years old, he was reported to the School-Attendance Department, as being troublesome, a truant, and beyond the control of his parents. He had been suspended from school for throwing his slate at a boy. He had also had a fight with an older and stronger boy than himself and had sustained injuries to his nose, which necessitated three different operations at intervals.

His father, during his lifetime, was unable to have any influence over the boy and was greatly worried as to the

boy's possible future. Six months before his death, he had the boy taken to the Psychiatric Clinic for a mental test, and was informed that the boy was, "intelligent, neurotic, and a victim of environment."

(c) Habits and Interests:

Careless about person. Hates soap and water. Would rather wear tatters and rags than take the time to change clothes.

Fights at the slightest provocation. Hasty, reckless, and determined to have his own way.

Not the least desire for the usual pleasures enjoyed by healthy boys; does not care for the moving pictures or the theatres.

Unconscious of sex.

No interest or desire for any books, games, or pleasures usually demanded and enjoyed by children.

Desired only to be left alone in his favorite haunts at the machine-shop, spending all his time upon a "patent" that would bring him "lots of money."

(d) Home Conditions:

Under the strain of poverty, the parents had become nervous, irritable, and quarrelsome. He felt the lack of respect existing between the two, and his reaction was disobedience, impatience, and defiance.

The family had very little furniture and the home was unattractive and in very poor condition. He sought more congenial and, for him, enjoyable surroundings at the earliest possible age.

The fact that the mother was too busy to give him personal care or attention, either before or after his father's death, threw him upon his own resources.

Home influence and family affection had been non-existent in his life.

(e) Mental Interests:

Mechanical and electrical devices exclusively.

THE TREATMENT

As the last resource before the final one of the Reformatory, he was very unwillingly dragged into the Orphanage, one bright day, by the exhausted, perspiring social worker, to whom had been assigned the extremely difficult task of conveying him to his new home. The unfortunate young woman had taken him duly from his own home before noon, and deeming the time particularly ap-

proprie and timely, had endeavored mildly and gently to show him the error of his ways by tactful reproofs. To her intense amazement and horror, he stopped right in the street before her, stuck out his tongue at her, and, as if that were not sufficiently humiliating, put his hand to his nose, called her a vile name, and disappeared before her astounded eyes.

Then began the wanderings of the young woman from street to street; and finally, when the day was well advanced, she enlisted the assistance of the mother and the two at last discovered him in a machine-shop, from which he was taken protesting and swearing. The unhappy young woman, anxious to perform her duty and take him to the Home, coaxed, pleaded, and bribed, and finally, after many extravagant promises, got his consent to accompany her. She took the precaution of silence and held tightly to his arm the entire way.

His frown was heavy and black. "What's yer think I am?" he queried belligerently, his black eyes roving over the many handy articles upon the desk. "Yer got anoder guess coming, if yer think I'm goin' to stay in yer old home — nixie doin'."

The ink-well was quickly removed from his vision which had been persistently focused upon it, and attention directed to the "interesting" filthy box he carried carefully in the crook of his arm.

"Hi, what's that? That's my patent, that's what it is — yer want ter see it?"

An eager assent and interest most tactfully displayed, and his scowl changed to a bright look and he opened his precious "patent" and displayed what seemed to be a circle of twisted bits of wires, nails, and coils, which sprung into action and emitted sparks as he dexterously touched a tiny plug.

"See that," he said, triumphantly, "that's no fool thing I tell yer. Yer don't have to recharge batteries when I got my 'patent' — see?"

With that he started to demonstrate the powers of his wonderful invention, and finding an attentive and interested listener, asked for a dead battery that he might show how it would work. Within the next half-hour, he not only recharged the battery, but fixed two electric bells that had rather providentially got out of order, and did something to the potato-peeler that made it buzz so merrily, that the cook was with difficulty prevented from hugging him to death in her rapture.

With the proud light of the victor in his gleaming, black eyes, he turned to his treasured box again, "Say, that guy Edison's got

nothin' on me, I tell yer," he coolly observed, tapping his box significantly; "when I grow up, I'll show him a thing — just yer see! Yer won't have ter burn coal to make steam. He thinks he knows it all — huh! — not much; wait till I show 'im!"

While the weary social worker, glad to be relieved of her burden, adroitly absconded, Edison's future rival held forth in fiery and picturesque language of the wonders he was going to invent and of the enormous amounts of money he was going to make which should be spent for batteries and engines and machines of vast proportions, for nearly an hour. Asked whether he was n't hungry, he retorted contemptuously, "Aw, what's the good of eatin'? Only fools eat three meals a day; I only eat when I'm hungry — and I have n't got time to be hungry."

He condescended, however, to grant the special privilege of his company for the evening meal, after which he promptly gave the following information: "Say, yer don't need to think that I'm going to stay here, because I won't. Yer can't make me stay either; I ain't no charity case, and I don't want none of yer charity, so I'm goin' to clear out."

He immediately proceeded to make good his threat. That night he disappeared, was returned the next day, disappeared again, was returned, and so on, six times in two weeks.

At his last escapade, he was again taken into the office, grim, defiant, and rebellious. A picture of Thomas Edison was produced and laid before him; he blinked and regarded it with animosity. "You think you're going to be a greater man than he when you grow up? Do you think *he* would act like you in your place?" he was asked; and then followed a description of the early life and struggles of the great man.

He listened intently and with absorbed interest. At the close, he said sullenly, "That's just what I want to do, like him, make my own way. He was n't in no institution and I ain't goin' to be — my mother has a grocery store and I don't have to be in no institution."

After many arguments, a decision was finally reached to which he agreed. It was proposed that he give the institution a fair and square trial for a month (not thirty-one days; he expressly had it understood as thirty days), and if at the end of that time, he still felt that he did not want to stay in the institution, then he would be returned to his environment and no one would molest him further.

He was scrupulously honest and had a strong moral sense, as evinced by his statement at the end of the interview. "I do just

what I promise," he stated, "and I'll stay here for a whole month even if it makes me bughouse."

During the thirty days' grace, he was permitted to fix up a "tool shop" for himself in a corner of the basement. Here he brought a most remarkable collection of batteries, broken pipes, strange coils, odd twisted wires and cords, a motley collection of "junk" as the children called the prized treasures, when at rare moments he graciously permitted them to have a peep into his "shop."

He was given all the electrical and mechanical jobs that had to be done in the house and in the nearby neighbors' houses, and he proved himself extraordinarily proficient in fixing and mending things. Often, in order to keep him supplied with "jobs," it was necessary to remove fuses from fuse-boxes, take out plugs, cut wires, and perform such other destructiveness. Knowing his aversion to school, that matter was completely overlooked for the time, and he was permitted to spend the whole day doing his beloved "jobs," and really was so skillful that the plumber, the carpenter, and the electrician were unnecessary.

He consented with rather poor grace to a physical examination, and then strenuously objected to having his tonsils and adenoids "yanked out" as he expressed it, and his teeth given attention. "That all was n't in the bargain," he grumbled; but though he objected and fought, he honorably held to the agreement. He very reluctantly consented to wear clean clothes and use plenty of soap and water. To the food given him four times a day, he grunted approval and remarked, "Them things don't do yer no harm anyways." He rather liked the games and amusements of the children, but was ashamed of his gracelessness and would not participate. He gave a boy a bloody nose because the youngster laughed and mocked at him when he tried to play ball. But a few days later, he played ball as well as any of the boys. It was skating time, and he had been kept busy fixing skates. Finally he mustered enough courage to borrow a pair and try skating. He returned rosy and glowing. "Gee," he exclaimed, "that's some fun, you bet."

Once during the day, he would come into the office for a general chat, or to express his general dissatisfaction with things or complain about some "rowdy," to whom he had promised a beating for "getting fresh," or trying to get into his "shop." He was introduced to the theatres and said the only people worth seeing were those who did "tricks"; everything else, including the moving pictures, were for "sissies."

The eve of the twenty-ninth day, he entered the office. "Say," he greeted, "you're a regalar guy and I like you. I guess I want to stay here." After which dubious compliment, he took himself off without further remark.

A friendship had been "hooked up."

The next day the question of school was very tactfully broached. He flared up at once. "What for?" he demanded. "Them teachers can't learn me nothin'. Do they know how to fix things? Nope! Their fingers is like putty; what is the use of their learnin'? They can't make no patents. I fixed all the things that broke in the school, — ask Miss W——, — they could n't do it. I don't care if I don't know that four and five make eight."

For answer, a beautifully illustrated book on electrical engineering was craftily put into his hands. He took it indifferently, opened several pages, became instantly interested, and wildly enthusiastic about "them fine machines." The cut of one appliance specially entranced him. "Gee, I wish I knew what all that printing says," he remarked impatiently.

That was the opportunity sought for!

"Do you think that engineer could have written and told people about his wonderful machine, if he had never learned to read and write?" he was asked.

The force in the query struck him. His eyes were wide with thought. A new vista seemed suddenly to have been opened before him. While he was pondering, the advantages of an education were carefully explained; he was requested to think what manner of a man the writer of the book would have been, if he, too, could not read or write, and thought that "five and four make eight." Also, did not Edison, whom he intended to rival, have a good education, so that he could read, write, and direct people?

"Well," — he sighed deeply, and shook his head as if in submission to a bitter fate, — "it's no use; I see I have ter get an eddication. Here goes! Aw right! I start to school to-morrow."

He tramped out despondently, the book clutched in his hand.

The next day he was admitted to school and put in the First Grade. His pride revolted at being a member of the "kid class"; but he had pledged his word to stick it out, and though his early school career was attended with some difficulty, he pluckily stuck to his task, and, in four years, made the eight grades of the grammar school. There were times when he had to withstand temptations that tried his soul; once in particular, an early crony of his, an engineer on one of the railroads, told him he was wasting time in school and could, with his natural ability, easily become an

electrical engineer; also that he was willing to assist him to such an opportunity. The boy came into the office and frankly stated his dilemma, saying that he did not feel that he should trust to his own judgment.

As he became accustomed to the normal life in the Orphanage, his health improved, he became less nervous, and in time the enuresis with which he had been troubled totally disappeared. He joined the Boy Scouts, became a Monitor, and had the happy influence of a wholesome environment to counteract the virus of his former happy-go-lucky life.

His "patent" slumbered peacefully in his shop, till such time as he was a real electrical engineer and could perfect it to such a degree that Washington would grant him a patent on it. Meanwhile, his kit of tools, which were real tools now (he was worth his weight in gold to the institution for the number of "jobs" he did as well as any professional), was his greatest delight, and he gradually became known as a "genius" to the neighborhood, which constantly demanded his services. He actually had a small income from the "jobs" he was doing for people, and was quite happy and prosperous.

He had completely lost all his old terrors and fears, and was a normal, wholesome lad — an asset to the institution.

He was quite unhappy when he learned that his friend, the Superintendent, was leaving for another city. He begged to be permitted to accompany him, and when it was explained that that would be impossible, he declared with his old violence, that he was going to make it his business to make it possible. "You'll see, I'll be in B—— before you're there very long," he threatened.

THE RESULT

For about a year, the boy continued with his high-school studies, doing his odd "jobs" at the Home, and bombarding his friend with letters, begging that he be permitted to come to B——.

In August, 1921, the following report was received:

"Home conditions were reinvestigated for his possible discharge from the Orphanage. Mother had sold store, as business was no longer profitable. She was quite willing to have boy return home. The Children's Bureau thinks, however, that he should not be permitted to return home, as he might give up school and go to work. The boy is very anxious to go to B——, to be with his friend, and take advantage of the excellent schools of Technology offered in B——.

"Sept. 6, 1921. — At Children's Bureau meeting, Mr. C——

reported that the boy insists on going to B——, and that sufficient funds were secured from a few interested friends for him. Communications regarding the matter to be held with B——."

Psychiatrist's report on boy, now sixteen years old, on November 9, 1921:

Intelligence: Satisfactory. I. C. 1.15. Mental capacity 18 years.

Character: Apparently good basis and good organization.

Health: Good.

Impression: Boy's interest in entering the Mechanics' Arts School in B—— appears to be a normal one and should be encouraged.

On a stormy night in late November, 1921, somewhere near midnight, a light, timid knock sounded upon the door of the Superintendent's apartments at the B—— Orphanage.

When the door opened, there stood a rain-soaked, bedraggled, and weary figure, carrying the well-remembered "patent" in the familiar crook of the arm, a great, heavy tool-chest in the other hand, which also clutched a stout rope bound about a sort of telescopic case, hanging like a caudal appendage behind the boy and his paraphernalia.

"Well," he remarked with a triumphant grin, "I'm here. I told you I would come, did n't I?"

Well, he was here, — bag, baggage, and "patent," — and he was quite happy, in spite of long wanderings with a heavy load on a bitter, wild night.

"It was no use; I just meant business," he declared; "I told them that they would be in my way and not let me make any progress in my work. When I'm an electrical engineer, I'll go back and give them all a lift; now I got to get a lift myself. When do you want me to start at the Tech?"

Well, he started his "Tech," works happily three hours each day at the well-equipped machine-shop at the school, and digs away another three hours, not so happily, at "book learning," which, if not as beloved, is still industriously conned.

Here, too, he has fixed up a shop with his tools, such prized possessions as a lathe, drill-press, electric emery-wheel, and screw-drivers, monkey-wrenches, and what not; takes special delight in the carpentry class, and himself teaches a class of six boys whom he picked for aptness and intelligence, besides doing "jobs" for the institution.

Should he ever desire to write books in reference to the various

"patents" he is still going to secure at Washington, without a doubt he will have the necessary education to do so. As for the "patents" — he is still absorbingly interested in everything electrical and mechanical, and still uses every dollar he earns doing a "job" to increase his priceless stock of tools, and still hopes to rival the great Edison.

In consultation with Dr. H——, the psychiatric authority, the following report was given in January, 1922:

Summary, —

Physical: Fair development and nutrition. Fairly good strength. Friendly expression. Question of eyesight.

Mental: Good general ability, but exceedingly irregular. (Perhaps influenced on some tests by attitude.) Strangely poor in visualizations. Poor apperceptions. Not good in motor-control. Poor in arithmetic, even in simple arithmetic. Very poor in following printed directions. Good rote-learning ability. Good language ability. Exceedingly good mechanical ability shown in many ways. Personality characteristics very important: immensely eccentric, notional, self-assertive, non-conformist, somewhat of a poser. Indifferent to many suggestions, but if convinced and pride aroused, evidently exerts himself. Mostly pleasant, manly; takes himself and his own problems very seriously. Reported sensitive, loyal, honest. Reported earlier very imaginative; almost hallucinations.

Non-delinquent, but formerly excessive truant.

Problem: Vocational and educational guidance.

Background: (a) Heredity: Father dead. Mother somewhat unreliable. Her family unknown. (Siblings: Older brother shiftless; younger brother dishonest.) (b) Developmental: Irregular. (c) Home conditions: Mother keeps small store. This boy in Orphanage since 11 years old. Followed Superintendent to B—— last September. (d) There are many interesting features of this case that appear, such as this boy's early refusal to go to school and then making up 8 grades in 4 years, etc. (e) Difficulty in school because of lack of elementary training.

Outlook: If this boy desires to become an electrical engineer, as he states, then he ought to be allowed to go a little way in that course and be shown where his deficiencies lie, and then should make them up. It would be absolutely impossible for him to make any great progress until he does better in mathematics, and also will have to learn to comprehend more rapidly what he reads. Is very well fitted for mechanical work but will not get very far unless he develops in the above subjects. We wonder whether he could get employment next summer in a place where he could see that

the men higher up have to have a better academic education. Eyes should be at once examined by a specialist.

(Superintendent certainly has done wonderful work for this boy, who undoubtedly shows considerable genius. It remains to be seen whether the boy will conform enough to get education sufficient to know the fundamentals of mechanics. Another question is whether this boy's very peculiar personality trends will enable him to float successfully. He evidently is a case for mental hygiene; and, particularly during his adolescent period, it is very wise for him to be under the auspices of the Superintendent. School-adjustments will have to be made entirely according to what the boy will take up. We would, of course, think of such a place as W—— Institute.)

CASE B

POLLY S——, "MISS SPITFIRE"

Entered May 6, 1917. Age 9 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Stealing from mother and the neighbors.
- (b) Insolent and defiant to stepfather, at whom she was fond of throwing all sorts and sizes of missiles within her reach, during an attack of fury.
- (c) Incurable beggar, liar, and mischief-maker.
- (d) Anti-social. Extremely quarrelsome and abusive.
- (e) Horribly profane language at the slightest provocation. Her hand always ready to strike and her mouth open to give utterance to her favorite expressions: "I hate you! I'll kill you! I'll stick a knife in your liver!"
- (f) Stayed out very late at night fighting, brawling, and creating as much havoc as lay in her power, in the neighborhood, with both old and young.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Occasional truancy.
- (b) Reached the First Grade, and could go no further.
- (c) Teacher reported that at times the girl was quite bright, and at other times acted as if she were feeble-minded. Also, that she had frequent epileptic attacks during sessions.
- (d) Disrespectful and insulting to the principal and teachers. Defiant of their authority, scornful of their punishments, and hurling the vilest insults at them at any opportunity that presented itself.
- (e) Maintained that she did not like school, and wanted nothing to do with "them d—n fools."

3. HOME

- (a) Extremely troublesome and mischievous.
- (b) Took a malicious delight in "staging" a quarrel between her mother and stepfather, and would stand fiendishly by and throw oil upon the fire, by encouraging the former and taunting and tormenting the latter.

- (c) Fond of stealing into her stepfather's bedroom, and taking from the pockets whatever she found.
- (d) Unmanageable, audacious, and defiant.
- (e) Furious tantrums and vile language at the least provocation.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Frowned and scowled away any attempt to befriend her.
- (b) A mischievous "busybody," who would peep through key-holes, slyly listen to conversations, and so exaggerate and color her reports of them to interested parties, that grief was frequently the unhappy result.
- (c) Teased and hated the children of the neighborhood, and tormented their elders with petty thefts, obscene language, and the most atrocious lies.
- (d) Violent outbursts of rage, followed by epileptic attacks at any attempt to cross her.
- (e) In January, 1917, the mother complained to the Children's Bureau that the girl was incorrigible.
In April, 1917, neighbors had the child brought to the Juvenile Court on the charge of stealing \$15.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Short for her age; thin, pale, almost livid complexion; staring light gray eyes, and scanty brown hair.
- (b) Features, though small, yet decidedly matured.
- (c) Heavy, dark brows in continual frown render the face unchildlike, and impart a sinister effect to the features.
- (d) Large mouth, somewhat deformed by an upward twist at one of the corners, evidently caused by some cut or wound that had not received proper medical attention.
- (e) Bad, carious teeth; enlarged and swollen tonsils and adenoids. The tongue was a poor, pitiful object to behold. Bitten into and lacerated by her teeth during convulsions and "spells," it had been sewed in many places, and was very badly scarred and had jagged edges.
- (f) Her body was bruised in many places, probably the results of blows or falls.
- (g) Lips constantly quivering and fingers clenching and unclenching. Drooping head, round shoulders, and unsteady gait. Enuresis.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examinations — From Benevolent Society's Records:

"In 1915, the child was brought to the hospital in a state of collapse. She was frothing at the mouth, gnashing her teeth, and rolling her eyes. Dr. R—— diagnosed the case as an epileptic fit.

"In 1916, the same physician treated her for convulsions, and said she was mentally defective.

"Six months later, the consulting psychiatrist of the hospital diagnosed the case as a mild form of epilepsy. He recommended that the child be permitted to remain in her home under treatment, provided home conditions were favorable.

"In December, 1916, Dr. T——, the M—— H—— psychiatrist, examined the girl, and reported that she was precocious, not retarded in any way. He believed that much of the child's behavior was due to improper home surroundings and to the mother's temperament. He did not consider her delinquent or incorrigible, and advised that she be placed in the Orphanage.

"A few days after Dr. T—— saw the girl, she had an epileptic attack in school. She was brought to the Peoples' Dispensary and examined by Dr. H—— J——, who diagnosed her case as epilepsy or hysteria.

"In April, 1917, after being brought into the Juvenile Court for theft, she was sent to the Psychiatric Clinic and examined. She was found to be one year retarded, but showed no evidence of abnormality. Dr. D—— recommended that the girl be removed from the home at once. She was also examined by Dr. K——, who said she was epileptic and mentally undeveloped. He advised that she be admitted to R—— (an institution for the feeble-minded)."

Psychiatrist's Report at time of child's admission to the Orphanage, May, 1917:

Intelligence: Mental capacity 8 years. I. C. .85. Social classification backward.

Character: Poor foundation, with an hereditary basis.

History of spasms for a number of years.

Character poorly organized.

Health: Very poor. Irregular convulsive attacks, simulating epilepsy.

Impression: My impression has always been that this

girl would best be treated in an institution where she might receive sympathetic, scientific supervision. The social agency dealing with the case, however, has felt differently, and the girl has been placed in a number of boarding homes. The result has always shown an improved condition directly; but a slump, after a few weeks, to a still worse condition, with more frequent spasms.

(b) **Personality Traits:**

Careless in dress and about person. When in tantrums, would consciously or unconsciously tear clothes, throw her head against the wall, and stamp violently upon the floor.

Extremely talkative, and speaks rapidly and thoughtlessly; apparently gives utterance to anything and everything the moment it occurs to her. Frequently incoherent in speech.

Very obstinate, and determined to have her own way at any cost.

Spiteful and revengeful. Harbors a wrong, real or fancied, till it becomes an obsession. Feels satisfied when she has given better than she received.

Keen, shrewd sense of values. Unconscious sense of humor.

Absolutely fearless. Imaginative and possessing unbounded curiosity.

No sex tendencies.

3. SOCIAL

(a) **Heredity:**

Father: first became known to the Benevolent Society when he applied for aid for his family in 1914.

He was a passive, luckless individual, without a trade, who eked out a scanty existence from the odd jobs he was always getting and losing. He was regarded as a stupid, good-natured fellow, without initiative and without the backbone to bear up under trouble or misfortune.

He was illiterate, and improvidently married when he was hardly able to maintain himself. No viciousness of any kind and no known bad habits were imputed to him during his lifetime.

His only known relatives, a brother and a sister, were, like him, weak and easy-going individuals, whose poverty prevented them from coming to his assistance at any time.

A sense of pride undoubtedly kept him from applying to the Society for assistance sooner than he did. When aid was first rendered to his indigent family, he was found to be suffering from a severe rectal disease and general debility. He also had a physical deformity of the lower limbs, which had been neglected for years.

In the winter of 1915, he was taken very ill, contracted pneumonia, and died at the hospital.

Mother: a woman of ordinary intelligence, had no more than a primary-school education. She came from a family of normal, hard-working laborers, who had always lived from hand to mouth. Several of her brothers were employed as tailors, working hard to support their own large families. Two of her sisters had married and were living in other cities. They too were poverty-stricken.

Frequent miscarriages had depleted her energies, and her three children, born within six years, kept her constantly occupied. At the time of her husband's death, she had a fibroid condition of the chest but no definite T. B. She was under-nourished and extremely nervous.

The family had no source of income other than was supplied it by the Benevolent Society. Her children were frequently ill, and she refused to have them removed to the hospital when they most seriously needed trained medical attention. She frustrated all efforts to have them examined, claiming that her antagonism to hospitals was caused by her husband's death. "They did n't care for him right at the hospital; that's why he died," she insisted.

In April, 1916, a group of indignant neighbors visited the Society's offices, and reported that she had been associating with a married man of ill-repute, for a long time. On being questioned, the woman admitted that the man visited her occasionally, and that she intended to marry him as soon as he secured a divorce from his wife, who was then living in another state.

Investigation showed that the man had deserted his wife and several young children, and had no known legitimate means of livelihood. As the wife was quite anxious to secure a divorce from him, — "to get rid of him forever," as she stated, — the woman was advised to have nothing to do with the man till the divorce from his wife had been granted. She consented to abide by this arrangement.

In September, 1916, she married the man, though facts were presented to her proving that he had served a term of two years in the penitentiary, on the charge of attempting to shoot a girl.

After this second marriage, there was constant quarreling between the pair. The woman was greatly depressed, and complained that her husband was a gambler and ill-treated her. On one occasion she came running to the Society, alleging that the man had deserted her and that she was in want. However, he returned within a few days, giving the excuse that he had been so busy playing cards with a friend, that he had not noticed the passing of time.

Later, the unhappiness in the home increased, and he complained that it was caused by the younger girl, who hated and despised him, and was always tormenting him, assisted by her brother, two years older than she. The man affirmed his suspicion that the little girl was encouraging her brother to assist her in preventing any harmony between him and his wife, and threatened to desert the family, unless he were rid of the two children. He was fond of the oldest girl, twelve years old.

In December, 1917, when both younger children had been removed from the home, the woman reported that her husband wanted to leave her and go to France. He also wanted her to divorce him. The following month she gave birth to his child, and, a few weeks later, had him arrested for beating her. He was paroled.

The woman is unattractive in appearance, slovenly, very irritable and excitable, and has the reputation in her neighborhood of having "a nasty, big mouth."

Siblings: *Oldest sister*, a girl of good physique, fair appearance and rather poor mentality. Her progress at school was slow, and she either could not, or would not, industriously apply herself to her studies.

She was inclined to be indolent and easy-going, and gave no trouble either to her mother or stepfather; the latter displayed a certain fondness for her, which was regarded not without trepidation by the charitable organizations.

Her younger brother's and sister's delinquencies in no wise affected her, and she made no effort to assist in their care. She was affectionate to her mother and liked her stepfather, who, she agreed was maltreated by the two younger children.

She expressed no definite ambitions or interests.

Older brother, was the companion and very frequently the "tool" of his younger sister, who spurred him on to mischief, especially against the stepfather, who treated him with great brutality.

He was under-nourished and poorly developed for his age. His head was of a peculiar conical shape, which later, in the Orphanage, brought him the nickname of "Pea-nut" from the children.

In 1915, at that time nine years of age, he was reported to the Children's Bureau as being troublesome and "very bad" in school. Upon investigation, it was learned that the boy's deportment was good, his scholarship fair, and that he attended school regularly. He appeared to be greatly neglected, and looked starved.

Shortly after, it was again reported that the boy was exceedingly mischievous and could not be handled by the mother. Finally, the news came that he had been brought into the Juvenile Court the third time, for stealing.

He was examined by Dr. T——, the psychiatrist, who reported that the boy's case was rather unusual. He passed a number of intelligence tests, which were normal for his age, while he missed some which were far below his age. Dr. T—— stated that it was possible that the boy was approaching the limit of his mental development. He advised that he be placed in the Orphanage.

In October, 1916, the mother brought the complaint that the boy was incorrigible. She said he would not attend school and that he would leave the house early in the morning and remain out till late at night. This time, the boy's teacher reported that he was a truant.

The stepfather claimed that he could do nothing with the boy. On October 26, he was sent to a disciplinary school. He was released in April, 1917, and recommitted a month later, on the complaint of his mother and stepfather.

The following month, he was released, as a case which was not in need of severe discipline, and was then admitted to the Orphanage, about one month later than his sister.

He was put on a special diet, and efforts were made to build up his physical condition, which was extremely poor.

The psychiatrist who examined him reported the following:

Intelligence: Inferior. I. C. .71.

Character: Poor hereditary basis; poorly organized.

Health: Appears normal.

Impression: A case for vocational adjustment on or after fourteen years of age.

In the Orphanage, he responded favorably to the measures taken for his physical improvement; and while at first he was an inveterate thief and liar, in time, with patience and care, he was made to yield to the influences that were brought to bear upon him.

He became interested in games and sports, was permitted to learn type-setting, which appealed strongly to him, and later even qualified as a Boy Scout. He had no difficulty in school from the very start, and made excellent progress in his studies.

His intellect was mediocre, but he was willing, industrious, and showed some aptitude as a printer. After his second year at the Home, he gave no further trouble, and developed into an honest and reliable young fellow.

When last heard from, which was in November, 1922, he was employed on a newspaper as a printer, living with his mother, and contributing part of his salary toward the support of the home.

Baby sister, too young for any analysis.

(b) Developmental:

She had been a premature baby, weighing five pounds at birth; and from the mother's statement that "she was always crying and vomiting," it may be assumed that she was colicky and had suffered from digestive disturbances.

Her parents' extreme poverty undoubtedly prevented her from receiving the proper nourishment and care; several of the neighbors had taken her into their homes during those intervals in her early childhood, when her mother was ill or "so nervous and excited that she could n't care for the child."

As a tiny girl, she displayed a fiery temper, which at first caused great amusement, and later was a cause for lamentation. Her mother thought that the gossip she picked up from the neighbors and brought to her was "cute"; and being desirous of keeping abreast with the neighborhood affairs, encouraged the child to keep her eyes and ears wide open and report to her what she saw and heard.

When the neighbors discovered that the little girl, who was the recipient of their sympathetic attentions, was the direct cause of many tongue-lashings they received from her mother, and also the instrument which had produced much discord and bitterness among themselves, they forbade her to enter their homes. The child, not understanding their motives, felt that they had affronted her, and endeavored to get even by becoming a general nuisance to them.

Finding that they objected strenuously to the flock of colored children who were at her beck and call, she spitefully brought as many colored children as she could gather together, to the very doors of the neighbors' homes. When they threatened her, she taunted them with things she had heard, or imagined she had heard, about their affairs, and brought their animosity upon her head.

She would influence the neighborhood's little "toughs" to break windows, pull out bells, scratch off paint, and write obscene words on her neighbors' walls and doors.

Most of the usual children's ailments had fallen to her lot, and always she had recovered at home, though given scant care. At the age of seven, she was suddenly stricken with spinal meningitis. Upon her recovery, she became subject to "spells," which the physician who had attended her diagnosed as "chronic epileptic seizures, resulting from her severe illness."

If she had been a nuisance before, she now became a menace to the long-suffering neighborhood, which feared to cross her, lest she have a "fit." She would have a spell after almost every tantrum; and as her spells of fury were many, so also were the epileptic spells which followed.

Now she practically lived in the streets, doing generally what she pleased, as her mother's attitude toward her was one of indifference; and the neighbors, while they pitied the unfortunate little creature, were still afraid to encourage any intimate relations with her.

Her father's death brought little change in her affairs, as she continued to roam the streets at will. When her stepfather first called to see her mother, she took a violent dislike to the man and ordered him from the house. Upon his refusal to go, she grabbed a bottle of beer from the table, and flung it at him. Though the man nimbly avoided contact with her missile, he neither forgave nor

forgot, with the result that there was constant warfare between the two.

About this time, the Social Agency interested in the case, having had the child examined, and being desirous of giving her the benefit of the suggestion that she be removed from her home to a more wholesome environment, secured an excellent boarding home for her. For several weeks, the child seemed greatly benefited by the change, then returned to her former habits with a vengeance. The foster-mother asked to be relieved of her at once.

The same results followed in the other boarding homes to which she was sent successively. She was returned to her mother. In her home she found the man she detested a frequent and welcomed guest. Thereupon, all the rage and hatred that had been filling her heart for the many to whom she believed she owed some kind of a grudge became centred upon one object, and she sought every opportunity to show her dislike. She influenced her brother to become her ally in schemes and plans to torment the man and make his visits unpleasant.

Frequently he retaliated by giving her a sound beating which served only to infuriate her the more. She would then fight back with the nearest missile at hand, and puny little fists, till she had a "fit."

The man ultimately got his revenge when he married the mother. He refused to permit the child in the home; and whether the weather was mild or severe, she would be compelled to sleep anywhere but in the house, when he was there. Very often, she spent a night in the hallway or under the stoop of the house. Nor would he permit any food to be given her, maintaining that none of his money should be expended in "feeding up that devil."

The mother at first weakly remonstrated; then, intimidated by the man's threats of desertion if she harbored the child, meekly abandoned her in his presence, and tried to pass a crust to her now and then, slyly and secretly, through a window or a door. She had succeeded in disposing of the boy, who had also been a bone of contention between her husband and herself, but the girl still remained a troublesome problem to her by reason of the child's affliction.

The Social Agency had, at this juncture, made desperate efforts to keep the girl in a boarding home, but her tempera-

ment, plus the "spells," were entirely too much for any boarding mother. So the child now practically lived in the streets, eating what she could get from her mother or a sympathetic neighbor, and cared for only in the intervals when it was certain that the stepfather would not surprise her in the home.

The question of her admission to the Orphanage had been under consideration for some time at the Children's Bureau; but in view of the fact that her epileptic fits came suddenly and unexpectedly, it was not considered wholesome or desirable for the children to witness any such seizures. However, as matters grew from bad to worse, and the boarding home was completely abandoned as a resource for the unfortunate child, it became eminently necessary to dispose of her in some institution. It was then that the Orphanage opened its doors — hardly daring to hope.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Fond of teasing, poking fun at people and children, and delighted in distorting names and substituting ridiculous nicknames instead.

Readily submits to any demands by one she likes, but flies off in a fury at the slightest request of anybody she dislikes.

When pleased with one, would give expression to such endearments as "dearest, darling, you!" whether old or young; when displeased, out would fly, glibly and rapidly, at one breath: "You pig, rat, dog, cat, mouse!" to either man or child, indiscriminately.

Wistfully wondered several times a day, whether "the whole world would be sorry if I killed myself dead."

Constant ponderings about suicide and how it felt to be dead.

Had no desire for any playthings or books. Cared nothing for the moving-picture houses, and was not interested in the usual little girls' games or other joys.

Liked cats and dogs when they were "kittens." She appeared afraid of black cats, becoming quite agitated at sight of one, and shrieking, "That black thing is going to bring me bad luck!"

Very fond of carrying tales and causing mischief to particular friends or chums, whether children or grown-ups.

(d) Home Conditions:

The first home the child knew was in a particularly poor and unkempt neighborhood, and almost from her infancy she was acquainted with poverty, misery, and unhappiness. When wrangling and quarreling came into her code of the accepted order of things, it was quite natural for her neurotic temperament to be so influenced by her environment, that she knew no other form of self-expression than through quarrels.

Her neighbors' distrust and suspicion of her she repaid in her own way, with resultant sorrow and unhappiness to herself.

The mother's marriage, to the man she hated with all her heart, aroused all her antagonism and fury; and as if the home was not unharmonious and unhappy enough for her, it now became the very source that brought on the frenzied rages always ending in epileptic fits.

In her various boarding homes she was tolerated at the most for a few weeks, with the result that none of the homes was able to exert even a temporary beneficial result on the strange, furious spirit, that was yet a child.

(e) Mental Interests:

Devising ways and means to catch people she did not like, in what she imagined might be embarrassing situations.

Cudgeling her brains how to pun on names of people she met for the first time, whom, for some reason or other best known to her, she did not want to like, or who offended her in some way.

Trying to find out "new swear words."

Endeavoring to decide whether, if she drank a whole bottle of ink, she would become a "nigger" or "die dead."

Also interested in the problem whether "they would do something to me if I stick a knife in that dog's liver." (Reference to her stepfather.)

THE TREATMENT

She had been informed by her mother that now she must be a good girl and learn to behave, as she was going to be put into an institution, where she had better be good if she knew what was best for her. She faced her mother angrily and defiantly, shrieked violent curses upon all institutions, and defied them to take her

as they had her brother. "I shan't go, I shan't, I tell you," she yelled; "just let them come here to take me."

So it happened that when the worker called for her, she was suddenly greeted with volleys of sticks and stones at the very entrance to the house; and though a thorough search was made by the mother and the neighbors, the child could not be located. The worker retreated, sorely disgusted, but returned the next day; this time she was met by the child, surrounded by a body-guard of colored boys and girls, who assisted her to hurl defiance in shrill, vile oaths. It was only with great difficulty and most tactful persuasion, that the child was finally prevailed upon to listen to the proposition suggested to her by the worker, that the two of them take a walk to talk over things between themselves.

"What'll you give me if I walk down the block with you?" queried the child.

The worker held out a quarter tantalizingly, which the child immediately grabbed, grinned triumphantly at her followers, to whom she called out, "Wait here for me!" and with a "Come on, you!" to her escort, condescended to go as far as "that corner block." Standing there, right under the lamp-post which she held on to, she relieved her mind about the things she thought of the people in the institution, and avowed her intention of remaining just where she d—n pleased.

Her exasperated companion, eager to be relieved as soon as possible of the unpleasant duty of taking her to the institution, begged, pleaded, and coaxed, all to no avail. The child remained adamant to all her entreaties. Finally, a passing cab brought an inspiration to the worker which was eagerly grasped. She signaled to the driver, and when he drove up to the curb, asked the child if she would n't like a nice ride. "Sure thing," gleefully cried the impish creature, jumping into the nearest seat, overjoyed at the prospect of her first ride. She was too busy testing the resilient powers of the strange and wholly satisfying cushions, which both interested and pleased her, to take note what instructions were being given the driver.

During the entire ride, she amused herself immensely by making faces at all children she saw in the street, from the window of the cab, and manifested a keen delight in the thought that she was undoubtedly awakening envy in their bosoms with her unaccustomed splendor. Her joyous speculations, however, received a severe tumble, when the cab suddenly stopped before a large building; and when she peeped out in amazement, the realization came to her that she had been tricked.

Her fury rose in a second and knew no bounds. She shrieked and pulled her hair; dared anyone to take her out of the car or touch her; called the worker the most vile names, scratching the young woman's hands and tearing her clothes. The latter, in desperation, hoping to avoid a gathering crowd and perhaps prevent a possible scandal, sent an S. O. S. message to the office by the driver, while she essayed to quiet the frantic child.

"Whoo, mister, you better git right outside and help the young lady; she sure is having some time with that little divil," was the encouraging advice promptly presented, without preamble of any kind.

A glance at the struggling, frenzied child sufficed to give warning of the necessity for calming her, if the "spell" that seemed imminent was to be avoided. She would have none of the newcomer's machinations for her removal from the machine. "I shan't get out," she screamed, her voice gasping with rage; "I won't get out, I tell you! You can't make me — I hate you, I hate you — I'll kill you!"

"All right, little girl, you need n't come out if you don't want to," she was told quietly.

She stopped abruptly in the midst of another yell, with mouth wide open, her lips quivering pitifully.

"You may take her back home if she wants to go." This was addressed to the worker, who nodded in comprehension, while the child gazed with round-eyed wonder. "We don't want any children here who don't want to come and have all the good things we give them."

"Ya, good things you give 'em!" she burst out in hot indignation. "You make them kids starve and beat 'em black and blue — I know, 'cause Mrs. Jiggs told my momma so, and my momma says that I got to be good or you'll kill me —"

"Sorry neither your mother nor Mrs. Jiggs told you the truth. Suppose you just come in and see the kids yourself. Just for a visit. If you don't like the place, back home you go whenever you like."

"Cross your heart — hope to die, you'll let me go home when I want?" she questioned, curiosity evidently getting the better of her reluctance as the sound of children's voices at play came distinctly to her ears.

"Cross my heart — hope to die!" was the solemn assurance given her.

"Aw right, then!" She bounded up suddenly, jumped out of the machine willingly, but stopped at the curb, stuck out her

tongue with an ugly grimace at the poor abashed worker, shrieked, "I'm glad to get rid of you — you're an ugly, cock-eyed cat!" and turned to enter the portals of her new home.

That evening after supper, she was magnanimous enough to announce, "Guess I'll try it here. That dog's home now anyhow, an' he chases me out all the time."

"What dog?" she was asked.

"Doncherknow?" she queried in amazement, "that dog my mamma got married to? Guess I'll stick a knife in his liver and kill 'im."

Her physical condition was the first concern. She was put in charge of the nurse who had been prepared beforehand for the peculiar case, which, it was understood by her and the other members of the house, was to be handled with all possible gentleness and consideration.

Upon being introduced to her future guardian, she sized up that lady with her keen, sharp glance, and said, "You don't need to think I'll be afraid of you, even if you are a nurse, 'cause I ain't afraid of nobody. I spit on the doctor and the nurse who fixed my nose when I had a fit, 'cause they hurt me when they sewed me up." She indicated the hardly healed scar across the bridge of her nose, and then, satisfied that she had issued warning enough for the day, permitted herself to retire.

Following the physician's advice, she was put upon a special diet, in which meats, acids, and all strongly spiced foods were eliminated. Bromides were administered as prescribed, three times daily. Quietude and naps were insisted upon, though she at first objected strenuously and threatened to run away. The nurse bore patiently with the wild tantrums aroused every day for one reason or another. The child protested wildly against the restraint upon her liberties, and could not understand why she should be compelled to retire early, or bathe regularly, asserting, "There's no sense in wasting so much water, 'cause I'm clean"; and she insisted on being permitted to run the streets as the mood struck her.

Her first few days at the Home were attended with violent excitement and commotion. She was like an animated top, spinning crazily and unable to stop. She was here, she was there; now she was advising the little girls what to do, then she was exhorting the big girls what not to do, or fighting with them and the boys, big or little, on general principles. She was defying the nurse and calling her ugly names, or she was teasing the cook and, the next moment, mocking a supervisor, or perhaps the janitor.

It was a particularly enjoyable pastime for her to stand in the front hall and insult the chance visitor. It took a certain gentleman, a good friend of the institution, some time to get over his rueful experience with her at that period. As he chanced to enter the hall at a time when she was parading up and down the corridor, she waylaid him with the gentle request for his name. Unsuspectingly, he complied with the apparently harmless demand, and the result was an instantaneous twisting and distorting of a perfectly respectable cognomen, to the chagrin and no small discomfort of its owner.

She seemed to have a certain genius for nicknaming, and for ludicrously transposing names, which never failed to enrage those whom she chose so to torment. No newcomer escaped her, whether man or child; and if she could not learn his name, some particular feature was immediately made the butt of her uncanny powers, if for some reason he failed to make a good impression upon her.

Her conduct was reproduced in school, to the shocked amazement of the scandalized principal and teachers, who at first felt that the child was too abnormal to be permitted to mingle with the other children. Later, they freely admitted their error, but at the time, their outraged feelings revolted at the new pupil.

While it was necessary to restrain her impulses and desires, it was important to permit free scope to her energies, in order to further the physical and mental developmental processes of her nature. She took kindly to the special food prepared for her; rather liked the experience of being taken to the Park, which she said was "lots nicer 'an A—— Street"; and enjoyed immensely the distinction of having a "nurse tagging after me like a swell."

The general experience of the private home with her had been an average of two weeks without epileptic spells. In her own home, it was understood that she had been in the habit of getting recurrent attacks of the malady about twice weekly. Now, as nearly a month had expired without a genuine "spell," to the intense gratification of all interested, the hope was entertained that the epileptic fits had been grossly exaggerated. But it remained for her mother to shatter any such pleasing idea. That lady, struck with a sudden maternal desire to visit her daughter for the first time, in the Orphanage, called unexpectedly to see her; before the two had been in each other's company for a half-hour, they had a violent dispute, which culminated for the child in a "fit." The poor creature was then a dreadful sight to behold: writhing, with muscles tense and rigid, frothing mouth, and rolling

eyes. For the next two days, she lay in bed, pale and wan, hardly able to rise, yet insisting that she be permitted to get up. "Oh, my eye!" she said, scornfully; "what a fuss you make about a little fit! that one was nothing; you oughter see some of 'em I had!"

Still, perhaps subconsciously, she was pleased with the "fuss" made about her, for she went straight from the infirmary, when the nurse permitted her to leave her bed, to the office, and without any preliminaries, stated in her curt, emphatic tones, "Just you wait till I get hold of Mrs. Jiggs; I'll show her how to go and tell lies about them kids starved and beat black and blue." She blinked her eyes to emphasize her decision. "You just bet she'll get it!" she added in a venomous whisper that boded ill for Mrs. Jiggs, whoever she might be. (It may not be amiss to mention here that ultimately Mrs. Jiggs "got it.")

"Perhaps Mrs. Jiggs was wrongly informed by somebody," was a suggestion made, in the hope of its having a calming effect.

"Then she has business to find out if the other Mrs. Jiggs was n't telling her lots of lies," she burst out stormily.

"How do you know the other lady was also a Mrs. Jiggs?"

She looked up in quick astonishment and laughed heartily, "Chee," she cried exultingly, "he don't know Mrs. Jiggs. Don't you read them funny papers? Doncherknow Mrs. Jiggs in the papers — she's such a mean, nasty thing — I hate her!"

"Can you read the papers?" was now asked her in astonishment.

"Oh, I can't read, you know that!" she said disdainfully, "It's Mickey Jones who's in the Fourth Grade — he used to read them papers to me." She shook her head proudly and boasted. "Ya, and also about murders, and hold-ups, and lots more things — you just bet I know all about 'em."

Her accomplishments were passed without comment. "But what has Mrs. Jiggs in the funny papers to do with the Mrs. Jiggs you know?" Curiosity really compelled the question.

"Aw, my eye!" she ejaculated in wonder. "He don't understand yet! Doncherknow that a mean, nasty lady is called Mrs. Jiggs, and that lady's name is really Mrs. Brookes, but I hate her, so I call her Mrs. Jiggs, and now everybody does — see?" She laughed in her amusement and elation.

"Don't you think you'd like to learn to read the funny papers yourself?"

"Guess so," she said, indifferently; "the kids here read 'em to me when I want."

"But that does n't make you learn how to read. Have you any idea what fine stories have been written for little girls to read and enjoy?"

"Who wrote them?"

"People who like little girls."

She tossed her head in evident bewilderment. "Ain't they crazy? What for do they like little girls?" she queried.

"Because it helps little girls to grow up good and fine ladies, if people are interested in them and give them nice things to read."

"Oh, my eye!" she was thinking deeply. Then, thoughtfully, "Guess when Mrs. Jiggs and my momma and the rest of them were little girls, nobody was 'terested in them — ain't it?"

"But people are interested in you. If you got picture-books with nice stories, would you try real hard and be a good girl at school and learn to read them?"

"Guess it's gonna be awful to sit still an' not make fun of the teacher," she answered slowly, considering; "but 'spose I better try."

And she did try! She was given various picture-books, profusely illustrated with colored pictures and written in monosyllables, which appealed to her and encouraged her newly aroused desire to learn to read for herself. Though she was often listless and fidgety at school, the teacher discerned a certain effort that she was plainly trying to make, and encouraged and flattered her.

Further to encourage her efforts and ambition, she was taken to a toy shop, which aroused her to rapture. She was promised that a certain big doll she coveted should be hers, if, at the end of the month, her report card made a good showing. The C of her report card really did not, in all justice, entitle her to the reward; but the C was such a distinct mark of progress and improvement, that it was felt wise to temper justice with charity.

She named the doll "Dearest Darling," and lavished on it a wealth of affection. It was a great comfort to her at all times, and a solace during and after her tantrums. She would confide to the doll her troubles and joys, and would then fly into a rage because it did not speak to her. "Dunce, big dunce," she would scream, "why don't you answer me? Why do you just look at me?" She would scold and curse at it till exhausted; then burst into a tempest of repentant sobs, clasp it to her heart, and beg its forgiveness.

The next epileptic fit was caused by an agency other than the mother, who had been warned and whose visits were watched. There was in the institution a youngster gifted with surpassing cunning in devising the ways and means for money-making; perhaps a future financier, but at the present time never so happy as when planning and arranging a circus and charging a copper or two for admission; or offering to assist or prepare entirely the

home-work for an indolent student at so much per page; or making a collection of fruit or cake or other sweetmeats from the children, to be sold outside to the highest bidder.

On one occasion he had discovered a boy in a lower grade at his school, who was the proud possessor of a glass eye. He must have felt the glow of satisfaction that pervaded the immortal P. T. Barnum in the possession of some unusual freak, when he formed a partnership with the one-eyed one to exhibit the glass eye and the empty socket in which it belonged, at such favorable occasions as recesses, to such beholders as were willing to pay "a penny a look."

This enterprising youngster, though not a witness of the "fit," had heard of it and had begun speculations concerning its possibilities, with the result that as usual a money-making scheme presented itself to him. He could not approach the child on the way to and from school, as she was in charge of the oldest and most reliable girl in the Home, a monitor of whose sympathy with his plan he was not all assured. So he bided his time till he met the child in the playground alone.

He said he knew a good plan to make money and wanted her as a partner. She readily consented to assist him. Then followed his proposition.

"I spoke to the children in school," he told her, "and they'll pay us a nickel a piece if you'll throw a fit for them to-morrow at recess."

Well, she "threw a fit" right there and then. She screamed and clutched at his face, tearing, scratching, biting, and dragged him after her in a frenzy, straight to the office, where she pushed the terrified youngster in a corner and belabored him with her fists, till the two were separated. Then with a shriek, she succumbed to an epileptic seizure, more severe than the first one had been.

A conference was immediately held with the monitors, and arrangements were made whereby the possibility of any future teasing or innuendoes was to be strictly avoided.

As it was the vacation period by this time, she was sent to the parks and kept busy working in her garden. The outdoor life invigorated her and she seemed to have forgotten her last experience and forgiven the cause of it. The small girls of her age were busily employed one hour each day at sewing or embroidering, and when it was suggested to her, that if she learned to sew and embroider, she would be able to make dresses for her "Dearest Darling," she responded enthusiastically. In time she did very well and learned to sew and embroider with skill.

Her ability for appropriating property not her own, while not manifested as openly and cleverly as her faculty for twisting respectable names into undesirable sobriquets, was as annoying as the latter and of even graver consequence. At first she took what odd change she could manage to extract from a supervisor's pocket or from some unguarded room. Then, waxing bolder, she rifled the children's lockers and took anything she found that appealed to her fancy. Haled to the office for these misdemeanors, she would never seek to deny her thefts, always rather to defend the reasons which prompted them.

"Them kids get plenty money every Sunday," she insisted, sullenly maintaining her right to share in the others' coin, "and I only take some, not all away from 'em."

"How should you like to have a boy or a girl take anything away from you?"

"I'd kill 'im," she quickly replied.

"Then why should n't the same be done to you?"

"But I ain't got no money like them kids — nobody don't give me money," she pleaded in her defense.

"Suppose somebody who's a great friend of yours, will arrange to give you money every Sunday, what will you do then?"

"That'll be beoo-ti-full!" she ejaculated enthusiastically, "then I don't have to bother with them kids' money no more."

She was put on a weekly allowance of ten cents, and her monitor soon reported that the weekly depredations from the girls' lockers had ceased. As time advanced, and she acquired a definite sense about one's right to one's own property, she forbore any of the petty thefts that for some time had been annoying to the people about her. Later, she even reached the stage where she admonished and chastised her brother and others for similar weaknesses.

As the summer passed, she slowly submitted to the influences brought to bear upon her and reacted very favorably to the kindness and wholesome, regular life given her. She had had another attack when, on being denied a certain privilege she desired, she told her woes to her "Dearest Darling," who simply stared at her without speaking any comfort. Enraged, she flew upon the poor doll, hauled and mauled it out of shape and form. When finally aware of the damage she had done to her most prized possession, she atoned for it with a "spell." Upon her recovery, she expressed the most contrite sorrow, and arranged a funeral for the irrevocably broken doll, which she herself buried with tenderness and tears in a part of the yard that was henceforth sacred to her and the remains of "Dearest Darling." This unfortunate demise was made

the subject of a talk to her on the necessity of controlling a destructive temper, and after the interview, she avowed bitterly, "that never, never, never, will I get like a murderer again!"

This resolve may have held good for "Dearest Darlings," but unfortunately it did not apply in the case of "Mrs. Jiggs," who through some ill chance had become a member of the Ladies' Auxiliary, and as such attended the opening reception in the fall which inaugurated the beginning of the ladies' work for the year.

The child, feeling herself by this time a very important item in the family life of the Home, was at every public function extremely busy, popping in and out of every conceivable corner to satisfy herself that everything was as it should be. While the other children were at their duties or play, she preferred to evade the supervisor, and seek whatever opportunity she could find to make herself not only seen but also heard. On this particular occasion, though she had agreed that the playroom was a more fitting place for her than the reception hall, she somehow could not resist the curiosity that assailed her "terribly," and found herself eagerly watching the throng of ladies.

All would have been well if the guardian angel of "Mrs. Jiggs" had not been napping. But as "Mrs. Jiggs" was unconscious of her unprotected state, she noticed the child at the door, and being eager, for some reason best known to herself, to bring out the child in conversation, she called the attention of several of the ladies to the small figure, after a whispered communication and eloquent glances, none of which those shrewd young ears or eyes missed.

Not warned by the narrowed eyes, she beckoned to the child, and offered her some sweetmeats, which were refused. Still not understanding, the lady said, "My, how she has grown! She must be a good girl now, are n't you?"

"I am," was the laconic reply.

"Do you like to stay here? Are they good to you?" questioned the lady further, unwisely blind to the storm signals in that face.

She had hardly caught her breath, before the child was upon her in a fury. "You nasty Mrs. Jiggs!" she yelled, "You big liar! You said the kids are starved and beaten black and blue — you big liar, is it your business how I like it here? Did you ever give me anything to eat when I was hungry? In the ground I got you —"¹

She was herself lifted up from the ground at this juncture bodily and forcibly removed to the office, where she faced her captor, and

¹ Her favorite expression for wishing one dead and buried.

said, smiling triumphantly, "Did n't I tell you that I'd give it to her!"

It was a relief that her timely capture had avoided a spell, yet she was taken to task as severely as possible for breaking her word about losing her temper.

"But I promised first that I'd give it to Mrs. Jiggs," she insisted, "an' don't you have to keep your word?"

As "Mrs. Jiggs" had fled, the matter ended with a moral talk on the advisability of forgiving and forgetting.

In school, she was promoted to the Second Grade; there the teachers expressed their amazement at the change in the child's disposition and conduct. She was actually becoming interested in her studies, and her "fits" were no longer a matter of apprehension to them.

About this time, the formation of the Junior Red Cross Circle as an Auxiliary to the monitors' Red Cross Circle, which was engaged in sewing and knitting for the Red Cross Organization, materially assisted in conserving the child's energies for a sane and successful development of her individuality. After consideration, it was decided to make the experiment of having the child as leader of the Junior Red Cross Circle.

She was called into the office. "You know of course that we are at war with Germany?" she was asked.

She nodded her head. "Wish I was big so's I could help our soldiers," she said.

"You can, even though you're not big," she was told.

"Whoopee!" (This exclamation had superseded "Oh, my eye!") "Tell me what to do and I'll do it right away and win the war."

"Good! Now you'll show everybody how anxious you are to win the war. You'll get all the little girls together and start them knitting helmets, wristlets, everything the Red Cross lady asks."

"I'll get the kids now," she cried in delight, and out she flew like a flash into the playground, calling the various names, and shouting "We got to win the War — We got to show those Germans they can't start with us no more — Come on, quick!"

The Circle was started in the next half-hour, and from that time till the Armistice was signed, she relaxed neither vigilance nor efforts to "win the war." Though the good Red Cross instructor ripped as many helmets as the "leader" of the Circle turned out in the first week of her toil, not to enumerate the many impossible "helmets" and "wristlets" which the monitors' Circle had to rip and reknit, the Junior Red Cross Circle, after the first month of its existence, was a source of pride and great satisfaction to the institution.

The child as a leader was supremely happy. She flew about like a busy bee, anxious to do more than her workers, and determined that the little girls should make as good a showing as the older girls. She was as cheerful as she was busy, and frequently led the small girls in song as they sat in their small chairs, knitting. Had she been permitted, she would have worked nights, so great was her enthusiasm. She was fond of flattery and would laugh happily if told that she was "helping the soldiers, and winning the war."

The girl monitors were instrumental in exercising a big-sisterly influence, which was very beneficial to the neglected child. Hearing no oaths, curses, or obscene language, in time she stopped using her former flow of objectionable eloquence. She became interested in her brother, and would scold him severely for any misdemeanor, often coming into the office to appeal for him, and always ending with the, to her, incontrovertible excuse, "You see he's a boy — and of course, all boys are bad." She would admonish and lecture him and end with the plea that he should not make her ashamed of him.

Having learned to concentrate her mind upon work, through the medium of her Red Cross Circle, it was no longer difficult for her to concentrate on her studies at school. She progressed and was promoted to the Third Grade.

Her physical condition improved immensely and she began to put on weight rapidly. Her "spells" had become very infrequent. In the year that followed, she had but three.

She took special delight in her garden, and won the First Prize for the best garden, offered by a director of the institution.

The physician who attended her held out the hope that, with a continued special diet and a wholesome, happy routine of life, she would in all probability outgrow her nervous tension, the direct cause of the epileptic spells.

THE RESULT

Excerpts from Letter, dated January 20, 1921:

"The back sliding of Polly S—— has been a source of considerable worry to us, and we wonder what to do with the girl. She had been a normal case for such a long time, that we are in a dilemma concerning her. Mr. W—— wants her taken out of the Home. He says the girl has been a source of much contention during the past month. She has had an attack each month for the past six months, starting almost about the time you went to B——, and has displayed a terrible temper. The stepfather re-

fused to permit the girl to come home, threatening to leave if she was placed under the same roof with him. Dr. D—— again examined the girl, said her mental condition had considerably improved and advised that since she could not be happy now at the institution, she should be transferred to some other Orphanage or to a good private home. He also advised that her bromide treatments be continued regularly, and instructions as to diet and elimination of salt in food be observed."

March 16, 1921.

"Regarding Polly S——, the following will interest you: She in common with the other children was given a pair of new shoes. She objected to hers, complaining they were n't stylish and that they pinched her at the toes. Investigation proved that there was no ground to her complaint, and she was informed that she would have to wear those shoes or none. At which she rose in a fury, stormed at Mr. W——, swore she would wear no shoes then, and flew out screaming to the front door.

"Naturally in a moment she had a crowd about her, to whom she supplied the information that the wicked people within compelled her to wear shoes which hurt her feet, beat her, and so on. Mr. W—— attempted to get her into the house, but she repulsed him and ran away — where, do you think? To the offices of the Organization, a distance of no less than two miles, as you may remember, with the new shoes in her hands and the old ones unlaced and very torn, upon her feet.

"She informed Mrs. G—— that she was not going to wear those new shoes and, if she could not get the kind of shoes she wanted, she would go bare-footed. Well, she got her way and her shoes.

"Now, what to do with her!

"She insists that she will not return to the institution. Asked by Dr. D—— why she liked the institution so much before, and hated it so much now, she expressed her mind quite freely, saying, 'Then there was a gentleman, now there is a dog.'

"The Bureau is making a special effort to place her in a specially good home. We hope for the best."

She was placed in an excellent home, and the last report of the Society reads:

"In September, 1921, the boarding mother reported that the girl was doing very nicely."

Letters from the Girl:

November 7, 1921.

Dear Friend:

I received your letter and I was so happy to hear from you, I jumped up in the air six times.

You heard about the beautiful home I have, and the lovely people I am with; I like them very much and they are very good to me and they give me everything I want, and Mr. L—— gave me a gold ring for my birthday and a gold pen eversharp pencil, and I hope I will be always with them.

And I am getting along very nicely in school. I am in the Fifth Grade. I try my very best to be higher. I got my report and I think it was the best report I ever had in my life. I tell you I am getting so fat, that the last time I weighed myself, it was one hundred and nineteen. I don't get sick as I did any more. Last Saturday I was in the Hospital, and the doctor said I am almost well. So I have no more to write, and with regards to ——, and lots of love,

Your girl,

POLLY S——.

Dearest Friend:

December 20, 1921.

How are you feeling? I am feeling fine. You know I am with Mr. and Mrs. L—— in their beautiful home. I used to want to die and now I want to live one hundred years long, as long as old Mrs. G——. I received your lovely letter and it was so kind of you to think of me and you were always so good and patient with me.

I have had some lovely trips in the auto with Mr. and Mrs. L—— and their family, and they are all so kind to me. Mrs. L—— has made me some beautiful dresses and Mr. L—— gave me a beautiful gold ring for my birthday.

Give my best regards to ——, and how do you all like it in B——? When I am a big girl, Mrs. L—— will take me to B——, so I have no more to write, and remain,

From your friend,

POLLY S——.

Dear Friend:

February 4, 1922.

Hope you are all well.

Well, I received your letter and I was very glad to hear from you. I was very disappointed why I did not see you when you visited P——. I am getting along very good in school. I am very happy with whom I stay. They are very lovely to me. I feel

now like a millionaire's daughter. You know Mr. C—— is a very nice friend of mine. I saw Miss L—— and I asked her how is Mr. C——, and she told me he is not feeling so well, so I felt very bad to hear it.

I did not see Miss K——, who you made my big sister, for a long time. When I see her, I'll tell her to be ashamed of herself. Give my best love to all my friends in the Home.

I did not get spells for a long time already.

From me with a whole lot of love,

POLLY S——.

CASE C

CARRIE F——, "THE SCAPEGOAT"

Taken under observation May 15, 1916. Age 15 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DIFFICULTIES

- (a) Melancholic and hysterical.
- (b) Suicidal tendencies.
- (c) Constantly "ill," and "dying from a bad heart."
- (d) Tragically unhappy; imaginary fears and terrors.
- (e) Quarrelsome; obstinate; sullen; wild fits of fury.
- (f) Violent spells of crying.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Reached the Second Grade, and then attendance ceased.
- (b) Mother claimed that "heart trouble" would not permit the child any schooling. School-attendance officers always found her "sick and nervous," in no condition for regular school attendance.
- (c) At the age of eleven, she was admitted to the Hospital School for Children; but after three weeks' attendance, the mother obtained her discharge, on the plea that studies increased the girl's ailments.
- (d) Was barely able to read, wrote very poorly, with extreme difficulty, and hardly understood the first rudiments of spelling.

3. HOME

- (a) Very unhappy. Either unable or unwilling to adjust herself to conditions.
- (b) Constant friction with mother and older sisters.
- (c) Had frequent hysterical attacks which alarmed the neighbors, causing them to report the case for relief to one charitable organization after another.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Marked antagonistic attitude to the world in general, and to the Social Workers who endeavored to assist the family in particular.
- (b) Bitter, sarcastic, headstrong, and nourishing the belief that anyone evincing a desire to assist her, really intended

to exploit her for some personal benefit to be derived therefrom.

- (c) Cynical and indifferent to her elders. Repellent and disagreeable to the boys and girls of her own age.
- (d) Had no friends, and wanted none.
- (e) Violently resented any interference with her method of life.
- (f) Usually met any attempt to reach her, with the final remark, "What's the use of bothering with me anyway? I'm going to make an end of it pretty soon."

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Medium height; slight, undeveloped figure.
- (b) Pale, drawn face with tragically serious expression. Fine, dark-gray eyes, staring, dull, and with the weary look of age. Well-shaped mouth constantly twitching.
- (c) Fine hair, good complexion and teeth.
- (d) Fifteen pounds underweight. Decidedly under-nourished. General air of lifelessness and dejection, aggravated by the impression given of fatigue, over-work, and illness.
- (e) Had been treated in different hospitals at various periods for a "bad heart," since earliest childhood.
- (f) Claimed that she suffered with severe headaches that would blind her for several hours at a time.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examinations:

In 1911, the Benevolent Society recognized her as a cardiac case and had treatment given by its physician for heart trouble and nervousness.

The report after two months of treatment was that the heart was functioning normally, and that the case, though subject to hysterical attacks, could attend school.

Several months later, it was reported that "the child had frequent mild, convulsive seizures and hysterical hyperesthesias." The recommendation was made that she be sent to the Psychiatric Clinic for observation.

Psychiatrist's Report:

"Girl has no physical trouble, but is extremely nervous. She is over-matured and has a tendency to reflect on her nervous system. Her condition bends toward melancholia. She is very impressionable, imaginative to the highest degree, and exhibits marked pessimism and suicidal tendencies.

"Recommend that girl be taken from her home and put in a more wholesome environment. She needs normal treatment and care."

A year later, the Clinic issued the following report:

"Nothing wrong with the girl, and no reason for her to remain at the hospital any longer.

"She is undoubtedly being humored by her mother, who believes her seriously ill.

"Only spells she is subject to are crying spells.

"It is advisable that she be boarded away from home."

(b) **Personality Traits:**

Clean, neat, and careful about person and clothes.

Has no girlish desire for ribbons or trinkets.

Scoffs at girls who follow the fashions, quarrels with those who use cosmetics, and reproaches those who "like boys." Is herself apparently unconscious of sex.

Thinks all the girls "frivolous" and all the boys "loafers." Disgusted with both sexes.

Wildly desires an education, expresses ambitions of astounding heights, and longs to belong to "real, good society."

When aroused to confidence and trust, is capable of truly remarkable loyalty and devotion.

Has a certain sense of justice and honor, which she will fight to uphold.

Extremely critical, and does not hesitate to express an opinion.

Intolerant of control, but will obey blindly, and sacrifice personal inclinations or desires to please one she likes.

Rather aggressive. Anxious to be recognized as "very smart."

3. **SOCIAL**

(a) **Heredity:**

Father: a poor, weak, inefficient creature, a coat-presser by trade, was unable to make a livelihood for his family at his work, and took up peddling. From a push-cart peddler, selling fruits and vegetables, he deteriorated to a sort of semi-beggar, selling shoe-strings and safety-pins from a basket suspended about his neck.

He tramped wearily from door to door with his few wares, frequently receiving alms from presumptive customers, till he developed a serious heart affection, which his shrewd and "clever" wife immediately capitalized.

He became subject to heart-seizures, at which times he would become unconscious and was with difficulty resuscitated. The Benevolent Society, on learning of his condition, put the family on an allowance, requesting him to cease further efforts at any kind of work till he improved.

But his wife would have it otherwise. She accepted the weekly allowance, and with fiendish ingenuity, learning that any undue exhaustion or exertion was productive of a convulsive seizure, she mercilessly commercialized her husband's misfortune.

She would drag her victim for many miles across town, to the homes of the wealthy, compelling him to walk the entire way, the poorer the weather the better for her schemes; and when he showed signs of a heart-seizure, would force him to lie in the vestibule of some home that she selected, while she rang the bell, and crossed the street, awaiting further developments.

The person who opened the door in response to the ring, and saw a peddler lying unconscious, with the wares from his basket strewn about him, would very naturally seek assistance. When the woman across the street was satisfied that the master or mistress of the house had been notified and was seeking to administer aid to the helpless man, she would suddenly appear, wild-eyed, her hair disheveled as if she had been running, panting and moaning, "Did you see my poor husband, a peddler —"

By this time, her eyes would apparently alight upon the unconscious unfortunate for whom a doctor had been hastily summoned, and she would cry, in an evident frenzy of sorrow and agony that never failed to affect the listeners, "I told him not to go out, I begged him to let me do the peddling and support our ten children; but he would n't listen to me and ran out when I was busy with the twin babies. And the doctor said he would die if he worked, and now he is dead — my husband — my poor husband! And now I am a widow, and my poor children are orphans! — Oh God! What will I do now?"

Of course she aroused pity and sincere sympathy; and when the doctor revived her victim, and corroborated her statement that he had a very bad heart and must be careful, the sympathetic members of the household gave her sums of money, quantities of food, and clothes of all sorts, to assist her in her distress. Nearly always, she and her

husband were sent home in the motor-car of the home, or, failing that, in a hired taxi, which the duped individual gladly paid for.

So lucrative was this scheme for money-making that the woman continuously plied it, and used such caution and shrewdness in selecting the neighborhoods and the people to be deceived, that not until her daughter divulged her original method of money-getting, several years later, was the mystery of her substantial bank-account solved.

Finally, on his recovery from a heart-attack in a wealthy home, the doctor attending him advised that he be taken to the hospital, as his condition was most serious. Removed to the hospital, he lingered several days and died.

His widow collected \$500 insurance from a lodge which she had insisted he should join, several years previously, and from which she had managed to receive sick benefits weekly, without the knowledge of the Benevolent Society.

His nearest relatives were several cousins, self-supporting and normal.

Mother: a woman of rather attractive appearance, often bragged that she had had the advantages of good birth, breeding, and a fair education.

She boasted frequently of her fine connections, but would give no clue to their whereabouts or to their station in life. After several years of hard knocks, she married her husband, who was in many ways her inferior. She had dominated him always, and expressed her contempt for him, freely, before her young children.

He had never defied her will; she had been practically the master of the house during his lifetime. He had pleaded and begged not to be forced to play his part in her scheme for money-making, but she had overruled his objections and disregarded his petition to be taken to the hospital and permitted to die in peace.

She was subject to violent outbursts of temper, greatly feared by her husband and the children. When angered, she used vile invectives, oaths, and curses.

Her attitude toward her neighbors was hostile and suspicious, and they in turn regarded her with scorn and dislike. She had no known friend.

She was very miserly in her habits, and allowed her family only the barest necessities of life. She would fawn upon the social workers and investigators who visited her,

constantly deploring and lamenting her widowhood, her poverty, and the unfortunate condition of her seven children. She never failed to enlist sympathy, as some of the records in the charitable organizations attest:

"The husband was a peddler who had heart trouble. He died at the hospital in 1912. During the man's illness and after his death, the woman, who seems intelligent, honorable, and very unhappy, worked at peddling, while the oldest girl, twelve years old, took care of the home, which was always clean and neat."

"In December, 1912, Dr. B——, of the hospital, reported that 'she had T.B., an old lesion.' She frequently complained of not feeling well, as did several of the children. One girl specially is very nervous and is suffering with heart trouble. The mother is greatly worried, fearing that she inherited the disease from the father, and like him, will die of it.

"At one time, the entire family slept in one room, some of the children sleeping on chairs."

It was undoubtedly extremely difficult for the Organization to work with the woman, as she was always scheming and trying to deceive as to her exact financial condition.

Shortly after her husband's death, she sent her two older daughters to work and discovered that the third child was rather delicate in appearance and constitution. She at once assumed another case of heart-disease, stopped the child from attending school, and dragged her from dispensary to hospital and from one organization to another, pleading that attention be given the girl, who was dying from a "bad heart."

At one time, in July, 1915, the girl was discharged from the Cardiac Clinic, because the physician in charge reported that there was nothing wrong with her and there was no need for her to remain at the hospital. The mother became excited when she heard this, and raised an outcry that the poor were always being ill-treated. "Just because the girl is a free patient, that's why they turn her out and say there is nothing the matter with her, when she is dying."

The younger children she had admitted to the Orphanage as soon as she could manage to do so.

To enforce her arguments, or achieve her desires, she had ready tears at her command and outbursts of eloquent

appeals for mercy or pity, guaranteed to move the stoniest heart.

She clandestinely purchased the house she lived in, and only when her tenants (her long-suffering neighbors) sought relief in court, from a too negligent and rapacious landlord, did they, as well as others, discover, to their dismay and chagrin, who their unknown landlord really was. She had contrived, most cleverly, to have a distant relative of hers pose as the landlord, for a small consideration; and it was owing to the fact that he had made a stupid and awkward blunder, that he unwittingly disclosed the secret she had carefully guarded.

Quite religious, she insisted that her children punctiliously heed every religious observance.

She avowed a deep affection for her children, and after the discovery that she was a property owner, protested that it was her duty to provide for her children, and in what better way could she do so "than by sacrificing and saving, and putting the money into a house, which should bring returns to them in the future, and give them a start in life?"

She did show a marked fondness for the two older girls, who were remarkably pretty.

Siblings: Oldest sister, very attractive physically, mentally normal; married, quite young, a decent, hard-working man, and is apparently living happily.

Has had frequent pleuritic attacks, indicating a tubercular tendency.

She has three children, all apparently normal.

Older sister, very dull mentally, but physically beautiful. Her reputation is none of the best, and her mother has sought advice on how to cure her of "young-man craziness."

Younger sister, an inmate of the Orphanage. Sullen, difficult child, low mentality, exceedingly selfish and obstinate. Very pretty.

Younger brother, a bright, active little fellow, good mentality.

He had been a petty pilferer, liar, and exceedingly troublesome. Barely escaped a Juvenile Court Record. A different environment had a most excellent effect upon him. Fine, promising youngster.

Youngest sister, attractive little girl; fair mentality. Too young for definite diagnosis. Is in the Orphanage.

Youngest brother, apparently normal. Unusually bright for his age.

(b) Developmental:

The girl had been a normal, healthy baby at birth, but, according to the mother, "had every sickness that could be imagined." The girl herself remembers only her "heart trouble."

She, in common with the other children, had been left to her own resources in the streets, and had lived as best she might, neglected, dirty, and roaming the neighborhood at will; often a sympathetic neighbor would pity the hungry child, and give her a bite to eat.

Her "bed" was part of a mattress put on the floor in the one room occupied by the family as a bed-chamber.

The two years she had been permitted to spend at school had an indifferent effect upon her; she remembered sitting in the schoolroom, listening to the teacher's voice, without comprehension or the ability to concentrate her mind on the lesson.

In her own words, she aptly described the impression made by her few school-days and their resultant influence. "I always went to school without breakfast," she said, "but that was nothing, because I was n't hungry at all, and lots of the children came to school that way. But I was always so tired and sleepy; and though I did try so hard, I just could n't make myself understand what the teacher was talking about. My head always felt dizzy and I felt like fainting all the time. I used to be awfully ashamed of my torn shoes and ragged dress, and I used to beg God to let me die. Then, when the teacher called me to the board and asked me something, and I told her I did n't know what she had been talking about, she would scold me and send me to the principal, and then all those hateful kids would meet me in the street and make fun of me. I hated them so that sometimes I wish I had killed them. Every time they saw me, they yelled out, 'Here comes K— A— T!— That's the way, she spells cat.'

"Honest, I tried awfully hard, and it seems that I simply could n't help thinking of other things when the teacher was talking. I used to imagine that I was a rich little girl with a fine home and lots of good things, and Santa Claus was coming to bring me a big doll I saw in a window; or I would think of other nice things like that,

and then suddenly the teacher called on me, and I had my troubles.

"I sure was glad when mother told me that I had heart trouble and was so sick that I could n't go to school."

At this time, when the child first began to believe that she was developing symptoms of heart trouble, and to realize that here she had an ache and there a pain, the mother resumed her activities among the wealthy homes she had formerly victimized.

She would take the girl to one of the homes, ask to see the mistress, whose acquaintance she had formerly made while plying her schemes with her husband, and pour forth into the sympathetic woman's ear, a tale of the sad fate hovering over the girl. The latter's sickly pallor and attenuated form corroborating the mother's agonized whisper that an early grave awaited the poor, unfortunate little creature, the charitable lady would give freely and plentifully of money and gifts for the relief of mother and child.

The girl soon was suffering from many ailments, and hated the social agencies and their workers who took her to hospitals and clinics and dispensaries, which brought her no relief. "Doctors don't know much, anyhow," said the mother, "and for poor people with no money to give them, they don't know anything at all." The girl imbibed this opinion readily, and included the physicians who told her "there is nothing at all the matter with you," in her intense hatred for people and things.

No hope, no pleasures, no ambition — merely hoping and waiting for the death her mother assured her was hovering over her hapless head!

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Very imaginative. Only form of recreation was to find a quiet corner and imagine things.

Instinctively neat and orderly.

Snobbish. Hypercritical. Irritable. Talks rapidly.

(d) **Home Conditions:**

Even after the discovery was made that the mother owned the house the family lived in, there was no change made in the manner and ways of living. When the three younger children were admitted to the Orphanage, the Benevolent Society reduced the allowance given the family. The mother claimed that this entailed greater

economy than ever, and the food in the house became poorer and scantier, while household necessities were either completely ignored or grudgingly permitted.

The home, always poorly furnished, had not enough beds or bed-linen for the growing girls, and no attempt was made to secure privacy for any one of them.

The older girl before her marriage, and her sister, were both employed in a factory at small wages, and spent their earnings exclusively for their personal adornment. The two received their young men callers in the one general living-room.

The tastes of the sisters were as dissimilar as possible, with the result that discord, quarreling, and unhappiness formed the home atmosphere.

The youngest child, too young to be admitted to the Orphanage, was underfed and neglected, and retaliated by being cross and irritable; his constant crying excited his sister's highly strung nerves almost to the point of insanity.

The mother contributed her share to the din by alternate outbursts of fury at the baby who dared to defy her, and then at the "sick" daughter who, thinking the child wronged, became his champion in the never-ceasing warfare between mother and son.

(e) Mental Interests:

None, save speculations concerning different means of suicide.

THE TREATMENT

Sunday afternoons were the most favored and popular "visiting days" for the children's relatives and friends, and hence the busiest time in the institution, and the most trying for the office, which was compelled to handle demands, complaints, requests, and petitions with diplomatic wisdom.

On several successive Sunday afternoons, a small, timid figure, with a pale, wistful face, propelled on each side by a smaller and younger girl, — these two being sisters, and inmates of the Orphanage, — appeared for a second in the crowded office, glanced about, and disappeared as silently and rapidly as she had come. As this continued for several Sundays, the small, white face leaving behind its silent yet eloquent appeal, the two younger girls were sent for and questioned.

"That's my sick sister; she's goin' to die and she wants to speak with you," volunteered the older of the propellers.

She was sent to the "dying" sister, with a message that Monday morning was a better time, if convenient for her, than Sunday afternoon.

Punctually at a given hour on Monday morning, there was a timid knock on the office door, and in response to the "Come in!" the knob turned slowly and a small figure stood hesitatingly. "You made an appointment with me — will I bother you if I come in?" she questioned timorously, evidently ill at ease and extremely nervous.

"Why, come in, child; sit right down and let's be friends!"

She sat silently in the chair which had been placed for her, looking up with great, amazed eyes, but saying nothing. Suddenly, without warning, she burst into a violent fit of sobbing. "No wonder something told me to come to you with my troubles," she finally said, after regaining some self-control. Gradually she became composed. "Can anybody be blamed for being born too soon?" The question was sudden, unexpected, and distinctly original; so much so, that it put the strange child apart as an unusual character.

On being assured that no sane person would legitimately disapprove of one on the score of age solely, no matter what that might be, she seemed to gather courage and asked the disconcerting question: "Then I can be admitted to the Home, even if I am fifteen years old?"

The gist of her thoughts was then clearly apparent. She had evidently been informed that she was beyond the age-limit for admission to the institution.

"There!" she cried out vehemently; "there, you see for yourself that, because I was born a year or two before I had any right, I cannot have a chance like my sisters and brother and all the other children, but must suffer, and suffer, and suffer — till I make up my mind to kill myself. I did make up my mind a long time ago, but you have no idea how hard it is to do it. It's awful; you just want to be finished with it all and yet, — well, I don't know how to explain it, — but somehow, when you want to do it, something don't let you."

"Why should you want to kill yourself?" she was asked.

"Why?" she laughed hysterically. "What's the use of living if you can't be anything decent? In a few months, I'll be sixteen years old, and what do I know? Nothing! My little brother can read and write better than me." She burst into moans and sobs, her body trembling and shaking. "They want me to go to work in the paper-box factory," she cried passionately, "but I won't;

I just won't! I told those social workers to leave me alone and I'll die soon. But," — she wiped the tears from her eyes and looked up appealingly, — "but I'm awfully afraid that I — somehow I won't die, so I want to be put in the Home and learn something."

Investigation showed that she had hardly as much education as an average eight-year-old child. "I don't want to work in a shop," she reiterated, "and I don't know what to do. I am making up my mind that I am not going to go with my mother any more to those rich people and tell them how sick I am. I'm not! I'm not! I'm not!" she repeated again and again, as if assuring herself of this resolution.

"Why not?"

"Why not?" she repeated the query in amazement. "Why, because I'm ashamed to be dragged around and treated like a beggar. I don't want their things; I don't want them to pity me — Oh, why does n't God take pity on me and let me die and finish the whole thing?"

"What a shame for a nice girl like you not to brace up, get some education, and show everybody what a bright, capable brain you have, and just *make* them respect you!"

The fine gray eyes opened wide in wonder. "Does — does that mean *me*?" Her trembling forefinger unconsciously pointed straight to her heart, as if to emphasize her amazement.

"Of course," was the definite assurance given her. "When a girl has an ambition to be educated and become somebody, all she has to do is to forget about everything else and work hard to get what she wants; and before she knows it, she *is* somebody!"

"Oh, it sounds so good!" She clasped her hands eagerly, her eyes brightening; then, as a thought came to her mind, she asked sadly, "But I have heart trouble, and what's the use of doing anything?"

A long, earnest talk followed, during which she enumerated all her ailments, symptoms of heart trouble, difficulties at home with her family, and her unhappiness. Gaining confidence as she listened to the plan outlined for her assistance, she poured forth ardent promises to abide by and carefully observe all rules and regulations that might be laid down for her future guidance. She agreed to consider herself directly under the jurisdiction of the institution, and willingly to perform all duties assigned to her. To give due solemnity and importance to the occasion, which it was deemed advisable should leave a powerful impression upon her mind, it was suggested to her to take three days before rendering her final

decision as to the tentative agreement that she accept proposed plans for her future guidance, trustingly and obediently.

She left reluctantly, and returned later in the day to say, that she could not patiently wait for three whole days; she had decided, and was determined to take whatever instructions were given her; she added, with childlike logic, that, whereas she hated the social workers because they had wanted her to do things she did not like, and did not believe her to be as ill as she said, she was now disposed to do anything in her power to show her readiness to obey orders.

In the interview with her mother, which now followed, it was with no little difficulty that that lady was practically forced to give her consent to the contemplated experiment with her daughter. Her insistence that the girl's heart was too weak for study or work was utterly disregarded; and it was not till she was given definitely to understand that her plans to pauperize the girl, and further her own schemes for money-making, were fully comprehended, that the means wherewith to fight her successfully presented themselves. When she left the office, she was bound by a solemn promise not to molest the girl further with her schemes, and not to interfere in the régime arranged for the future. As the girl's age precluded her admission to the institution, it was thought best to await developments before sending her to a boarding home.

The first demand was that she submit to a physical and mental examination. She consented to the first, but objected to the second till reminded of her promise to obey orders. She then agreed to do as required of her. The physician found no traces of any disease. She was organically sound and needed only good food and pure air, with plenty of rest, to tone up her system.

The psychiatrist reported as follows:

"I have seen the girl several times, first at the Hospital Dispensary, and then, with more detailed examinations, at this office.

"From a careful consideration of her case, I should say that the girl seems to have very real symptoms, which must make her work at school very difficult for her, if not, at times, actually impossible. Whatever the mechanism, I feel that a large part of this is caused by her difficult home situation, which must grate most painfully on a young girl of sensitive disposition, a girl who has not yet attained the self-confidence which comes from having made good, and yet who is ambitious and anxious to pull herself out of the rather inferior circumstances, both material and intellectual, in which her family is placed. I think that the girl deserves every encouragement to improve her situation, and would consider that

she should certainly be tried out living away from home for several months, particularly at the present time, when it is still possible to improve her nervous condition.

"Meanwhile, her symptoms are rendering her almost unable to earn any money, and at the same time lessening her chances of improvement. Later on, it is very probable that such a simple thing as removing her from the home will no longer effect any desirable change in her nervous condition, and the girl might become in time permanently incapacitated. Any other policy with her at this time, I certainly should consider as being 'penny wise and pound foolish.'"

Her future vocation was in question. Asked what she would like to be, she hesitated, and stammered that she should like to be a stenographer; then drew back as if aghast at her temerity, and murmured very diffidently, "That is, — that is what I would want to be if I could read and write."

She was started at a business college where special arrangements were made to give her a thorough course in English reading and writing, simple arithmetic, and typing. She applied herself with remarkable earnestness and zeal to her studies, appearing quite anxious to make a good showing. She was permitted to enter the dressmaking, embroidery, and crocheting classes at the institution, and soon was an adept with the needle. Within a year, she was crocheting ties most skillfully, and sewing the most dainty garments, and beautifully embroidering articles, giving them as tokens of appreciation to those for whom she felt esteem and devotion.

She worked very hard in the Business School, and progressed beyond the fondest expectations entertained by her teachers. Efforts were made to improve her home life, which, though only partly successful, still resulted in her receiving better food, improved sleeping accommodations, and less nagging and scolding from her mother. Her weight increased by several pounds, a faint pink began to appear in her pale cheeks, and one evening, before leaving for her home for the night, she stepped into the office for her usual "Good-bye," — a brand-new smile transfiguring the small face with the piquant charm of youth, — nodded shyly, and whispered, "Do you know what he said just now to me? Do you think it really, honestly, is true?"

The "he" referred to an officer of the institution, who had met her in the corridor — one whom she liked and respected, and who in turn was greatly interested in the "experiment."

"Why, what did he say?"

She dimpled, blushed and laughed. "He — he said that I was looking so well that — that — I am — I don't believe him anyway, — but he said — said that I am getting to be a real pretty girl." Then wistfully, her eyes large with hope, "Is it true? Am I really going to be pretty?"

The opportunity was eagerly taken to draw a sort of glorified picture of herself, if she continued industrious, ambitious, and, above all, forgot to be sick. She had met the Social Worker whom she specially detested in the street one day; and on being asked how she liked her school-work and whether her health had improved, she tartly remarked, "Don't you see that the school and the Home keep me so busy that I have n't the time to be sick any more?"

There was an unwonted light in her eyes and she seemed quite pleased with herself. "Do you know," she confided, "I don't know why it is, but I really feel like singing."

"Then why not sing?"

The smile faded from her face and the light left her eyes. "I wish I could!" she said; and then, with a touch of her former bitterness, "When all the other girls were singing, I was crying. That's all I learned to do — cry — cry," — and unexpectedly she burst into sobs.

When the paroxysm had somewhat abated, she said, as if in excuse for her weakness, "Oh, you don't know what it was! Always tears — tears — tears! I wonder whether that's why, when I made up my mind to jump in the river that day sure, I could n't, because it seemed to me lots and lots of tears I would be jumping into, and not water to get drowned in."

She frequently had spells of morbid self-pity, when she would rage against an unjust fate, which gave to other girls so many advantages, and so many troubles to her. Permitted "to cry it out," she would slowly collect her unhappy thoughts and find relief after her tempest of grief in the reference to her future always very significantly made.

"Your life is now in your own hands, to be made as you wish it," she would be told.

That hint never failed to have the desired effect. She would rub the tears quickly from her eyes, throw back her head proudly, erect her shoulders, and assert with emphasis, "*I am* going to be somebody; *I am*, *I am*, *I am*!" and the squall for the time being was forgotten.

She was encouraged to join several of the girls' clubs at the Home, and evincing an interest in a play shortly to be presented by

the older children, she was given a minor part, which she performed so satisfactorily, that visions of possible histrionic glories hovered over her. "For nearly every night of the week, I dream that I am a great actress," she artlessly confessed. Better by far that such dreams supersede those of suicide and morbid subjects; so she was encouraged to continue with her work during the day and dream in peace at night.

Taken to a symphony concert one day, she came back in an ecstasy of delight. "It was so wonderful, I thought I was in Heaven," she avowed fervently; and then timidly suggested that she would employ a piano teacher to give her lessons as soon as she was earning money of her own.

A few months later, she secured a position as general office-worker, and came into the office with her first week's salary in its envelope clutched in her hand, a triumphant smile on her face. "Look, it's all my own; I earned it all by myself!" She regarded the new crisp ten-dollar bill that she drew from the envelope with a look of wonder and pride, and then folded it fondly to her heart. "To think that I should be able to work in an office!" she ejaculated; and then added, "I told a lie to get the position, and — I can't be altogether happy till you know about it and say it's all right."

"What was the lie?"

"They wanted a high-school graduate and I felt that I had more sense than those high-school girls, anyway, and you said that I was not to think of the past and all the troubles I had, so — I just made up my mind that I was not going to let another girl get ahead of me because she had been in high school — and, I told them I was a high-school graduate, and — well, I now feel even about things."

Asked whether she did not think that the lie would be apparent to her employers when she was not able to perform certain duties that might be required of her, she hesitated, and then added very soberly, "But I am going to work so hard and make them like me so much, that they'll forgive me if they find out that I fibbed to them." Then she burst into a torrent of pleas for pardon, making extravagant promises never again to lie in her life.

To the surprise of all, she actually filled her position satisfactorily. She displayed great interest in her work, was exceedingly conscientious and devoted, worked overtime without complaint or objection, and actually, by her unusual earnestness and extreme punctuality and faithfulness, attracted the favorable interest of the department manager, who once rather humorously remarked,

"Well, the burden of the business rests upon her shoulders, so why should n't she see that the house does a rattling good business?"

Socially, however, she was not quite so successful. She accused her companion workers of being "shirkers," fond only of cosmetics and "boys without sense," and having ambition only for chewing-gum and candy. Her attitude at home also became more critical as her independence increased, and she insisted that her mother cease accepting allowances from the Benevolent Society, claiming that the earnings of her sister and herself were sufficient to support the small family.

"Why," she insisted, in emphasizing her contention, "men support families on twenty-five dollars a week, and that money is enough to support us without taking from charity. Laura [her eldest sister who had married] should be ashamed to wear a fur coat and have her mother a beggar."

These ideas naturally infuriated the mother, who had been compelled to sit idly by and see the complete collapse of the scheme that was to have been an excellent source for money-getting. Cleverly and insidiously, she attempted her previous stunt of influencing the girl to revert to her former invalidism. She came to the office, pleading that the girl could not sleep nights and was gradually going insane under the strain of her work; that the poor child was very sick with her bad heart. The "sick girl," however, rose in her might, declared that she was not sick and was going to make her own livelihood, would stand no further indignities, and would not be made into a pauper. The friction became so strong between mother and daughter, it was deemed advisable to remove the latter to a good, comfortable home, with intelligent people, that had been secured for her.

She paid her own board and was quite happy and cheerful, manifesting a keen, frank delight in her independence, of which she boasted in the most extravagant and exaggerated terms. Most of her leisure time was spent at the Home, in which she now displayed a proprietary interest, presenting precepts tended to moralize the actions of the older children, lecturing the younger ones for any breach of discipline that came to her notice, and always alert and watchful of the grown-up portion of the population, both in and out of the institution, ready to fight any aspersion, real or fancied, that might come to her ears, against the institution.

At one time, she made a public, though utterly unconscious, display of her loyalty and devotion to the institution she loved, which was as unique as it was interesting. During a half-holiday,

the children were given a special treat to a downtown moving-picture house, to see "Daddy-Longlegs." As she happened to be in the Home at the time, she also was given the benefit of the entertainment. All went well, till upon the screen was thrown a picture of sad-eyed, unhappy little children, terrorized by a stern and severe matron in an Orphanage. Up she rose in impetuous anger and thoughtlessness, and in that vast assembly boldly gave voice to her dissatisfaction and defiance. "You've no right to tell lies to the people and make them believe that orphans are not treated right," she insisted loudly, to the consternation of one of the floor managers who had attempted to quiet her.

Of course, she attracted the attention of the audience, who greatly enjoyed a performance they had not expected. Believing her an inmate of the institution which the management was specially favoring with this treat, and rather admiring her "spunk" as he termed it, the manager of the theatre assured her that he was in no way responsible for the filming of the scene she objected to, and that it in no way reflected any discredit upon her institution. This assurance satisfied her and she permitted the performance to proceed without further objection, though, later, she gave the amused manager "a piece of her mind," in which she candidly informed him, that the "movies" were not telling the truth when they showed such pictures. "I heard everybody saying 'The poor little dears,' when that picture came on," she said, when reproved for the disturbance; "and they can't get together a lot of kids, goodness knows from what kind of homes, and say they are poor orphaned children in an institution — no, not when I'm around."

The incident caused rather favorable local comment, and gave her great confidence in her powers of expression and much satisfaction with her ability to acquire courage when necessary. "I was so angry with them," she explained, "that I did n't stop to think about being afraid or ashamed to speak right out. I suppose," she philosophized, "that one has to be very angry to be brave."

She took a weekly allowance from her salary to her mother, who still demanded and received a remittance from the Charities for the support of the youngest child and herself, to the girl's chagrin and unhappiness. The brother and sisters in the institution were constantly receiving gifts from her, while her busy fingers were always employed at some bit of exquisite handiwork, to be presented as a birthday, holiday, or anniversary token of her regard, to some beloved friend.

Efforts were now made to awaken the youth in her. She was

admitted to the Alumni Association, and mingled in the world of grown-up boys and girls advantageously. Whenever feasible, she was sent, properly chaperoned, to balls, parties, and merry occasions where young people gathered for a good time. Finally she lost her critical, supercilious attitude toward young people who were neither grave nor serious, and actually made friends with several young girls.

Her love of music was encouraged; and after some months of instruction, she played very well and gave pleasure to her young friends and herself with the musical selections she rendered at different gatherings. As she learned to dance, she began to show an interest in the "ribbons and furbelows" she had previously despised, and would frequently hop into the office, blushing and smiling, in a dainty and attractive frock, which she asserted she had picked up at a "wonderful bargain," and had trimmed with the rosettes and ribbons that made it so pretty.

One evening she flew in, greatly excited. She had met a social worker whom she rather liked, who had informed her that a position in Social Service was vacant at the hospital where she had been a patient; and as she felt that she could do the work, and should like to do the work, and above all, there was the opportunity to get even with all the social workers, and show them, etc., etc., — should n't she — ought n't she, to apply for the position?

She had evidently set her heart upon it, and was so restless, that, to quiet her mind, it was suggested to her to seek an interview regarding the vacancy and then make her own decision. She did, and came back with the triumphant announcement that she had been accepted and was going to work at Social Service in the hospital. She resigned her office position, to the regret of the department manager, — who was sincerely interested in her, so much so, that at parting he asked her to come to him at any time when she needed his assistance (a promise she later remembered to take advantage of), — and entered the employ of the hospital.

First, she took the precaution to abridge her name, "so that if anyone should happen to read my records, they would n't think I'm the same girl — don't you think I'm right?" Secondly, she applied herself with the utmost earnestness and conscientiousness to the work, seeking to make good; and thirdly, she took a malicious delight in snubbing the social workers she hated, who were frequent visitors there, with so superior an air that she might have been to the manner born. A duchess might have copied that cold, indifferent, patronizing glance!

She did her work well; perhaps her efforts to be efficient and

faithful were a bit overdone, as she frequently made attempts to give social service in her own generous, impetuous, and thoughtless way, to the undisguised delight of the recipient and the stupefaction of the experienced worker. Many amusing incidents were told of the perspicuity with which she detected well-to-do patients in the throng waiting to receive free medical attention. To such she was extremely uncharitable, sending them away with excellent advice which she would caution them to observe. To those who were needy and unfortunate, anything in her power was at their disposal.

She was happy in her work, contented, and normal in health and mind.

THE RESULT

Nearly two years have passed since the girl was grief-stricken over the parting with her friend, the Superintendent. She had begged to be permitted to come to the other city, but that was not quite possible. Her letters have come regularly, and they have brought the information that she is happily employed and is living a normal, healthy girl's life. Several suitors have presented themselves, but they have been dissected so critically and unmercifully that there seems little chance in their favor. According to the letters, the only possible chance any one of them may have will be to have the Superintendent decide in his favor.

As the girl was quite willing to give a résumé of her life in her own words, which would undoubtedly be of interest, and as her latest letters give the best present information concerning her and hers, they are herewith quoted.

February 3, 1922.

Of course I'll be glad to write a short history about myself, if it's going to do just one person some good.

I looked up the records in the hospital for the time I was a patient there; but there are only a whole lot of medical terms about my heart, and I don't suppose you want them.

I don't know how to begin, because the great part of my sufferings was done at home. Owing to home conditions at that time, I had to suffer mentally. But I'll say all I can, even though my life history is still having its ups and downs.

February 13, 1922.

I was kept so busy at the office that I have not been able to write sooner. I received your letter and will do my very best to

write something about myself. I would appreciate it if you would give me just a little idea how to begin. Just show me how and where to begin, because there is so much to write, and yet there is nothing.

Would you begin from the time my mother thought it would be much easier for me to be sick than it would be for me to go to school, not realizing how much it would mean to me later in life? Should I say that while as a little child I did not understand how much I was missing, but when I was getting older, I started to realize more and more, and that meant that war was started with me, etc.? Or should I write in a different way? Please tell me which way would be best.

I have been having a lot of trouble at home lately about the children, since they were sent home from the institution. I told mother they must have educational advantages, and of course she does n't agree with me, so there is trouble. But since it is my duty not to have an easy time boarding at —, but live at home and look after the other children, I am not going to be a slacker. Mother knows she can't do anything with me any more, and she is afraid that I'll pack up and go to B—— if she don't let me have my own way.

Mr. W—— is still coming to see me, but he does n't come up to my ideal.

February 23, 1922.

I am sending you the enclosed history of myself, and I hope it is all right. If not, let me know, and I'll try to write another one.

I have been having lots and lots of trouble about the children, especially Charley, whom mother wants to send to work. He is very bright and should have an education. I wish you were here to help me out; it's awfully hard to fight alone. No, I am not going to disappoint you and give up the fight. I'll fight for the kiddies till I win out and let them have their chances in life.

I wish you could be here to judge of K——. He is a doctor; I met him in the hospital. But what's the use? He too does n't come any where near my ideal.

Just a Brief Idea of how and what Things used to be:

Before I start back and tell something of my life, I want to say that there are lots and lots of people more unfortunate than I, because they were allowed to go to ruin because no one was ever interested in them or cared anything about them. I am fortunate enough to be a winner, thanks to my Dearest Friend and Father.

When I was ten years old, I first began to think that there was a whole lot wrong with me and nothing at all right.

First, I remember I was taken to different doctors, who did not take much time to bother with me whether I was sick or not. I think they were not interested in me to any extent, because I was not a private patient. One among them told my mother that I had a very bad heart and that he gave up hopes for me. He advised just to let me linger along. Mother, who must have thought it better to take this doctor's advice than go into it any further, made out that I was dying, and so of course I became an invalid. The first thing was not to go to school, and the next was to wait for the end.

This went on for two years and then I realized that I was not dead yet, but that I was just as good as dead. Then my fight with my mother started, when I tried to explain to her that by making me an invalid, she was injuring my whole life; but all in vain. So I became an invalid, and so would anybody in my condition.

One of my greatest tortures was to deal with some of the social workers, who did not understand things at all and wanted me to do things I did not care for. It would be really impossible to go into details, and tell of some of their treatments they gave me to do me good, but which only succeeded in making me wish to make an end of it all.

How they disliked me because I was proud! Well, maybe it was false pride, but everybody seemed not to understand me, and one day I could stand it no more and went to mother and told her that I would n't be dragged around to places for people to have pity on me. But she did n't appreciate what I told her, and the only thing left for me to do was to think how to be finished with the whole thing in the easiest way. Those were the days I was really sick and when I needed a doctor, but not an M.D., but a doctor who could really find the way out for me. There is one thing I will forget, but never forgive, and that is how those social workers tried to help me make a failure of my life by not understanding or believing me at all. They thought I was faking all the time, and wanted me to go to work in a factory and associate with all those people who are ignorant. I never liked ignorant people and did not want to have anything to do with them.

It seems a terrible thing for a young child to have only one hope in life, and that hope the only thought to get rid of a disgusting life; but what was I to do? But it seems that God was having pity on me, for one day in the Home to see the children, I saw what a good time those kids were having, and I made up my mind that

somehow I was going to get into the institution too. So after I went into the office, I met the one who has taken a real interest in an unfortunate little girl and made her think that life was a different thing from what she imagined.

Then the sun came out for me too, and I was shown how to fight and win out, because God was good to me and sent me a real father and real protection. I got rid of those horrible begging experiences and began to learn how to be self-respecting, and thank God! no longer an invalid! So many friends now came, everybody wanted to be my friend now, but I did n't want them now and did n't need their help. When I needed them, they were n't there, so I did n't pay any attention to them.

Of course I did well in Business College because I wanted so hard to succeed, and I am glad to say that I did not disappoint my good friend. I not only succeeded later on in my work, but it did not take long before I was able to help others, and become popular with people. To-day I can honestly say that I am holding a position with the highest honor, and am helping in other ways besides, so that I have a right to consider myself a respected person in the city.

My love, respect and devotion I will give all my life to my friend and father in this world, because if it had not been for him, I am sure I would now be resting in h—l.

Extract from Letter, dated

March 20, 1922.

I know you will be very glad to hear that I won out, so I hasten to write you. I am so thankful that Charley will have a chance now, but I don't believe I wrote you a quarter of my troubles with them at home.

Well, mother made up her mind that Charley is got to go to work, and you know I made up my mind that he would go to College, so we were having it out all the time. I made him try to find a job after school; but work is so hard to get for all day, that it was impossible for him to find something. Well, as you used to tell me, "where there's a will, there's a way," and after I lie awake for several nights, I suddenly remembered what Mr. W—— of the R—— Company, had promised me when I left his place, that he would always be ready to do me a favor when I needed it, so I went up to him and asked him to help me out about my brother. Sure enough, he is giving Charley a position now for \$5 a week after school hours, and I made mother satisfied with that.

Charley can keep on now going to College and have a chance to become a real man.

Then I got busy about Bessie who was working in that factory for \$10 a week and was being spoiled something dreadful by those girls with their paint and powder and lipsticks. I wonder whether the girls in B—— are as bad as here. I am disgusted with them; they have no pride at all, it seems to me. So I began to make inquiries among all the people who came into the office, and I succeeded in getting a position for her at the A—— Press, paying \$12 a week. I think the girls employed here are more decent and she will have to behave herself.

The others are compelled to attend school regularly. I watch out for that.

CHAPTER VII

SEX PROBLEMS

CASE A, SAMUEL H——	“THE CHERUB”
CASE B, EDNA N——	“ANGEL-FACE”
CASE C, MARY E——	“A STEPCHILD OF FATE”

CASE A

SAMUEL H——, "THE CHERUB"

Entered January 12, 1917. Age 7 years, 6 months

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Petty pilfering.
- (b) Sexual precocity.
- (c) Uses obscene language.
- (d) Tells lies.

2. SCHOOL

Expelled after a few months in kindergarten class, because of attack on little girls.

3. HOME

- (a) Disobedient and impertinent.
- (b) Unmanageable.
- (c) Attempted sex act on mother.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Lured little girls in hallways and lavatories.
- (b) In a number of boarding homes, foster-mothers complained that he was troublesome and constantly annoying little girls.
- (c) Friendly and good-tempered.
- (d) Rifled pockets, purses, drawers, any place where he knew money was kept, or suspected that it was hidden.
- (e) Offered his stolen gains to little girls for the privilege of taking liberties with them.
- (f) Juvenile Court Record (at age of seven):
Sexual precocity. Stealing and lying. Minor without proper care.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Beautiful, healthy child; blue-eyed and golden-haired.
- (b) Normal height and normal weight.
- (c) Had been hurt in an automobile accident and temporarily used crutches. No permanent injury or deformity.
- (d) Enuresis. Masturbated since the age of five.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:

Intelligence: Apparently normal.

Character: Poor basis and poor organization.

Health: Normal.

Impression: Definite sexual pervert.

(b) Personality Traits:

Sweet, winning manners. Ready smiles. In appearance, an overgrown, innocent, and lovely baby.

Hearty eater. Excessively fond of ice-cream, soda-water, and candy.

Plays with dolls and picture-books. No desire for any boy's toys.

Sleeps like a baby, and sucks his thumb.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: unknown. Boy believed to be illegitimate.

Mother: slovenly, brazen, and of questionable character.

Has no known relatives or friends.

Claims that she was married to boy's father and divorced him. Has no proof to substantiate her claims. Does not know the man's whereabouts.

Was living with a man as his common-law wife, and her neighbors said she frequently entertained men visitors.

Had no women callers.

Blond. Extremely attractive in appearance.

Siblings: unknown.

(b) Developmental:

Healthy, normal, eight-pound baby.

Had been cared for till three years of age by a very young colored girl, paid by the mother, and was not known to have had any illnesses, major or minor.

After that age, he was left to himself in the streets, and would be found by the neighbors asleep in their hallways and upon their doorsteps. Mother seemed engrossed in her own affairs, and was either unable or unwilling to give any care to the child.

When her attention was called to the neglect of the child, she was said to have told the well-intentioned neighbors to "mind their own business."

At the age of four, he was taken by the mother to the Psychiatric Clinic, and examined upon her complaint that, when sleeping with her, he had attempted to assault her.

The mother also said that she had noticed he had marked sexual tendencies since babyhood, and was always trying to entice little girls into her home, for the purpose of attacking them.

She further complained that he stole money, used vile language, and was very unreliable and troublesome.

At the age of five, the neighbors reported him as a menace to their children and an incorrigible.

He was then taken from his home and sent to a boarding home.

(c) Habits and Interests:

He would influence the small boys in the respective neighborhoods where he found himself, from time to time, to pilfer from their parents' pockets and purses, for the purpose of buying sweetmeats, ice-cream, and soda-water.

He would steal whenever possible, from anybody and anywhere.

Would bribe little girls with gifts of dolls and candies, for the favors he desired.

Unusually and unboyishly clean in dress.

Sucking the thumb of one hand, while the other hand twirled around his tiny fingers shining, golden curls.

(d) Home Conditions:

His mother's home had been very well furnished, but extremely untidy.

He was not known to have received any affection or care in his home. The contrary was rather the case, since it was reported that he was frequently cruelly beaten by the mother and constantly neglected and ill-treated.

The home environment of his successive foster homes affected him little or none at all, as he was an inmate of those homes for a very short period at a time.

He seems to have followed his own desires and resources always.

(e) Mental Interests:

None.

THE TREATMENT

The boy had been the constant subject of discussion at the Children's Bureau weekly meetings. What to do with him was a mooted question, when the tenth foster-mother reported that she could no longer tolerate the child, as he was a menace, not only to

her own children, but to all the children in the neighborhood. Ten foster homes of widely differing influence and condition had failed with him.

The psychiatrist on the case suggested, as the best haven for the boy, a certain country home, where boys presenting unusual sex tendencies were being cared for; but inasmuch as he was decidedly under the age-limit, that refuge could not be taken into consideration. He was far too young for the Reformatory, which seemed to be the place for which he was destined. Finally, in desperation, a plea was made that he be taken for a very limited time on trial in the Orphanage.

With due cognizance of what his sexual abnormalities might mean in an institution, he was admitted, and put under a supervision that was never relaxed by day or night. He himself was utterly unconscious of the strict surveillance kept over him.

His physique was perfect. His last foster-mother, hoping to appeal to him through the medium of pretty clothes, had presented him with several dainty velvet suits of Little Lord Fauntleroy style and cut, and in such a suit, with his head covered with long shining curls, he presented a picture of childhood as beautiful as it was appealing. But as neither curls nor Fauntleroy suits were accepted by the boys of his age in the institution as the proper accessories and garb befitting future citizens of an independent, democratic country, he had hardly been one half-hour in their company, when he came pleading and entreating that something should be done to put a stop to his being called "Mary Pickford."

"I hate them, I hate them," he sobbed convulsively, viciously tugging at the golden curls, "I — I don't want to be a sissy — please, please, mister, make me a boy."

The next half-hour he was busy with the barber and the supervisor into whose charge he had been put.

Suddenly there was a rush of flying feet into the office, and a small blond boy, happy, breathless, and laughing merrily burst in, screaming at the top of his lungs, "Gee, I'm a real boy now! Good-bye, Mary Pickford!" After him trooped a chorus of small admiring boys, who felt that he now deserved the right to take rank in their circle.

He was started at school in the First Grade. From the beginning, he was bright, intelligent, and willing. At the Home, he easily fell into the routine of work and play, ate and slept well, and while he liked to be in the company of the small girls, he had done nothing for the two weeks that he was under constant observation to justify the evil record attributed to him.

As he continued to play normally with the boys of his age, and mingled with the little girls, no objectionable features presenting themselves in any shape or form, fears were entertained that by some uncanny instinct, the little tacker had become conscious of the incessant watch kept over him, and was cleverly biding his time when, for a moment, vigilance might possibly be relaxed.

Efforts had been made during the time to gain his confidence and affection, which he seemed disposed to grant, so pleased was he that his request to be relieved of his curls had been granted. It was decided that the safest and wisest plan would be to have a heart-to-heart talk with him, baby though he really was in years.

He was taken into the office, asked some trivial question about a certain part in a play which had been given him, and which he seemed to enjoy greatly; and then followed a few frank questions better suited for a boy twice his age.

He looked alarmed, burst into tears, pleaded that all the time he had been in the institution, not once had he "said a bad word or done bad to a girl." Asked why he did n't, he replied, that the supervisor was always around and "the other boys did n't want to do it."

After much coaxing and the promise of continued good-will and "some eats," he made a disclosure so horrible in its wretchedness and abandoned wickedness, that the crime of the evil environment in which he had spent the few short years of his baby life stood out, ghastly and terrible, an indictment against a civilization that would permit it.

In spite of the fact that he was only seven years old, he spoke with the knowledge of a man of the world. His mother had been a prostitute, and had entertained men in his presence ever since he could remember anything. She had never done any cooking, but had fed him on delicatessen stuff and beer since babyhood. He had been made to join his mother and her "friends" at their card-games, and told how he had seen his mother and the men at times steal money from one another, "in a cute way." "Nobody was ever caught," he said, "and I asked the smartest one, Mr. Hinky, to learn me how, and he learned me."

There were even worse things that the poor little lad learned. Sometimes some men would give him money for candy and send him out of the room for a while; but others did not even heed the presence of the child. The mother seemed entirely indifferent to his presence or absence; and the boy in describing the immorality of which his mother had accused him, said, as if he were narrating some very usual incident, "Honest, I did n't mean to do any wrong. I seen the men do it and I wanted to do it too."

He also described, in full revolting detail, the acts of sex-perversion his mother's visitors had taught him; and added that they all laughed when he did it and said he was "a smart kid."

It was easy to understand how the spirit of imitation had prompted the child to wrongdoing, of the serious consequence of which he was utterly unconscious; and how, in his many foster homes, he had easily succumbed to the temptations excited by the propinquity of little girls.

He was spoken to with as much force and plainness as if he were seventeen instead of seven. The evil consequences of his acts were fully described, and the child looked frightened, terrorized, and then burst into sobs — a baby after all!

Every possible device and plan was formed and followed to take his mind completely from his past experiences. His normal, wholesome life in the institution, the attention and encouragement given him in school, and the small rewards held out to him, all had the desired effect. No further reference was made to his former unfortunate proclivities; it was hoped that his present life, if it did not make him totally forget, at least would succeed in implanting the spirit and ability to turn his intellect in a normal channel.

He continued with his school studies, made good progress, and was an affectionate, industrious little chap, willing and anxious to please.

His mother, fortunately for him, died soon after he entered the Orphanage, and he became, in fact, the ward of the community.

THE RESULT

Report from the Orphanage, October 16, 1921:

"Boy, fine, normal child. Doing well in school. Very happy. No more difficulties.

"Superintendent feels sex habits were purely imitative."

Psychiatrist's Report, May 28, 1922:

"Mental examination shows a somewhat dreamy, imaginative child, somewhat slow in reacting, whose degree of intelligence is probably not shown adequately by the examination. I. C. .82. His character appears entirely satisfactory in spite of the unfavorable reports of earlier years. No sexual manifestations have ever appeared. His physical condition is normal. Wassermann said to be negative.

"The boy appears to be a good placement case in a home where he will be appreciated and where his special talents may be brought out sympathetically."

Report from the Children's Bureau, March 12, 1923:

"So far as can be ascertained from Samuel H——'s life here in the Orphanage, he has developed into an apparently normal attractive boy. His health is good. His work at school is good. He has given no manifestations whatsoever of the old reported trouble.

"It was decided some time ago to place him in a private home. When the subject was broached to the boy, he was apparently so unhappy at the thought of leaving the only home he had known so long, that it was thought wisest to defer placing him until he was a little older and less fearful of the step."

(Signed) E. L. L.,
Secretary, Home Placement Bureau.

CASE B

EDNA N——, "ANGEL-FACE"

Entered January 18, 1918. Age 10 years, 6 months

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Stealing from stores and neighbors, and picking pockets.
- (b) Accused of sexual relations with boys.
- (c) Habitual school truant.
- (d) Immodest behavior in street, and employing vile and obscene language.
- (e) Lazy, impertinent, and disobedient.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Had been sent to school at the age of five, and was still in the First Grade.
- (b) Fond of pilfering from the teacher's desk, and purloining the children's pennies.
- (c) Taught small girls to expose themselves to the boys.
- (d) Extremely inattentive and dull.
- (e) Quite willing to accuse another child of her own wrongdoing.
- (f) Ready liar and stoutly maintaining a lie.

3. HOME

- (a) Pilfering from mother's customers.
- (b) Sullen; defiant of mother's authority.
- (c) Frequent spells of hysterical weeping, which brought the neighbors in alarm.
- (d) Cursing, scolding, and swearing.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Antagonistic to authority, and using obscene language when reproved for a fault or misdeed.
- (b) Impishly gathered the neighborhood's children in some out-of-the-way corner, and taught them obscene words and acts.
- (c) Defiant of school attendance and probation officers, and encouraged younger sister and brother, as well as other younger children, to mock and disregard them.
- (d) Artfully contrived to get "treats" and "presents" from newcomers and strangers.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Very attractive child. Well-formed, fair skin, large blue eyes, blond hair, and dainty features.
- (b) Face so babyish in expression, that she seemed a delicate and fragile little child.
- (c) Lips constantly puckering, and smiles coming readily when pleased.
- (d) Rather large hands and feet, the former hard, red, and disfigured with cuts and scratches, caused by the nails unconsciously digging into them.
- (e) Swollen and diseased tonsils. Bad, carious teeth.
- (f) Body extremely dirty and neglected. Scabies and pediculosis.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — Psychiatrist's report:
 - Intelligence: Mental capacity 8 years. I. C. .73. Social classification backward.
 - Character: Poor basis. Both parents feeble-minded.
 - Health: Thyroid considerably enlarged, but has given no marked physiological symptoms.
 - Impression: My impression is that the girl is in urgent need of change of environment. Later, she should be a good vocational case.
- (b) Personality Traits:
 - Very fond of personal adornment. Could stand for hours at a mirror, prinking and preening, and trying the effect of trinkets and bits of ribbon borrowed from the children.
 - Had little use for soap and water, but very anxious to obtain pomades, creams, and lotions.
 - Inclined to be sociable and affectionate. Eager to be petted and admired.
 - Would earnestly offer to care for a supervisor's room, and then pilfer to her heart's content, from a penny, to a garment that could be sold and turned into cash.
 - Would guilelessly lift her pure baby eyes, when accused of a theft, and earnestly exclaim, "I swear to God, I did n't touch it."
 - Very poor eater, but excessively fond of sweets, pickles, and limes.
 - Tossed uneasily in her sleep, and was nervous and irritable at times.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father, was a barber by trade, who worked irregularly, and spent his earnings on drink, women of ill-repute, and gambling. He had tuberculosis, and was admitted to the Consumptives' Sanatorium on a number of occasions, remaining for a few months each time.

The attention of the Benevolent Society had been called by neighbors to the plight of the family, at the time that the woman was in child-bed with her second baby, and the man had disappeared. He returned a month later, claiming that domestic difficulties had "driven him from the home."

He was extremely unreliable, and could not hold a job longer than a month at most. He drank to excess, used vile language, and was extremely abusive to both the wife and the children.

So brutal had been his treatment of his wife at different periods, that he had been arrested several times for wife-beating. After the birth of his eighth child, he wanted to sue for a divorce, because, he claimed, he was still young, and wanted to enjoy his life. His wife charged that he had intimate relations with a woman, who often visited him at the various barber shops where he worked, and wanted to marry him.

Finding that the man and his wife were constantly quarreling and cursing each other with the vilest and most obscene language, the Benevolent Society, for the benefit of the children, suggested a separation between them. A few months later they were reunited, but discord and unhappiness continued.

A year later, the man showed signs of mental disorder, was confined in an institution, and died a year after his commitment. His only relative was a brother, of low mentality, in another city, poverty stricken and unhappily married.

Mother, was physically very attractive, and of low mentality.

She was stupid, dull of comprehension, and in revenge for her husband's cruel treatment of her, refused to prepare any meals for him or the children, and made her domestic affairs the talk of the neighborhood. She nagged and swore, using obscene language freely before her young children.

She and her family were mainly maintained by the Charities during her husband's lifetime, and after his death, it was reported to the Benevolent Society that she sold liquor, with the assistance of a married man, with whom she had improper relations.

The "restaurant" she opened shortly before her husband's death was said to be a "liquor joint" in reality. Men and women of questionable character congregated there, and spent the night, waited upon and cared for by the woman's children.

The neighbors complained of orgies and carousals which kept them awake at night. The woman indignantly denied the stories, and called upon her children as witnesses to prove that she was peaceful and law-abiding, and "only a poor woman, trying to make a livelihood for her poor children."

In 1921, she was sentenced to thirty days in jail, for selling liquor. An old aunt and several impoverished cousins were her only known relatives.

Siblings: *Oldest brother*, had been a child raised in the streets, who had run the gamut of juvenile delinquencies. He had been committed to the Reformatory, and after his discharge, he was set to work at various jobs. He was an idler, and could not adjust himself. He had had very little schooling.

At the age of eighteen, he was said to be assisting his mother in her "business," and bringing women of ill-repute to the house.

Oldest sister, had been rather a favorite at school, on account of her unusual brightness and ability. Though she had lost much time from her studies, because of the unfortunate home conditions, which compelled her to remain home often, and also because of an operation on her foot for some trouble, she still ranked high in scholarship. Her teacher had commended her deportment also.

In 1915, when the girl was fourteen years old, her mother complained to the Children's Bureau that she stayed out late at night and associated with undesirable boys and girls. Also, that she was impertinent, unreliable, untruthful, and very disobedient. Information was further given by the mother at that time, that a favored friend of her daughter was the driver of a jitney 'bus, who permitted her to ride to and from her work in a factory,

free of charge. The girl frequently did not come home for supper, but remained out till quite late at night.

The investigator questioned the girl, who admitted that she was in love with the man, and would have married him, but he already had a wife. She rebelled against the suggestion that she avoid the man, and insisted that she was old enough to do as she pleased. Shortly, however, she dropped the man of her own accord, and then followed a succession of "loves," which were many and varied.

In 1917, she attempted to run away from home, but was taken in charge by a Benevolent Organization, and placed in a desirable boarding home. Attempting to run away from this place, she was sent to a semi-reformatory, temporarily. Mental examination showed that the girl was normal. The physical examination disclosed the fact that she had gonorrhoea in an infectious stage. Several men were then accused by her; but on investigation they were found not guilty, owing to the subsequent revelations that she had had relations with many men.

She was kept at the institution for six months, till cured of the disease, and was then released, upon her promise to reform her former ways. A position was found for her in the X-ray room of a hospital; but she was discharged almost immediately afterward, when it was discovered that she had disrupted the morals of the internes.

With a vengeance, she then resumed her former behavior, and was finally committed to the Reformatory. Upon her discharge, a year later, she renewed her acquaintanceship with a young jitney driver, who married her two months before the birth of her child.

Domestic difficulties followed speedily, and she complained that her marriage was a most unfortunate one, as her husband was unwilling to work.

At present, efforts are being made to help him adjust himself in a mechanical position.

The girl was remarkably beautiful.

Older sister, blond and very pretty, was of normal intellect, and reached the Sixth Grade in school, at which time the mother decided that she was "educated enough," and kept her at home constantly, to help her with the housework.

Failing in her studies, the girl became discouraged and gladly avoided attendance at school. In time, she took

complete charge of the home and the younger children, while her mother made and sold illicit whiskey. She also acted as waitress at night, in her mother's "restaurant," to the disreputable guests.

In 1921, she was reported to be pregnant, and a young visitor, eighteen years old, was arrested upon her charge. He married her. No further developments at the present time.

Younger brother, bright, attractive little chap, who is inclined to be melancholic and unusually grave for his years. He has a rather marked curvature of the spine, and keeps aloof from the other boys, whose strenuous play is possibly too great a task for him.

He is a tubercular suspect, and is being watched by the physicians of the Charities.

A short time ago, he was reported by his teacher as being an excellent scholar, bright and well-behaved.

He presents no problem or difficulty at the present time.

Younger sister, the least attractive physically of all the children, was, at the age of nine, reported to the Children's Bureau by the mother, as being unmanageable and "very bad."

The child's school-record was rather good, but her mother stated "that the teacher did n't know anything, anyhow," and complained that the child was nearly always at the "movies," and sometimes sang "while the pictures were moving, in the theatre."

The child was placed in a boarding home, and for a time, her behavior improved. Then she began to stay out late at night, and was otherwise unruly and disobedient to her boarding mother. Upon the latter's complaint, the girl was taken to Dr. G—— for an examination. He reported that she had immoral tendencies, and advised placing her in an institution immediately.

She was admitted to the Orphanage about the same time as her sister. Her age was nine and a half years.

The following was the psychiatrist's report concerning her:

Intelligence: Mental capacity $8\frac{1}{2}$ years. I. C. .94.

Social classification, usual intelligence.

Character: Poor basis, but fairly organized.

Health: Essentially normal, except for dental caries.

Impression: No social problem at present, except for ordinary home care.

At no time during her stay in the institution, did the child present any special problem. She took very kindly to the wholesome, healthy environment in which she was placed, played happily with the smaller girls, and manifested no undue interest in the boys, large or small.

Her school reports were satisfactory, and her voice, which was very sweet and capable of reaching high notes, was cultivated, and she took great joy in singing at the Home concerts, plays, and children's entertainments.

She craved affection, and was attached and devoted to those who treated her with interest and kindness.

She was a perfectly normal child.

Two youngest brothers, were hardly more than babies, and appeared normal.

(b) Developmental:

"She was a good baby, and I nursed her, of course," was all the information the mother would give regarding her infancy. Further particulars concerning her early childhood were meagre, beyond the fact that she had two or three of the usual children's diseases mildly.

Confronted with the obscenities and vulgarities of her parents' lives, almost as soon as comprehension came to her awakening senses, she very naturally followed the tide of her existence. The lack of morals in the home could hardly be counterbalanced by the school atmosphere for the short periods she was under its influence; and her development proceeded in the same chaotic course that brought her sisters to their unhappy careers.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Very imaginative; could concoct impossible tales at a moment's notice.

Very rapid and skillful in her movements. Had a knack of secreting things, almost under the nose of her victim; her favorite hiding-places being her sleeves and stockings.

Had very ready tears, to be employed on the slightest provocation.

Liked to stare out of a window, idly twirling her thumbs, and apparently neither seeing nor hearing anything.

Very fond of animals. Would grasp the Home dog in her arms, and caress and hug him passionately. Often, she would save some dainties from her meals, for his special delectation.

Had bright, sunny smiles that were most alluring, and employed them without stint to attain her desire.

Sought every opportunity to attend the "movies," and was greatly interested in the pictures of the "movie" magazines.

(d) Home Conditions:

Her mother was known as a very poor housewife, and not a proper guardian for her children.

During the father's lifetime, there were drunken brawls, quarrels, fights, and arrests. When the mother opened her "restaurant," the child was initiated in the vices of abandoned creatures. She was made to wait upon the tables her mother set for the night, and became familiar with the sight of drunken and debauched figures. Often, after her older sisters' assistance had been withdrawn from the mother, the child stayed up nearly the whole of the night, and slept the better part of the next day.

She was fully acquainted with her sisters' methods of life, and thoroughly understood the different things that happened to them.

(e) Mental Interests:

None.

THE TREATMENT

Some of the members of the Children's Bureau opposed the girl's admission to the institution. They maintained that, in view of the disclosures made by the worker in charge of the case, regarding the child's abnormal sexual proclivities, which were borne out by the physician's examination, she would be a source of contamination to the other children. As the child was free from any venereal taint, was of tender years, and her mind still adaptable to the influences of a different environment, that fear was not unanimously entertained.

Thus it was not without difficulty that the child was permitted a chance in the Home. She came, silent, unobtrusive, and dreamy-eyed, a veritable sprite of guileless innocence. Her "yes, sirs" and "yes, ma'ams," softly and timidly pronounced, might have stamped her a model of childish propriety and modesty. None so quick to find suitable nicknames, as children. In a very short time, she bore the sobriquet of "Angel-Face," and smilingly appropriated it with the sweetness expected of the angels.

She had been taken into the office and tactfully questioned regarding her antecedents. Without hesitation, simply as a matter of course, she answered the queries put to her, and unconsciously betrayed the blackness and hideousness of the human wretched-

ness in which she had been plunged. Informed that the future had a different life in store for her, and that it was expected of her to conform to methods of living widely differing from that to which she had become accustomed, she looked surprised, and gently asked, "Why?"

"Because the life you were living was not good for you," she was told.

She shook her head in vigorous denial. "It was too, aw right," she said, "'cause my momma made lots of money; I know, 'cause she always tells me everything."

"But do you know that it is very wrong to make money in ways that are not good and honest?"

There was bewilderment in her baby-blue eyes. "But ain't it when yuh make money, yuh got it?" she wanted to know.

"But don't you think it would be better not to have money, than to do wrong and bad things to get it?"

She was silent, apparently too bewildered and surprised to be able to frame any answer. The question being repeated, she finally shook her head doubtfully and said, "I don' know."

It was then carefully explained to her that for no reason must she employ any "bad" language, or tell any of the children of the doings in her mother's house, and that it was demanded that she be a good girl and behave herself at the Home and in school.

She burst into tears at the mention of school. "I — I — don' want to go to school," she sobbed.

"Why not?"

"'Cause," she answered.

"Don't you want to become a nice, smart girl?"

"I — I — don' — care!" she wept.

"Well then, what should you like to be when you grow up?"

"Wanta have good times," she said, brushing away her tears, and smiling, in the belief that her point had been gained.

"What do you call 'good times'?"

"Oh," she replied eagerly, "nice silk dresses, an' watches an' rings an' bwacelets, and parties and ice-cream and cake —"

As she paused for breath, another question was put to her.

"Suppose you get pretty dresses, and ice-cream, cake, and candies, should you like to go to school then, and try to be a good girl?"

"Guess so," she hesitatingly replied, looking dubious.

She was turned over to her supervisor, a trained and experienced woman, who had been made acquainted with her history, and was prepared to coöperate in arousing a moral sense in her. She was

obediently leaving the office, but stopped suddenly in the doorway, and timidly questioned, "Ain't I goin' home for to-night?"

"No!" she was told decisively. "You are to stay here in the future. This is your home."

She burst into violent sobs, and clung to the woman beside her. "Please let me go," she begged, "I gotta help my momma wait on the customers."

It was with difficulty that her fear in reference to the efficiency of her mother's "establishment" without her assistance was allayed, and she permitted herself to be led away, a most woeful and unhappy object indeed.

For several weeks, she was despondent and quite discontented with the quiet life about her. She did not want to be "in a place where yuh gotta go to bed early, an' they don't let yuh have good times in the street." She resented the curtailment of her freedom in living and acting as she pleased, and objected to the watchfulness of her supervisor, which prevented her from indulging in any of her former pastimes. She preferred making friends with the boys, and in consequence was scorned by the girls.

One of the smaller girls, enraged that she should join the boys in a game of marbles, instead of flocking to the group busy jumping rope in another part of the yard, yelled out, "Boy-girl! Boy-girl!" in derision. The name not being to her liking, "Angel-face" lost her temper and poise completely, and burst into a tempest of cuss words, which brought her to the office in short order.

"Oh, my, she was saying awful things — honest!" accused the complainant, round eyes wide in shocked horror, and rosy little mouth open in condemnation.

"I did n't too," she sobbed, great tears rolling down her cheeks.

"Chee! You can tell big lies!" ejaculated the small accuser, in grave surprise.

"That ain't no lie," maintained the other, her breast heaving with her sobs; "I did n't say awful things. My momma says lots worse, when she gets angry."

"My mamma never did, honest!" said the disputant, with proud complacency, not cognizant of the fact that *her* mamma had abandoned her as a baby.

At this point, the plaintiff was dismissed, and the culprit was again taken to task. "Were n't you told that under no circumstances were you to use 'bad words' here?"

"Yes, sir," so timidly, as to be hardly above a whisper.

"Why then did you disobey?"

"I — did n't," she insisted; "I — only said some bad words a little tiny bit bad — not the bad words I know."

"Did n't you say the other day that you wished that Miss F—— did n't watch you all the time, and that you could be like the other children?"

Again the timid, "Yes, sir."

"Well, you see what happens when Miss F—— takes her eyes away from you?" she was asked.

She nodded her head humbly. "I ain't goin' to say no more bad things, even teeny-weeny bad things," she promised.

"When that happens and you are a good girl, Miss F—— will permit you more out of her sight. But you must show that you can be trusted when you are left to yourself, now and then."

"Yes, sir," was the meek reply.

The bitterest portion in her present life was the fact that, though she loathed and abhorred the school, she still nevertheless found herself daily trudging to it, an unwilling victim, led by an adamant monitor, who was proof against tears and entreaties. Even the promised sweetmeats and dresses, also parties and treats to the "movies," were powerless to compensate for the dull, unhappy hours spent in the schoolroom. She was found to be exceedingly retarded, and extremely stupid, but as she did not present a mentally defective problem, she was admitted into the Special Class, with the object of observing what time and care would do for her.

She was placed in the Sewing and Embroidery classes, and took readily to the needle. She also became interested in the Domestic Science Class, and was permitted to cook and bake various messes, for her enjoyment and edification.

There had been some petty pilfering, which, when brought to her score, had been readily enough confessed, with apparent regret and sorrow; but the amounts taken were hardly sufficient to account for the plentiful supply of spending money she seemed always to have. A careful investigation revealed the duplicity of the child, aided and abetted by her parents. The two, at that time separated from each other, visited her and the younger sister, who had been admitted into the Orphanage, at different intervals. She would bring tales of the father to the mother, and *vice versa*, her imagination finding no difficulty in concocting likely enough stories, and would receive rewards for the nefarious information imparted. Finding the practice a most lucrative one, her imagination worked over-time, and soon the two simpletons doubled their visits to her, in their wretched desire to hear, from the lips of their child, all possible calumny and evil regarding each other.

While congratulations were being secretly exchanged that the

girl's thieving propensities had been curbed, since she seemed to have abandoned her habits of pilfering, she was accumulating numerous pieces of money and had no temptation to add to them by different means from the very successful ones she was employing.

The parents were requested to come to the office, and were informed of the facts in the case. At first, they discredited the evidence presented, so anxious was one to believe the worst of the other; then, without warning, turned the tables completely, and accusing the child of being the cause of their domestic difficulties, they then and there became reconciled, and left peacefully, hand in hand.

Finding herself turned into a scapegoat, the child evidently sought to revenge herself upon her parents by keeping aloof from them, with the fortunate result that she became more tractable in her conduct both at the Home and in school. When, however, her fund of ill-gotten gains was exhausted, she reverted to her pilfering habits, to the consternation of her supervisor, and the detriment of that lady's purse.

The latter had made every effort to befriend the child and keep in close touch with her, in accordance with the plan previously outlined, and had frequently permitted her to sew or read in her room. At first, some small articles had disappeared from dresser or drawer, and the supervisor had most patiently and tactfully dealt with the girl, upon discovery of the theft. When, during the extortion period, no further pilfering occurred, the supervisor felt that the child was under her control at last.

Now, she came into the office discouraged and disheartened, the child, with bent head and drooping shoulders, following slowly behind her. She complained that her purse had been rifled of its contents, and that the girl, after repeated denials and many tears, was, after several days' search, discovered to be the perpetrator of the deed.

The child pleaded for forgiveness, crying that she would "be a thief no more," and begging that the supervisor be appealed to not to give up the charge of her, as that lady had threatened.

"I like Miss F——," she cried, "and I want to stay by her."

"Do you show your love for people by robbing them?" she was asked.

Her eyes were downcast and she was sobbing convulsively. "I — I did n't have no money," she pleaded in her defense.

"Why did n't you tell Miss F—— you wanted some spending money? She would surely have helped you get some."

"I — I was afraid she would n't," came her reply, in stammering tones.

Upon her extravagant and tearful promises, the supervisor agreed to give her another trial, and her tears changed to smiles at once. However, it was soon after observed with satisfaction that she was really making an effort to improve her habits. The constant friction in the matter of school attendance somewhat lessened, and she tried to make friends with several of the smaller girls. Now and then a few minor things disappeared from Miss F——'s room; but as the lady was quite willing to continue her patience with the child, no change of supervisor was made.

An effort was made to give the child some responsibility, and watch her reaction to it. Her sister, though only one year younger than she, yet appeared her junior by several years, being considerably underheight and underweight; and she was requested to take charge of this sister, and help her with her morning toilet and her school-work. She fulfilled her duties so acceptably, that it was deemed advisable to increase them. She was called into the office.

"How should you like to be the monitor of one of the small girls' tables?" she was asked.

"Oh, I'd love it!" she exclaimed eagerly.

It was customary to have a monitor presiding as Big Brother or Big Sister at each table during meals, for the purpose of supervising the table manners of the group of smaller brothers or sisters, serving the food, and generally assisting them; and the child gladly grasped the envied and honorable position offered her.

She was assigned to a table at which sat some of the youngest girls, and assumed her duties with earnestness and sincerity. She became very fond of her "little sisters," and considered it her duty to observe faithfully that each one of her charges carefully washed her hands before sitting down to the table, and was tidy and well-behaved. She scrupulously observed "good manners" during meals, feeling that she was setting an example to her group.

Her responsibilities embraced her sister, to the latter's annoyance and disgust. Once, the younger girl, in rebellion, forced the older one to accompany her to the office, where she lodged her complaint. "She's bothering me all the time to be good," she remonstrated. "She's badder 'n me. Please tell her to mind her own business."

"She told me she wants to sing in them nickel-shows again," put in the girl in her defense.

"I did n't too," burst out the younger, hotly. Of the two, she was the more impulsive and outspoken.

"What did you tell her?" she was encouraged.

"I said that the nickel-show man saw me when I was coming from school, and told me he would give me a whole quarter to sing only two times in the show," she frankly declared.

"An' she said that she wanted the quarter for singing," the other accused angrily.

The smaller one tossed her head. "But I did n't go, smarty, did I?" She made a face at her sister, who burned red with anger.

"Why did n't you go?" she was asked.

"'Cause bad boys come to that nickel-show, an' nobody'd give me permission, I know."

The "nickel-show" man was taken in hand almost immediately, and advised no longer to molest the child, while the older sister's fears were allayed, and she was commended for her devotion to the little girl. She blushed with pleasure, and stammered, "Ain't I getting good now?"

After this, she began to improve in leaps and bounds, and soon she reached the coveted goal, and was permitted to mingle freely with the other children. She was very proud and happy when she was promoted to the Second Grade, and confided that she meant to be a "college lady" when she grew up.

It was at this interesting point, that her mother, having "enjoyed" widowhood for several months, now decided that, as her "restaurant" had become more prosperous since her husband's death, and "help" was both hard to obtain and very expensive, her daughter should return to her former post as waitress. She therefore came to the office, clothed in the impressive regalia of plumes, ruffles, powders, and perfumes, and stated that she desired the girl, whom she had found downstairs ministering to strange people's children, and whose arm she now firmly clutched, to be returned to her mother's service at once.

To her intense astonishment, her daughter looked defiantly at her, and announced, "I don't want to wait on the bums in your place, and I ain't goin' to come."

The mother thereupon turned from her to a higher authority, and insisted that since she was, "Thank God, making a nice living," she was well able to care for the girl herself, and did not want to have her continue to remain the beneficiary of charity. Her independence in the matter received approval, but how, she was asked, did she expect to save the child from the fate of her sisters, if she still had no other environment to offer.

"It was n't the poor girls' fault," blandly explained the woman. "The poor kids had to do something to spite that investigator

from the Charities, who was always bothering them about their friends; so they took up with the jitney drivers. Whose fault is it, I ask you, that the jitney drivers were loafers?"

"Then how do you know that Edna, in order to spite somebody, won't also take up with a jitney driver, when she is back in your home?" she was questioned.

"Oh, that'll be nothing," she answered indifferently. "If the worse comes to worst, I'll make him marry her before trouble comes. I'm smarter now than I used to be."

To her indignation and surprise, she was told in unmistakable language, that the only condition upon which the girl should be returned to her, would be an order from the Judge of the Juvenile Court, and she was advised to consult that gentleman regarding the matter.

She ceased her importunities at once, and retired crestfallen.

At the end of her second year in the Home, the girl was progressing normally in her school and home-work, was a full-fledged monitor, and most of her difficulties seemed of the past. She was greatly attached to her supervisor, whose patience and kindness she now seemed to understand and appreciate, and was cheerful, happy, and contented in the daily routine of her duties.

Her handiwork was greatly commended by the instructors, and she appeared quite fond of domestic duties, which she performed faithfully and efficiently. Later, she was elected a member of the Self-Government Body, and made it her business to collect news for the Children's page in the Home publication.

There were no undue sexual tendencies manifested. It was recognized that, while her mentality would not permit her any scholarly attainments, or training for some higher position in life, she would be able to earn an honest livelihood in office or store, in some minor capacity.

Her ambitions were then directed and developed in accordance with her abilities.

THE RESULT

Letter received from the girl:

December 6, 1921.

My dearest Friend:

I hope you got home well and happy, and that you had a pleasant trip. We had snow here all day Sunday and a little on Monday, and I was wondering whether you had any up in B——. Is it very cold up there?

I am writing this letter in school. We are supposed to have

cooking this morning, but the cooking-room is not ready for us, so my teacher gave us a free period. Some of the girls are playing games, some are sewing, but I took this opportunity to write to you. I always wonder whether you know how much I miss you and Miss F——.

Tuesday when you came down to the Home to visit us, you said you would try and see what you could do for me to get me out to my Aunt at R—— Beach, near where you live. I hope you will visit my aunt soon and tell her how much I want to stay with her. I will be good and do everything she wants me to. I am sure she won't have any trouble with me.

I will appreciate this very much if you can do it for me. I am going to write to my aunt soon and tell her all about you and Miss F——, and that I want to live with her, and that you are soon coming to see her. Just think how fine it will be for me to live near you and Miss F——.

Don't forget to give my love and kisses to all, please.

Answer as soon as possible,

Your little friend,

EDNA N——.

Upon investigation, it was found that the aunt referred to was the wife of her father's brother, and that the home was not as suitable for the girl as the institution caring for her. She was advised to remain where she was.

The following letter was received in reference to her:

May 29, 1922.

Dear Friend:

I am very glad to comply with your request for a report on Edna N——.

The girl is getting along splendidly, and is at present in the institution, where she is to remain till the close of the present school-term.

Then she is to be adjusted vocationally, as recommended by Dr. D——, who examined her lately, and found her greatly improved.

Yours very sincerely,

(Signed)

L. O. G.,

Executive Secretary, Children's Bureau.

The Superintendent of the institution reported:

"No objectionable traits noticed.

"Conduct good, and school progress fair. Is doing very well."

CASE C

MARY E——, "A STEPCHILD OF FATE"

Taken under observation July 20, 1916. Age 15 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Attempted suicide by drinking carbolic acid.
- (b) Morbid; melancholic; obsessed by thoughts of suicide and death.
- (c) Exceedingly difficult case — first in child-caring institution, and then in girls' home, working girls' club, and in different private homes — by reason of extreme untidiness, disobedience, and impertinence.
- (d) Very quarrelsome and unwilling to do any work.
- (e) Indolent; defiant and anti-social.
- (f) Undesirable associations.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Very poor scholarship. Had not gone beyond the Fourth Grade.
- (b) Antagonized teachers by attitude of indifference and general carelessness.
- (c) Frequent truancy.

3. HOME

- (a) Unmanageable and very troublesome in institutions, and defiant and quarrelsome in own and private homes.
- (b) Obstinate, sullen, and bitter.
- (c) Discontented and very miserable, brooding over possibilities of revenge, and encouraging sentiments of hatred, resentment, and rebellion, to one and all alike.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Intolerant of reproof; bitterly incensed against any criticism.
- (b) Disobedient and disrespectful to elders, and very quarrelsome with girls of the same age.
- (c) Freely expressing hate and scorn for her superiors.
- (d) Disliked; ostracized by young people of both sexes.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Medium height. Well-grown and well-developed.
- (b) Rather attractive in appearance: fair complexion, small, dainty features, good teeth, and fine hair.
- (c) Large dark-blue eyes; near-sighted.
- (d) Extremely nervous and unable to focus vision.
- (e) Frequent hysterical attacks, and almost constant illnesses. Physicians felt that her indisposition was due to the poison she had taken at the time she attempted suicide.
- (f) Wassermann test proved to be triple plus positive; not infectious. Treated with "606 Specific."

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:

Intelligence: Normal. I. C. 1.00.

Character: Poor organization, with poor hereditary basis.

Health: Poor. Congenital syphilis. Should be under anti-syphilitic treatment.

Impression: Peculiar circumstances affecting the case render institutional adjustment impossible. Superior private home should prove beneficial. Wholesome, sympathetic environment, an essential for improvement.

- (b) Personality Traits:

Untidy in habits. Careless about person.

Deep wrinkles marked by an habitual frown strongly outlined on the young face.

Sullen, unfriendly attitude to strangers, very retiring, and very anxious to avoid the least attempt at social intercourse.

Pessimistic, bitter, biting words ready to flow from her lips at the smallest provocation.

Hasty, furtive glance, as if both ashamed and afraid.

Hands never still: either fingers interlacing, or pulling at the knuckles, or the nails being bitten.

Sad, unyouthful drooping of the head.

3. SOCIAL

- (a) Heredity:

Father: born in Germany, passed his boyhood in England, and emigrated to America in his early manhood. Though he claims to be a college graduate, and, when he

so desires, gives every evidence of really possessing an excellent education, he is uncouth and unpolished. The first impression usually formed of him is that of an illiterate, ignorant, and besotted wretch.

Possesses a chirography so exquisitely beautiful and artistic that by means thereof he could easily have qualified in a half dozen professions, he yet remained a "jack-of-all-trades"; at different times in his career, he was an oyster-dredger, longshoreman, type-setter, carpenter, conductor, painter, and market-vender.

A gambler and a common drunkard, he attributed his inability to keep a job for any length of time to the fact that his employers were unable to appreciate his talents and devotion to them. When taken to task for shiftlessness, he would most abjectly promise to reform his methods, and would willingly accept almost any kind of work offered him. After the first week's pay was in his pocket, he always succeeded in finding some excuse, more or less adroit, why he should seek more congenial employment, or he would find some naïve reason for the fact that his services were no longer required. Once he put it, that "They did n't think a man as near-sighted as I am could see well enough to do that kind of work."

He found his near-sightedness a very convenient explanation for many of his delinquencies, even offering his defective vision in exculpation of the brutal beating he had administered to his wife. He claimed that he had been "somewhat affected by a drink," and was unable to see his wife clearly at the time, and gave her the beating thinking it was an enemy of his. His gross sensualism and corrupt morals stamped him a moral degenerate. He was afflicted with syphilis in an infectious state.

In 1897, he first applied to the Charities for aid for his family. Later, he frequently left the city, on one pretext or another, returning at intervals for a short stay, but never adequately contributing to the support of his family, which numbered four children in 1907.

At that time, he disappeared again for about a year, his whereabouts being completely unknown. When he returned to the city, he had a "common-law wife" with him. The woman had two children, and claimed that he was the father of one.

He was arrested for non-support, was paroled, and dis-

appeared again. After some months, he suddenly reappeared, and started life again as a fruit and vegetable vender. For a short time all went well, till opportunities for forgery and embezzlement presented themselves; then, without compunction, he victimized the relative who had generously yielded to his persuasions to be given a chance in his business, and was gone, his whereabouts unknown.

The duped relative deemed him a kleptomaniac.

The four children had been sent to institutions, when their mother's insanity deprived them of her care. In April, 1911, the man suddenly appeared in the institution where his daughter and two younger sons were living, and demanded that the children be returned to him. He was well dressed, seemed prosperous, and was accompanied by a woman, who, he claimed, was his wife and the mother of the children. He stated that now, since his wife had recovered, they were reestablishing a home, and wanted their children. Whether the investigation was insufficient, or the authorities of the institution were favorably impressed with the statements and manners of the pair, the request was granted, and the children given into their father's custody.

During the next few years, the man repeated his career of vagabondage, gambling, drunkenness, and brutality, while the Charities assisted in the maintenance of his family.

In February, 1915, his daughter, then a girl of fourteen, attempted to commit suicide by poison. In the hospital, she gave as the reason for her act seduction by her father.

The man was arrested and in March, 1915, was sentenced to three years in the penitentiary, on the charge of incest.

Mother: American parentage, fine family connections, had the advantages of a high-school education and excellent environment in childhood and girlhood. Two of her brothers are successful and honored merchants, and two sisters have married well and are quite happy. The offspring of these families are all normal.

The woman met the man at some public function, fell madly in love with him, and, against the wishes, and in spite of the violent opposition, of her parents, married him. They at once disowned her, and never, during the rest of her troubled life, did they manifest any further interest in her.

In addition to her four living children, she had a number of miscarriages and abortions. Steeped in direst poverty, ill-treated and constantly deserted by her husband, the poor woman, whatever her reasons may have been for clinging to the creature she married, at no time manifested any independence of thought or action, but submissively accepted her ruined life without complaint. When her neighbors, outraged at the treatment accorded her, had the man brought to court, she always intervened in his favor and had him pardoned.

She was infected with syphilis by her husband, first became paralyzed, then insane, and was sent to the State Hospital for the Insane, where she remained till her death, in 1916.

Siblings: Oldest brother, a rachitic, deformed child, who, at the age of five, was reported as being feeble-minded and unable to talk.

He was sent to the State Training School for the Feeble-Minded at the age of six, and was adjudged a low-grade moron. He died at the age of eleven.

Younger brother, was not quite seven years old in 1911, when he, his sister, and brother were turned over to the father by the institution which had cared for them since early childhood.

At that time, he was a normal, healthy little chap, neither troublesome nor displaying any objectionable traits. He and the other two children had been parted from their mother at so tender an age, that none of them remembered her, and they readily believed the woman living with their father to be their mother.

For the four years he remained under his father's jurisdiction, he became acquainted with the city streets, where he spent a good part of his daily life, but had not developed any juvenile delinquency flagrant enough for contact with the authorities.

The school reported him for truancy and mischief. Otherwise he had no record at the time of his sister's attempt at suicide, with the reason for which he was fully acquainted. He corroborated his sister's statements at the trial, at which he was a witness, and condemned his father bitterly.

Charges of abnormal sex-tendencies being preferred against him by his father's common-law wife, and several

of the neighbors concurring in the indictment, he was placed in a disciplinary school temporarily.

His younger brother had been admitted to the Orphanage, which was willing to give him a chance, and he entered at the age of eleven. He was a poor physical specimen, pale, undernourished, underweight, and with diseased tonsils and adenoids. He had tubercular glands and a Wassermann test showed double plus positive, not infectious.

The psychiatrist's report was as follows:

Intelligence: Normal mental capacity. I. C. 1.00.

Character: Poor hereditary basis, with congenital syphilis. Apparently normal.

Health: Poor. Needs special diet and should be under anti-syphilitic treatment.

Impression: Would be well placed under proper institutional guidance. A case for vocational adjustment on or after fourteen years of age.

The first two years of his stay at the institution were fraught with much difficulty and hardship for his supervisors and monitors. He was obstinate, sullen, selfish, and extremely cruel to those younger and weaker than himself, and also to animals. On one occasion, in order to get even with a boy who had angered him, he threw the latter's much prized and dearly beloved puppy out of a window, and at another time kicked a cat to death for no reason at all. His only excuse was, that the animal always got in his way, and he wanted to get rid of her.

At school, he was both an extremely poor scholar and troublesome. He displayed marked tendencies toward gambling for and with anything he could get, and was very untidy about his person and in his habits.

The entire forces of the institution were brought to bear upon him, and in his last few years at the Orphanage, some of his ungainly traits were entirely obliterated, and others were checked from further development.

He was not lazy or shiftless, and was interested in the manual-training classes, and also liked to do cleaning and fixing about the house. The Fifth Grade was as high as he could reach in school. He manifested no sex-tendencies, and his childish ambition to be a sailor persisted with him in youth.

At sixteen, he joined the U. S. Navy, and later, for

meritorious work and conduct, was promoted, till at the present time he is a commissioned officer. He is fond of his sister and devoted to her. No intimate relations with his father. He had been treated with "606 Specific."

Youngest brother, not quite eight years old at the time of his admittance to the Orphanage, was an attractive, well-formed child, apparently normal.

Despite his tender years, his social knowledge was rather extensive, and he was fully aware of, and thoroughly understood the erratic relations and conditions that had existed in his father's house. He, too, had been a witness at that parent's trial.

The Wassermann test applied to him also showed double plus positive, not infectious, the same as that of his brother. He too received the "606 Specific" treatment.

The psychiatrist's report was as follows:

Intelligence: Mental capacity normal. I. C. 1.01.

Character: Poor hereditary basis, with congenital syphilis. Apparently good organization.

Health: Satisfactory, but should be under anti-syphilitic treatment.

Impression: Well placed in the Orphanage. Case for vocational guidance.

He was a quiet, easily managed little chap, with ordinary abilities and intellect. He displayed no undesirable traits or tendencies, and had no special ambition for any particular kind of work.

His scholarship was poor and he was unable to pass the Sixth Grade, which he reached with great endeavor and much difficulty. He was taught printing, to which he took kindly, and at the present is boarding in a private home, and earns part of his expenses assisting a printer. He is estranged from his father but is very fond of his sister.

There is no reason why he should not make an honest, worthy citizen in the future.

(b) Developmental:

No trustworthy record of her early childhood was obtainable. She herself has no definite recollections of her mother or remembers any home life. Paralysis at first incapacitated the mother from caring for her, and at the age of five, she was put into an institution by the Charities.

Here she was refractory, disagreeable, and disliked for the five years she remained, till her father took her from

the institution. For some reason, she was either unable or unwilling to make friends among the supervisors or the children, and was extremely unhappy.

She complained constantly of sores which came and went upon her feet during most of her childhood, and while that condition was being treated, was kept home from school. She missed so much schooling, that she was always in a lower grade than she felt she legitimately belonged to, and in consequence was not interested in her studies and sought every opportunity to avoid attending school.

The teachers found her disobedient and unruly, and cared little to tax their patience with the unattractive, stubborn child.

She hailed with sincere delight the opportunity to return to the home her father told her he was reestablishing. Neither she, nor the boys who were then in the institution with her, had any recollection of the mother, who at the time was in the Insane Asylum, and readily believed the father, who told them that the woman he brought to them was their mother.

The home life to which she was now introduced was exceedingly unhappy and wretched. With poverty were combined drunkenness, bad company, and gambling at all hours; while her portion in the home was the care of two sickly babies and the haphazard household. The "mother" was constantly out, or busy entertaining "friends," and the girl looked after the family and the housework.

There were frequent quarrels, and during the woman's loss of temper, at a time when the girl was twelve years old, the facts of the mother's insanity were cruelly presented to the child, who never recovered from the effect of the awful revelations which then followed.

As she grew older, her father displayed a certain fondness for her, to the jealous rage of the woman he called his "wife." Her attendance at school had been very poor, and then ceased entirely. The wretched existence at the miserable "home" terminated with the pitiful attempt at suicide made by the girl.

She stated that she thought death the best way out of her dilemma, as her father had threatened her with "terrible things" if she exposed him.

She was placed temporarily in the House of the Good

Shepherd, after her recovery. Later, she was removed to a working girls' home, where she had hardly had a chance to adjust herself, when her father's common-law wife called upon her, quarreled bitterly, accusing her of all kinds of infamy, and upbraided her for the charge she had made against the man, who was then under arrest.

The girl became hysterical and insisted on leaving the Home, because all the other girls had heard the woman's remarks and she was ashamed to face them. She was removed to a private home, to which she could not adapt herself. She was again transferred to another girls' club, and it was reported that she was frequently ill, very unhappy, and very unsociable.

Later, it was claimed that she rebelled at any supervision, was headstrong and impertinent, and insisted on associating with men whose names she did not even know. Several other boarding homes followed with indifferent success — the girl was a problem to the community!

(c) Habits and Interests:

Indifferent to personal appearance.

Long periods of depression and brooding, followed by crying spells.

No youthful energy or life apparent in daily routine. Existing through the days mechanically and hopelessly.

No ambition, desire, or fancy expressed, or in any way manifested, for some particular work, or activity, or any of the usual girls' pastimes, pleasures, or pursuits.

No sex-tendencies.

No desire for a friend or confidant.

(d) Home Conditions:

Whether the home life of the girl in the institution, which was really the only home life she knew, was lacking in proper influence, or unable to impress her at the formative period of childhood, certain it was that she missed the advantages and happiness of a genuine home environment.

As her obstinacy and impertinence to her superiors grew in proportion to their lack of patience and understanding with her youthful misdeeds, she became more and more imbued with the spirits of antagonism and hatred. She was as glad to leave the institution, as the institution was to part with her.

In her father's home, where no wholesome act or in-

stinct flourished, and no healthy spirit or influence thrived, it was inevitable that the untutored and friendless child should succumb to the wretchedness and vice rampant about her. Worse than orphaned, taunted by the shameless woman who had taken her mother's place, and ignorant of the world and its ways, she drifted along in the bitter and dark waters of her existence, till death appeared to her to be the only way out.

With her horrible experience weighing upon her mind, and her father's denial of guilt and counter-charge that she had had immoral relations with his friends, she quite naturally developed a frenzied attitude toward the world. Abnormal in her thoughts and confused with her new surroundings, she was hardly a fit subject to adjust herself properly to the girls' homes, clubs and successive private homes, wherein dwelt normal, contented people, whom she could not understand, and who in turn would not, or could not, comprehend the poor, broken little creature.

(e) Mental Interests:

None, save nightmares of wild and morbid speculations.

THE TREATMENT

The Children's Bureau, extremely anxious to assist the unfortunate girl, and at the same time driven desperate by the unsuccessful attempts to adjust her in the Club and at the Home, requested one of its ablest and most philanthropic representatives to act as Big Sister, and endeavor to gain her confidence. This lady most generously undertook the trying task, and though she spared neither time nor efforts in the attainment of her project, she failed signally. The girl repulsed her friendly attempts, and became increasingly difficult as she was transferred from one home to another.

A happy thought occurred to the lady to change the environment of the girl so completely, that different scenes and different people would unconsciously play their parts in bringing forgetfulness, and possibly relief, to the troubled mind.

With this point in view, a well-kept, successful girls' club in another city was appealed to, and the girl was sent there. Before leaving, she visited her two younger brothers in the Orphanage, and then came to the office seeking some favors and advantages for them. Silent and repellent, she relaxed from her taciturnity only when her brothers were in question. She was manifestly very

fond of them and very desirous of safeguarding their interests. They had evidently informed her that they were quite contented with their new surroundings, as she opened the conference with, "Thank Heaven, I'm glad the boys will now have a good home."

It was a futile attempt to endeavor to break through her frigidity and seek any cordial response to a friendly attitude. When her brothers were not in question, she immediately shut up like a clam, cold and grim, her young face disfigured with age-old experience and bitterness. As it was the forenoon, and her train was not to leave till the evening, she was invited to spend the day with the boys. She looked up quickly, surprised and thoughtful.

"Do you know all about me?" she questioned antagonistically. "Yes."

"Do the people in the house know all about me?" Her eyes were hard and bitter.

"No! There's no necessity for them to know anything."

"Oh!" She was thinking. "Do the kids here know anything?" She seemed to be hanging upon the answer.

"No! There is absolutely no need for them to know anything about your affairs."

"Oh!" she muttered. She sat silent, and was plainly hesitating.

There was but one way to reach her soul, and that was through the brothers she loved. "You know you're not likely to see the boys for some time; you'll be glad you spent the day with them," she was gently reminded.

"Thank you very much. I'll stay," she replied simply.

She was their shadow that afternoon. The younger one especially came in for affectionate demonstrations of her love for him. She showered upon him expressions of her solicitude for his welfare and happiness, that were almost maternal in their sentiments. "Please! please don't let them grow up like *him*," she gave voice to her anxiety at parting.

The "*him*" was tacitly understood.

"You'll write and keep in touch with them?" she was asked.

"Oh, yes"; she nodded her head emphatically.

"Then you'll be satisfied about their welfare," was the assurance given her. "You'll be a welcome guest any time you come to see them."

"I wish — I wish I could stay with them," she stammered; and then burst into convulsive sobs. She became calm after a while, apparently making a strong effort to control herself, and assumed her habitual attitude of grim silence.

"Please don't let them grow up bad," was her parting request.

She wrote to them several times a week, and once weekly there came regularly to the office a letter of inquiry regarding the brothers' behavior and progress. By employing these letters as a medium for a continued correspondence on a matter of common interest, friendly relations were being established, though probably she was unconscious of that fact. Gradually she would permit a few words regarding her own life and welfare to creep into her sentences.

In this way, it was gathered that she was adapting herself to the wholesome life in the Girls' Club, and was apparently more contented than she had ever been in her life before. In one of her rare sentences concerning herself, she had said, "The girls here have such a good time and they make me have a good time, too. Is n't it funny that I could have a good time?"

The matron of the Club reported the girl as rather "queer," but wrote that she was making an effort to please. It did seem as if she had found the haven she needed, and the Children's Bureau was congratulating itself upon a happy solution to a difficulty, when the bolt fell from what seemed a clear sky.

The official of the Club, who had been made acquainted with the girl's history at the time arrangements were made for the girl's admission to the institution, found it necessary to render a report to the members of her Board. This lady gave the facts and particulars of the unfortunate case, in confidence; but before the week had passed, one or two of the girl inmates of the Club had in some manner heard part or parcel of the pitiful story, and the poor creature found herself suddenly despised and snubbed. None of her former companions would associate with her; not only that, but no girl would remain in the same room or at the same table with her.

The matron desperately tried to mend matters with every means in her power; but the girls demanded that the outcast be removed from their midst, and the lady, fearing that the fits of melancholy and depression into which the girl was now sunk might result in another suicidal attempt, sent a hasty message to the Children's Bureau, imploring that she be relieved of the difficult case.

Before the Bureau could devise ways and means to accede to this request, the girl took matters into her own hands. Finding that she received a cold shoulder at every request for a loan from her former friends, she helped herself to the necessary amount of fare from the matron's purse, leaving a note in which she promised to repay the sum taken, as soon as she had money, and made her appearance at the Orphanage. She came to the office first.

"Here I am," she announced; "I've come for advice. I don't want to see the boys till I know what to do with myself."

She poured out the sad story of her ostracism and pain, and made a free confession as to how she had obtained the fare to come "home." "It's no use," she ended bitterly; "wherever I'll be, wherever I'll go, they'll soon know all about it. Why did n't they let me die at the hospital? I can't live, and they won't let me die. What do they want me to do?"

She was put in charge of the nurse while a conference was held concerning her. It was decided to try another private home for her, while efforts were to be exerted indirectly, through her brothers, to reach and influence her.

She was informed of the new home that awaited her. A bitter smile passed over her face and she shrugged her shoulders carelessly. "For how long?" she asked. "As soon as the lady finds out about me, she has no more use for me."

"This lady knows nothing, and will continue to know nothing," she was told. "Should she by any chance hear something, your conduct *must* be such, that she will not believe anything. Do you realize that it is up to you to make your brothers into good men?"

She was startled. "Me?" her lips were trembling and white.

"Yes, you are their sister, and the example they will follow."

"O my God!" Tears poured down her face and she stretched out her hands imploringly. "Please — please help me!" she begged. "I'll do anything — I'll work my fingers off if they'll let me — only they should n't grow up like — *him*."

As she had neither education nor training of any kind, it was difficult to place her at any congenial employment. She herself had no special predilections toward any occupation, but was quite willing to put her hand to anything that should be suggested to her. During her various periods at the homes and clubs, she had attempted to work in different factories, but could adapt herself neither to the work nor to the manners of the place.

She was sent to a trade school and carefully watched for any preference that might manifest itself in an individual line of work. Ultimately she evinced great enthusiasm for the milliner's art, and while she was learning to become "a hat artist," as she quaintly expressed it, efforts were made to give her the benefits of a well-regulated and wholesome home life. The sympathies and interest of her boarding-home mother had been enlisted, by informing the woman only of such facts as were necessary to awaken her pity, with the happy result that she was very gentle and patient with the girl's faults. The Orphanage, too, held its doors hospitably

open to the bruised and wounded child, and she would come, at first timidly and half-frightened, and then eagerly and quite sure of her welcome, to the office, and talk over her day's activities and possibilities. She never failed to make anxious inquiries about her brothers, and seemed to hold herself responsible for their good conduct and future welfare.

To be able to pay off the "loan," as she termed it, to the matron of the Club, and also to give some spending money to her older brother, who, missing some, had appropriated another boy's, she herself obtained a position in a department store for evening and Saturday work. She hoarded her wages till she had paid off that "loan," and then put each of her brothers on an allowance, while she walked to save car-fare.

After six months' apprenticeship, she became the "hat artist" she yearned to be, and shortly earned a salary sufficient to support herself.

"It's not such a bad thing to be alive," she confided, as with the joy of achievement shining in her eyes, she told of the "creations" which had brought her a substantial raise; "that is," she hastily caught herself, "if they let you live."

She was still ostracized by the girls of her age, who either knew or, in some uncanny way, would learn of her history; and when, weary and despairing, she would come into the office and cry her forlorn heart out in the agony that the snobbery and contumely caused her, she would be encouraged and inspired to continue her fight, through the medium of the boys. The older of the two was in many respects a problem to be dealt with, and his delinquencies were told her in confidence, and her assistance with him requested.

Her worry and fear lest the boy grow up into a counterpart of his father, in time superseded her own woes in her mind. She would deprive herself of small luxuries so that she might give the boy the things and allowances he requested. "I could n't help what *he* was, but I can try to make them good," she would repeat frequently, almost as if it were a promise to herself. Told that she would have to cultivate cheer and happiness, the better to impress her brothers with a sense of joy in life, the poor child made every effort to fight against the fits of depression that would assail her.

As a means of introducing her to the young life absolutely necessary for her normal development and progress, she was taken to balls, parties and outings, where young people congregated, and introduced to their circle. She made friends readily, and all went well till, sooner or later, the young women learned of her history; then they refused to continue their friendship with her, even

though they admitted that she was "a nice girl." The young men did not withdraw their friendship; they, on the contrary, became warmer in their regard, till some dishonorable proposal brought the girl, in tears, and suffering wretchedly, to the office, seeking hope and consolation.

"Is it always going to be like this?" she questioned in piteous accents, "Are they never, *never* going to let me forget?"

Unfortunately for her, the daily papers, at the time of her attempted suicide, had seen a story of unusual human interest, and had given space and publicity to her and her sad experiences, with the result that there were few she met who did not know or, know somebody who knew, of the sordid and tragic occurrences in her short life.

"They think that children must be like their parents," she observed sadly, her voice quavering. "But — I'm not bad, — honest, I'm not as bad as the good girls, — and — we won't let the boys be bad!"

The "boys" were at once her greatest anxiety and comfort. As much as she feared for them, so much she hoped for them. There was no sacrifice she was not ready to make for them, and, at the time, they were unconsciously instrumental in keeping her from the desperation to which she seemed frequently ready to yield, when tried beyond her strength by the contempt of her kind.

It was deemed advisable to remove her to a neighborhood where she was less known, and where she might have better opportunities for making and keeping young friends. Fortunately, her boarding mother, genuinely attached to her and anxious to assist in her welfare, was quite willing to move elsewhere, and selected a pretty nearby suburb as the new site for her home.

In a different locality, with new surroundings, the girl improved physically, and enjoyed whatever social opportunities presented themselves. Her work was quite satisfactory to her employers, and with increased prosperity, she took more interest in her clothes, tried to beautify her surroundings, and began to display a normal girl's healthy desire for an attractive and dainty appearance. She was advised to further her education by attending night school, and this she conscientiously did for the full term.

As her older brother improved at the Home, her anxiety regarding him became less keen, and she was more hopeful of the future for him. Her terror lest he turn out like his father had somewhat abated, though, when any complaint concerning him was brought to her, she would take him aside, reprimand him most severely, and hold the example of his father before him, merciless to herself in her love for the boy.

"You know where he is," she would scold the youngster; "do you want to be there too?"

Once, when the boy had a particular streak of mischief for a week, she came with a suggestion which, from the quivering muscles in her wan face, plainly showed how much pain it must have caused her to conceive the plan. "Don't you think it would make him behave himself if — if he went to see — where his father is for being bad?" she asked, in very low tones, in a voice which could hardly be understood for the trembling in it.

Given to understand that such a course might have a disastrous, rather than a beneficial effect upon the boy, she sighed and said, "Well, you see, we must do everything to make him good. — I must show everybody that — that we children are good people."

At some young people's gathering, she met an industrious, worthy young man, who promptly proceeded to fall in love with her. She returned his affection, but confided that she was n't going to show him that she cared for him in the least, till she found out whether his intentions were honorable. "He is a Catholic, besides," she added, regretfully; "so I suppose it's no use even allowing him to come to see me."

The boarding-home mother was communicated with, unknown to the girl, and gave the information that the prospective lover was a most respectable and estimable young man, and had been unremitting in his attentions to the girl, who treated him with indifference. The good woman agreed to supervise her charge with most tactful care and consideration, and make every effort to retain her confidence in the matter. At the Orphanage, precautions were taken to find more pretexts than ever to bring the girl to the office.

Meanwhile, under the stress of her love-emotions, and the advantages of the wholesome, care-free life she had been leading, the girl blossomed into an attractive and charming young person. One Sunday afternoon, she came into the office, pink-cheeked and bright-eyed, and asked for a confidential interview.

She explained with many happy blushes, that "Bob" had asked her to marry him, and only wanted her to become a Catholic, so that his parents should not be offended.

"And what did you tell him?" was asked her.

She blushed red. "That — that I loved him, but — it was all up to you."

Here was a dilemma, indeed!

The next question was asked as gently as possible. "Did you tell Bob of the past circumstances?"

"Yes, and he said he loved me and did n't care. That's why I love him so dearly," she answered.

"Well, it might be wise to see Bob —"

"Oh, you want to see him?" she eagerly interrupted; "just one moment!" And out she flew and returned almost immediately, leading a bashful young man, who seemed inclined to follow at her beck and call.

She quite willingly left the young man to the confidential interview that followed. It was learned that she had informed him of every detail and circumstance connected with her past life, sparing neither her father nor herself. "It was not her fault," asserted the young lover, "and I'll marry her if she'll have me."

The matter was carefully considered, and then it was deemed advisable to suggest to the girl to accept the young man's proposition, if a medical examination found her in good health and fit for marriage.

Several months later, she embraced Catholicism and married him.

THE RESULT

Dearest Friend:

February 21, 1922.

Your letter came a few days ago, and you can't imagine how happy Bob and I were to hear from you. If the baby had sense, he'd be happy, too, but he's too busy making such a racket that I wonder how I can write at all. When he grows up, you can bet that he'll be as glad to hear from you as we are. I'm going to send you another picture of him I took last week on his first birthday — he surely is some big, splendid boy.

Bob's business is getting along very nice, and we are very happy. Sometimes I think that I'm too happy for it to last, but please don't scold me for having such thoughts, but it seems too good to be true.

Did you get a picture from Harry in his officer's uniform? I was so happy that I cried my eyes out. Bob said all women are funny, because they cry when they are happy and cry when they are sad — but I tell him he does n't know much about all women anyway.

Tom promised me to write you a nice, long letter and tell you how well he is getting on. He is in the printing business and I have my eyes on him all the time. He is getting so big and fat you would hardly know him. I think I am going to be proud of him too — don't you think so?

I have decided to make my own boy the Superintendent of an Orphan Home when he grows up. What do you think?

Did I write you in my last letter that our little home will soon be our very own? We have just three more payments to make, and I just can't tell you how happy we are we took your advice and bought our home. Bob has wonderful plans for a garden this summer, and we just can't wait for May to come. — We are going to send you the first vegetables we raise, honest.

I have lots more to tell you, but the baby is pushing everything in front of me, to keep me from writing, I suppose. Do you think he'll be so selfish when he grows up? I am hoping that he will have more sense, and then he will write to you himself.

So for the present I'll have to close, with best wishes and lots of love from Bob, little Bob, and of course,

From your own girl,

MARY E——.

CHAPTER VIII

INTRACTABLES

CASE A, EDWARD P——	“THE CHRISTMAS GIFT”
CASE B, JOSEPH K——	“CHINKY”
CASE C, BERNARD J——	“THE PHOTOGRAPHER”

CASE A

EDWARD P——, "THE CHRISTMAS GIFT"

Entered November 17, 1916. Age 13 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Was pilferer when not quite seven years old at an Institution for Dependent Children.
- (b) Truant. Would work at a store in the vicinity instead of attending school.
- (c) Constantly bunking out. Would stay away from the Home for a week at a time.
- (d) Marked sexual tendencies.

2. SCHOOL

- (a) Persistent truancy responsible for retardation of several years.
- (b) Listless; impertinent; disobedient, and refused to make any effort at application.
- (c) Threatened to commit suicide when reprimanded by the principal or teachers.

3. HOME

- (a) Disorderly; sly and cunning petty thievery.
- (b) Lazy; would neglect all duties assigned to him.
- (c) Unruly and disobedient.
- (d) Untidy in person and filthy habits.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Constantly disagreeing and squabbling with the children.
- (b) Defiant and insulting to supervisors.
- (c) Frequently found in the girls' dormitories and lavatories, and always had a ready excuse when detected.
- (d) Had a very plausible and appealing way of enlisting outside sympathy; he would plead hunger and loneliness to all individuals who would listen compassionately to him, and would receive gifts of clothing, money, and food.
- (e) Pleaded with the neighbors for a chance to run their errands and do some work for them in home or store, because he wanted them as friends. Would steal from them whenever entrusted with change, or permitted to tend the shop.

- (f) Juvenile Court Record:
Habitual and incorrigible truant.
Minor without proper care.
A moral degenerate.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Fifteen pounds underweight, pale and sickly looking.
- (b) Very short in stature. Drooping attitude.
- (c) Sharp, small features and keen dark-gray eyes.
- (d) Shape of head good. Teeth badly carious. Normal pubertal development. Had spinal curvature which had been neglected; also an arm broken in early childhood had been improperly reset, with resultant deformity. The first impression suggested a hunchback.
- (e) Had every possible disease of childhood, contagious and otherwise, and had also been operated upon for appendicitis and peritonitis.
- (f) Masturbated since the age of six.
- (g) Constantly complaining of aches and pains.

2. MENTAL

- (a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:
 - Intelligence: Boy shows high-grade intelligence.
 - Character: Good character basis, but poorly organized.
 - Health: Poorly nourished. Poor physique. Old surgical scar needs reëxamination. Must be given a specially wholesome and nutritious diet.
 - Impression: My impression is that the boy's main need is for a well-disciplined, good home, similar to that offered by the Orphanage.
 - Showed brightness and no little ability in answering questions and winning favorable regard.
- (b) Personality Traits:
 - Fond of pleasure in general and of the moving pictures in particular. At one time, is cheerful and good-humored, and the next moment, is morose and depressed, talking of committing suicide. Fibs easily but confesses just as readily. Believes that he is unhappy and discontented because he has no parents or relatives.

3. SOCIAL

- (a) Heredity:
 - No known father, mother, or relatives.
 - Foundling; believed to be illegitimate.

(b) Developmental:

One Christmas Eve, a kind-hearted woman determined that, notwithstanding the insults and rebuffs given her by her drunken neighbor, she would insist on finding out the cause for the continual crying of the few-months'-old baby.

A few weeks previously, the baby's foster-mother had died, and on her death-bed had extracted a promise from her husband that he would always care for the baby.

The foster-mother, who was herself childless, had suddenly appeared with the baby in her arms before her neighbor; and told the woman that a girl she had known, and in whom she was interested, had brought the baby to her and had asked her to take care of it. She further expressed the fear that her husband might not like to be bothered with the baby, but had decided to keep and care for the child, notwithstanding her husband's objections.

She was practically dying of tuberculosis at the time, and refused to heed her good neighbor's advice and entreaties that she should not take an extra burden upon herself in her illness, and further antagonize her husband who had been treating her cruelly for years. But the poor woman insisted upon doing her duty as she said, and for the few weeks she lingered on earth, she cared for the baby devotedly. When dying, her pleas to her husband for the baby were most heartrending and affecting, the neighbor said.

All the latter knew of the woman, was that she had been a good, honest, hard-working creature, who had suffered abuse and blows from the husband, who was an habitual drunkard. As far as was known, she had had no young relative or friend who was the mother of the child, and had neither given nor left any possible clue by which the child's parentage could be traced. She had been singularly and resolutely silent on that point, when questioned by her neighbor, and had also withheld all information from her husband. The couple were Germans who had not become Americanized.

After the woman's death, the baby was sorely neglected by the man, who was now nearly always drunk. He discouraged the visits of his neighbor to the baby, who was "always crying and remained alive only by a miracle," declared the neighbor. She had been making up her mind to call the attention of the Society for the Prevention of

Cruelty to Children to the case, when the crying of the baby on this particular Christmas Eve roused her to instant action.

She braved the vile language of the man, and entered his home forcibly. The baby was lying on the floor shrieking with all its might, and the man, angry and drunk as usual, was cursing and scolding it. The woman grasped the child and pleaded with the man to let her care for it. He stormed at her, then burst into a loud laugh, and said, "All right! Take the bastard for a Christmas present"; he pushed both of them out of the door.

He displayed no further interest in the child and shortly afterward disappeared from the neighborhood. His neighbors thought he must have met with an accident, as the home remained intact, and he never came back for any of his possessions.

The woman kept the baby for a few days, and then turned it over to the Foundling Asylum, claiming she had a large family of children and was unable to give the newcomer proper care.

The child remained in the Asylum till the age of six, and there being no possibility of an adoption, as he was unattractive and sickly, he was transferred to an institution for dependent children.

He was, however, cute, talkative, and affectionate, and an official of the institution gave him his own name and was very much interested in him, even planning to adopt him; then the boy suddenly began to develop ugly little tricks and objectionable traits. The official lost interest at once, and the boy was seven years old, when the Superintendent of the institution having decided the child was a "born criminal," he was transferred to another institution where the discipline was more rigid.

Here he gave considerable trouble, and a year later, the Superintendent of this institution requested that he be taken elsewhere.

A semi-reform school was his next home, and here he developed tendencies which caused the officials to take him to a neurologist for treatment. The nerve specialist termed him a "moral degenerate," and under this charge, he was brought into court and committed to a Reformatory when not quite twelve years old.

Here an effort was made to have him learn to work, and

also to respect authority, which he defied. As he abhorred anything that had the least semblance of labor, he was a most difficult case and was dealt with very sternly. His associates were the most hardened of the boys and he quickly learned their worldly philosophy and callous ways.

A former Reformatory inmate, then in the Orphanage, received a pitiful letter from him and, without consulting anyone, wrote in reply that he would do well to devise ways and means of coming to the Orphanage.

One bright morning, he appeared, ready to give the place a trial. He was sent back to the Reformatory and very soon again presented himself. This time he pleaded to be given a chance in a real home. He was sent back again, but his request was taken into consideration, and shortly, after certain preliminaries had been adjusted, he was formally admitted as an inmate of the Orphanage.

(c) **Habits and Interests:**

Careless in attire and personal cleanliness. Would chew on his nails and bite his fingers. Voracious eater and extremely fond of sweets, which, if not easily procurable, he would steal. Craving sympathy all the time by hard-luck stories. If necessary, had ready tears at will. Always willing to promise most faithfully to reform and behave himself.

Was greatly interested in the stores in the neighborhood and made friends with the shop-keepers. Very anxious to go on errands.

Very fond of animals.

(d) **Home Conditions:**

The influences the various institutions had attempted to draw about him had failed most signally. Apparently of an affectionate disposition, yet during all his wanderings he had not succeeded in either attracting or being attracted by any human being, for his ultimate benefit.

He despised and hated most of the caretakers and supervisors with whom he had come into contact during his life, and his attitude towards them was most revengeful. He was desirous of visiting the Homes but not the people.

(e) **Mental Interests:**

Had no desire for books of any kind. Even viewed highly illustrated books of adventure with stolid indifference.

Sole desire and ambition, to attract and amuse girls.

THE TREATMENT

He came, a poor, pitiful and unhappy creature, and forlornly took the place assigned to him among the boys. He seemed very weak and delicate, and the youngsters crowded about him anxious to cheer and comfort him, especially since he had given them a mournful story of his life and had told them that "he had no one in the world." Their ready sympathy and assistance made things very comfortable and home-like for him, and he brightened up and became rather cheerful.

Right after supper, he came into the office, a flush upon his face, his eyes bright and his features animated. He was carefully leading Prince, the intelligent and gentle collie dog, loved and prized by all the children, and as he made the request, he continually patted the beautiful head of the dog. "Please, sir," he stammered, "please, may I love the dog, and — take care of him, and bathe him and comb him and sleep with him?"

The thought occurred quickly that Prince might prove a leading factor in working out the salvation of the boy, among whose many traits that excellent one of a love for dumb animals had remained undiscovered. When consent was given to all but the sleeping part, he dropped upon his knees before the animal and kissed and hugged it with all his might. Then taking advantage of the permission accorded, he ran out with the dog at his heels and both were soon enjoying a happy romp in the yard. The two did become very good friends, and if Prince received most loving care and attention and choice tidbits borrowed or stolen, he unconsciously did his part by influencing the boy to better physical care of his own person. In caring for the dog, the untidy child also acquired the desire to wash himself, and after he combed the dog's shaggy mane, he would smooth his own locks.

The first thing given the boy was a physical overhauling, and it was found that there were a number of defects that had to be righted. In fact, his poor anatomy was affected with many ills. A spinal curvature had existed for years, a partly deformed hand needed attention, teeth, tonsils and adenoids, and what not? He was informed that he was to be taken to the hospital for the tonsillotomy operation, and took the news cheerfully. While preparations were being made for his admission, he was kept home from school and seemed to be enjoying life immensely with the companionship of Prince.

A few days after his tonsils and adenoids had been removed, he displayed a strange reluctance to go home. This was at once

unusual and peculiar, as the average child regarded the hospital with dread and was very glad to come home, especially after an operation. He begged to remain and suggested that there were other operations that might be performed upon him, pleading that he was not afraid of pain or suffering and wanted all the operations due him. He even appealed to his physician to find some cause for an operation, or failing that, help him to locate some disease which should necessitate his remaining at the hospital.

He returned to the Home dispirited and unhappy; even Prince could not rouse him from the gloom that enveloped him. He ate the special food and dainties given him, appeared physically well, but seemed to be obsessed by an intense desire for the hospital.

The first day he was permitted to join the children, he appeared suddenly before the Home nurse with a splinter at least two inches long dug into his hand. She removed it, bathed and cared for the hand and dismissed him, telling him it would be all right. "Then don't I go to the hospital now?" he asked in disappointment. This suggested that the splinter came into the hand by design not accident. Taken to task, he cheerfully admitted that he had put the splinter into his hand so that he might get blood-poisoning and stay in the hospital a long time.

His strange infatuation for the hospital was regarded as a peculiar and distinct phase of his character which needed further study, and as far as he was personally concerned, the matter was lightly disposed of and no more referred to. Every attempt was now concentrated upon him, literally to compel him to lead a normal life, with the normal duties and pleasures allotted to the children. He took kindly indeed to all pastimes, outings, parties, and enjoyments, but balked at the suggestion of any duty assigned him.

At school, he was placed in a much lower grade than his age demanded; he was found so badly retarded that a special course of private tutoring was arranged for him, that he might keep up with the work of his grade. Under close observation and constant encouragement, he made an effort to apply himself to his studies, progressing with surprising success. He was promoted to a higher grade and that seemed to have an excellent effect upon him in encouraging him to increased endeavor.

Suddenly when all was running quite smoothly and he seemed on a fair road to general improvement, his teacher sent a note of complaint. She had sent several with him previously which he had destroyed, but this time she took the precaution of sending a duplicate note with a classmate of his. The boy easily confessed

that he had burned the notes and said that he was so unhappy he did not care what was done with him. Inasmuch as his melancholia had seemingly departed from him, the evidence of its return was disheartening.

He appeared to have a secret, and upon being pressed to divulge it and promised that it would not be betrayed, he opened his heart, and while heavy teardrops fell, he unburdened his soul of its great sorrow, very real and genuine to him — he had loved and lost! He and a small girl in his class had been in love with each other and had agreed to get married when he should be sixteen and she fourteen; but suddenly a rival had appeared on the scene in the person of a larger and handsomer boy, and the fair lady had forgotten her vows and had snubbed him for a week. He then felt that life had no further attractions for him and sought advice on the easiest and best way of committing suicide.

An attempt was made to comfort him with the assurance that the world contained many maids, the equal of the perfidious charmer, and if he continued to make progress at school and was promoted regularly, some other maid, possessing even greater beauty than his fickle friend, might be attracted to him; not only that, but the first maid would regret her unwise action, and might be very willing to associate with him again. Further, the hope was held out tantalizingly, that when the fair one came visiting the institution on a Sunday, as she frequently did, the Superintendent would take her in to a conference and manage to show her what an estimable and promising young man she was discouraging for someone not quite so worthy. That was to be done, however, only if the young man gave a solemn promise to put all thoughts of suicide out of his head and make a decided effort to make himself really worthy; otherwise, how could the Superintendent truthfully plead his worthiness? He saw the point and acquiesced rather cheerfully.

He applied himself to his school-work with excellent results. Unfortunately the temptress again assailed him with her wiles and without any assistance from any superintendents. She had a quarrel with the boy she had preferred and, to spite him, turned her favor again upon the unhappy "problem." He fell desperately, but all would have been well, had not the other boy waylaid him on the way to school and given him a sound thrashing right before the very eyes of the fair one, in addition, calling him such dreadful names as "cripple," "fool," and "jackass," to show his contempt. The boy brooded over this insult all morning, and at recess, when the teacher and pupils were out of the room, he attempted to hang

himself with his scarf by fastening one end to the gas-jet, and making a noose of the other end, which he placed about his neck.

How long he hung suspended in the air, no one knew; but when the children came in from their recess, he was already blue in the face and exhibiting signs of strangulation. Their loud outcries brought the teachers and the principal running, and the latter, with the presence of mind for which she was renowned, promptly cut the noose, releasing the boy, and then applied first aid. He regained consciousness quickly and his first words regretted that he was not dead, and that he had been compelled to break his promise and think about suicide. He told the principal that he had felt that it was no use to continue living, since the girl would not want to marry him now, and he could n't possibly return the other boy's beating as he was not large or strong enough.

The matter was treated very tactfully at school for the benefit of the other children; the principal had word passed around that the boy had intended playing a joke upon his classmates with the intention of scaring them, and had nearly met with an accident. He was again taken into the office and, after a confidential talk, promised that if ever again the desire for suicide occurred strongly to him, he would first communicate his intentions to the Superintendent. (This promise he kept inviolate for a long time.)

It had been decided to put his back in a brace for the possible relief of the curvature, during the summer vacation, but the present time seemed more expedient for the purpose. He was quite reconciled to his lot, and found great comfort in the hope he entertained that, when his back was straightened, he would be quite a handsome and strong boy.

To his dismay, he stayed but two days at the hospital. Still, in that short time, he succeeded in reaping a harvest of sympathy, condolence, and general petting. He was in and out of the wards, talking to the patients and offering to do their errands. It was a difficult matter to keep him away from the hospital now. After an interview with the head nurse, who had been taken into the history of the case, the reason for the boy's strange fancy was quite apparent. The nurses, one and all, regarded him with sympathy, which they showed by caresses, endearments, and small kindnesses. He was extremely fond of one pretty young nurse whose hand he specially liked to hold, and it was while holding her hand and fondling it, that most of the painful surgical work had been performed on him. The good-natured young woman, anxious to alleviate the pain of the child, whom she regarded with pity and sympathy as an orphan, friendless and unhappy, gladly

consented to grant him the pleasure of holding her hand. Subsequently, on his many visits to the hospital, when he came to her with repeated requests for more "hand-holdings," she deemed his desires but innocent eccentricities called forth by his gratitude to her, and permitted him to hold and play with her hand for as much time as she could spare.

"I love to hold her hand, it's so soft and it makes me feel so good, I forget all my troubles," he said, when an explanation was required of him.

Then followed an earnest plea that he be permitted to stay at the hospital; he would do anything, wash and scrub floors, run errands, carry trays, anything at all so that he might be near his friends, the nurses. He added tears to his entreaties, and sat there a pitiful, sobbing object of human misery and woe, seemingly hopeless.

"Is your desire to become a doctor so great, that you would do all those things in the hospital?" The question was sudden, unexpected of course, and most confusing. He reacted to it in the manner that had been hoped for and anticipated. In fact, the suggestion had been prompted by despair, as the last resource with which to reach that clouded mind.

He looked up, astonished and wondering. The thought had penetrated the recesses of his brain and held an appeal which he grasped readily enough. His eyes became brighter, and his expression gradually assumed satisfaction, and a sort of hopeful eagerness.

"Yes, that's it," he nodded emphatically, "that's why I really like to stay with the nurses. But how can a poor boy like me ever become a doctor?"

Good! He had swallowed the bait!

When he left the office, he carried with him a definite promise that if his school-work were satisfactory, he would be permitted to attend college and in time study medicine. It was also distinctly understood that conduct unbecoming a future doctor was to be strictly avoided.

From that time, it became evident to all who were interested in him, that the boy was straining every effort to withstand the habits acquired in his short life and learning to apply himself to his school-work. The wise principal, coöperating with every means at her disposal, observed him closely, ready with encouragement and advice. He had informed his fair innamorata that he was going to become a great doctor, and had no more time to bother with girls, at which the young lady was greatly offended and withdrew her

favor from him entirely. This had an excellent effect and he confided that he did n't think girls were good for anything but trouble, an opinion in which he was greatly encouraged. He did try studiously to avoid the entire sex and was no longer a frequenter of the girls' playrooms or lavatories.

The tonic effect of work was then applied to him. Manual training did not appeal to him, nor did any labor that required work by hand. He was very anxious to help with the monthly magazine issued by the children, but in no department did he qualify successfully, till at his own suggestion, he was permitted to join the Advertising Committee, whose business it was to secure the small advertisements run in the paper. Here he was on his own ground and procured his ads. without apparent difficulty. He was scrupulously honest with the money entrusted to him and took great pride in the thought that he had been instrumental in helping the paper to attain the dignity of self-support.

His graduation from school was a source of satisfaction and happiness to him, and he went to bed that night with his diploma beside him. Only first he had taken the precaution to affix "Dr." before his name, in large black capitals. He told the other boys that he was very anxious to see how that would look, and was so satisfied with his name now, that he was going to work like a "nigger" till he was a real doctor. He also added, rather gravely, that when he was a great doctor, there would be lots of people wanting to take him into their families as a friend.

In addition to the dog, Prince, he was very fond of a pair of rabbits he had purchased with some pocket-money given him by some friends watching his career with great interest. He planned and finally executed the work on a rabbit-hutch, and gave the inmates ceaseless care and attention. His spinal curvature necessitated the wearing of a plaster cast for two years, and though his movements in and out of the hutch were attended with pain and no little difficulty, at no time did he neglect his pets.

As his physique improved, there was a marked change for the better in his mental and moral deportment. His melancholic fits were less frequent and he no longer mentioned suicide. To all appearances, the ambition of becoming a doctor was the beacon light beckoning and holding him to the straight and narrow path. He paid many visits to the hospital, but they were of a "professional" nature, he proudly declared; he either went there for treatment or to have the internes show him their "doctor books." He retained most cordial relations with his friends, the nurses, but no longer requested to "hold hands." He would question them about their

cases and tell them how he would treat certain ailments when he became a doctor, to their intense amusement. He continued a prime favorite with them and at no time did any further sex impulses obtrude themselves upon the intimacy.

As a Boy Scout, the hikes and outdoor sports had most beneficial results physically, while the strong moral influence cannot be overestimated. There were no further abnormal outbreaks and his future development was watched with great confidence.

At the beginning of his high-school course, the Superintendent was called to another city, and the boy's sorrow was heartrending. The promise made him of a university training still held good, but he seemed to have lost his ambition. He demanded to be taken to the other city; but that was not quite possible, and finally he came with the request that he be permitted to go to work and support himself. He felt that he had been an object of charity long enough and was eager to maintain himself and supply his own educational opportunities.

Under the circumstances, it was deemed best to grant his wishes and employment was given him. He worked steadily and faithfully, paying a small sum weekly to the Home for his maintenance. It was understood that, when he should be the possessor of a small capital, a private boarding home would be found for him, and he could then start life on his own resources.

THE RESULT

For a period covering not quite two years, the following reports have been received of the boy:

"In the latter part of June, 1920, the boy visited the Children's Bureau Office, very dejected, and said that he had tried to commit suicide by jumping off one of the fire-escapes at the Home, because one of the boys had reprimanded him for trying to borrow money. However, the report obtained at the Home gave a different version. It was said that the boy had deliberately walked up the fire-escape and looked into the girls' dormitory, thereby causing a good deal of excitement.

"He was transferred to a private home, but that home was found undesirable for him, and he was placed in another home where the boarding mother took an interest in him. He remained in this home only one month, asking to be transferred to the boarding home of one of his chums. Since the latter home was a good one, his request was granted. However, in about five or six weeks'

time, the boarding mother complained that he had visited a summer park and spent three dollars on the 'paddles.'

"In the latter part of September, he entered the merchant marine. He returned to the city a week later and went to live at his former boarding home. He secured another job and his employer said his work was satisfactory.

"A few weeks later, he became acquainted with the woman who had known him as a baby, and as she and her husband expressed a desire to be helpful to him, he was placed with them. In February, 1921, this boarding mother complained of his behavior. She said the boy squandered his money, was disobedient and stayed out till eleven or twelve o'clock at night. He resented her 'interference' when she questioned him as to where he spent his time. He would not eat at home. His employers were personally interested in him.

"In June, 1921, he again entered the merchant marine. About six weeks later, he returned and again went to live with his last boarding mother. In September, she reported that she could no longer keep him. She said he would not work, associated with boys of the worst type, and once when the family was out of town, he had called in some disreputable boys and girls, who took up the carpets and spent the evening dancing.

"The following month, the boy was sent away from the home. He said that he had been compelled to leave, because he did not pay board. The woman told a different story. She said he had been expelled because, in the middle of the night, both her husband and herself had been aroused by their daughter's screams, and upon investigation, found that the boy had entered the girl's room. The boy explained that he must have been walking in his sleep, as he could n't understand how he got there otherwise.

"After this, he went to live at one of his former boarding homes. Efforts were made to place him in the Boys' Home, but he refused to go there. He would not coöperate and for a time no satisfactory arrangements could be made for him. His new boarding mother complained that he gambled and borrowed money constantly."

Meanwhile, to the other city came almost weekly a pitifully worded letter, in which he pleaded to be permitted to come and be given a chance to be near his old friend. But he belonged to another city, which was caring for its own dependent problems, and the matter could not be satisfactorily adjusted. Let his own letter speak for him:

January 19, 1923.

Dear Friend:

Please excuse me for not writing sooner, but I guess it is just as you said, I am too lazy.

I am still working at H—— although I have tried to get a better job. I am all right, so are all the other boys of the Home, and I hope you and all the members of your large family, are the same.

I have been waiting to hear something from you in regard to going to B—— to live with you. At present I am living at Mrs. S——'s, but ever since you have been in B——, I have never felt the same. I just feel as if I could run away and try to stow away on a ship that was headed for B——. I just feel so lonesome and blue, and although I know the Children's Bureau is trying their utmost to help me, still I know I would be a lot better off if I were with you. Somehow or other, I would do things that you tell me that I would not do for the Children's Bureau. In other words, I would sooner take your advice than that of the Children's Bureau. I know they are still my guardians, but I cannot feel that they are the real friends that you have been to me. Because I know myself you have done more for me than anyone else, although the Children's Bureau has helped me a great deal. Still, they cannot take your place, because I just feel that way. I cannot go to them for help and advice as I used to go to you, and I know you always were ready to help me, personally or otherwise.

Please, dear friend, see if you cannot do something to get me away from P——. Ever since I had the trouble at J——, they have been hounding me and I cannot do anything without them knowing it. I am getting sick and tired of it and I just want to end it all, and that is what I will do, if they won't leave me alone.

Please give my regards to —— and all the rest of the people of the Home.

Hoping I meet with a favorable answer in the near future, I am,

Your former ward,

EDWARD P——.

Poor puppet of a strange destiny! He will stand or fall as the pilot of his environment guides or destroys him!

CASE B

JOSEPH K——, "CHINKY"

Entered October 15, 1917. Age 11 years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Shrewd and clever pilfering from stores and individuals, to such an extent that he came to be regarded and feared as a menace in the neighborhood.
- (b) Bold, cunning, and audacious in his schemes to defraud and rob.
- (c) Leader of a gang, composed of boys older and younger than himself, whom he led into all sorts of depredations and mischief in different sections of the city.
- (d) Perverted sex-tendencies. Instigated the members of his gang to violate small girls.
- (e) Incurable liar, and given to the use of profane and obscene language.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Obstinate and continued truancy.
- (b) Had a school attendance of less than six months to his credit since his kindergarten period.
- (c) Defiant, disobedient, and always in readiness to "fight" any teacher, school-attendance officer, or any authority, who ventured to reprove or remonstrate with him.
- (d) Induced the children in his classroom of the moment to rebel, and mock at the teacher. Influenced the bolder spirits to join his gang.
- (e) Enjoyed caricaturing the teacher and throwing spit-balls, which "sport" he then calmly attributed to the instigation of some timid youngster, who frequently would be punished for his misdeeds.

3. HOME

- (a) Unmanageable and given to violent temper tantrums.
- (b) Stealing from parents, and pawning any articles of value they possessed.
- (c) Stayed out in the streets till all hours of the night. Slept at home only when it suited his purposes.
- (d) If punished by parents, would retort with vile language and any missile that came readily to his hand.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Recognized neither law nor order, and followed the mood of the moment, regardless of consequences.
- (b) Influenced the members of his gang to prey upon the various neighborhoods, and revenged himself upon any citizen who complained to the police, by ruthless thefts, window-smashing, maltreating his children, and most abusive language.
- (c) Arrested three times for larceny and disorderly conduct.
- (d) Juvenile Court Record:
 - 2-18-16. Charged with acting in a disorderly manner in a moving-picture parlor. Placed in care of Miss R—— for three months.
 - 7-24-17. Feloniously entering dwelling-house and stealing therefrom two gold tooth-bridges valued at \$23. Placed in care of Miss R—— for twelve months.
 - 8-11-17. Minor without proper care. Sent to Reformatory pending further hearing on September 11. 9-11-17. Continued to October 12. 10-15-17. Committed to the Orphanage.
 - 4-23-20. Larceny of \$2. Postponed to April 28, then to May 20, then to November 20, when it was dismissed.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

- (a) Small in stature, but sturdy and stocky in build.
- (b) Sparse brown hair, thinly covering his large, square head, and growing low upon an unusually broad forehead.
- (c) Face attracting attention by reason of a Mongolian cast of features in a fair, freckled skin. A peculiar characteristic was the quick closing of the white lids over the small, gleaming, oblique eyes, giving an expression of innocent guilelessness to the face.
- (d) Constant wrinkling of the forehead had produced four pronounced wrinkles, which stood out conspicuously upon the low brow, producing an effect of maturity strangely at variance with the youthful facial contours.
- (e) Body almost entirely scarred, and bearing dark bruises from blows of past and recent origin.
- (f) Nails badly broken. Teeth neglected and decaying.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination — Psychiatrist's Report:

Intelligence: Normal. I. C. 1.00.

Character: Good basis. Poor organization.

Health: Essentially normal.

Impression: In view of boy's record of delinquency, would recommend that he be sent to the Reformatory.

(b) Personality Traits:

In demeanor, quiet and unassuming, presenting an appearance of docility and meekness.

Able to change his expression to suit the need of the occasion, and pitch the cadences of his voice correspondingly.

Careless about his person, and though he displayed a marked taste for flashy combinations in clothes, extremely untidy and uninterested in the garments he wore, even when he had himself selected them.

Very keen in perception, crafty and exceedingly clever in sizing up the personalities of either friend or opponent.

Uncannily shrewd in the selection of his tools and accomplices.

Indolent and pleasure-loving.

Hearty eater, fond of good food, and constantly craving sweets.

Showed no desire for affection, and was callous to friend and foe alike.

Animals appealed to him only when frantically trying to dislodge the various articles he had succeeded in tying to their tails.

3. SOCIAL

(a) Heredity:

Father: was an illiterate, incompetent tailor, whose meagre earnings at the shops which employed unskilled labor were insufficient to support his family, and the Benevolent Society supplemented his unsteady income.

He had been married twice, the boy being the offspring of the second marriage. His first wife had been a normal, hard-working woman, who, during her lifetime, had owned and operated a grocery store, securing a livelihood for her husband, herself, and three children — a son and two daughters. After her death, the man was unable to make the store pay, though he worked untiringly; and he soon returned to his trade of tailoring, with very poor success.

The three children left their father's home on the advent of a stepmother, and being nearly grown, supported themselves. The daughters are employed in the tailoring trades and the son is a plumber. The three are steady, respectable and ambitious young people, maintaining themselves.

While the man had no known bad habits or associations, it was reported that he had greatly deteriorated since the death of his first wife. He had become quarrelsome and unreliable, and his second marriage was attended with constant friction and unhappiness. His children by the first marriage avoided him, and rarely visited his home.

Mother: at a very early age was seduced by some unknown man; and later, her career was such, that she was committed to a House of Refuge. She was physically attractive, apparently of normal mentality, and after leaving the asylum to which she had been committed, she married a young workman of good antecedents and habits, with whom she is known to have lived unhappily. She was divorced from him, shortly after the birth of her two daughters.

The girls were quite young when the mother remarried. Both were "problems" during their adolescence, refusing to attend school regularly, stayed out till late at night, and frequented the dance-halls. The older girl was committed to a girls' reformatory shortly after passing her sixteenth birthday, and her sister followed in her footsteps soon after.

The woman bore her second husband one daughter and two sons. She claimed to be devoted to her children, and insisted that her neighbors' stories of her infidelity to her husband, and gross neglect of the children, were but idle, scandalous gossip, dictated by malice and envy. She complained bitterly of the poverty of her husband, declaring that he had married her under false pretenses; according to her statement, he had beguiled her into marriage by tales of a flourishing grocery business which yielded a large income per annum, and the claim that he was the landlord of a row of tenement houses. She deplored her lot in life as the wife of a poor man, as unsuited to the attractions she possessed; and constant recriminations between her and her husband were productive of violent quarrels and brawls, in which the neighbors claimed

they were frequently compelled to interfere to prevent bloodshed.

She was a frequenter of the moving-picture houses and ice-cream parlors in her neighborhood, and still possessed an inordinate fondness for dances and what she termed "good times." An aged mother, an inmate of a Home for the Aged and Infirm, maintained by charity, was her only known relative. There were rumors that two of her brothers were serving terms in the penitentiary, but that story was never fully substantiated.

Siblings: *Oldest sister*, apparently normal, was quite attractive physically, and became a clerk in a department store after her graduation from the public school at the age of fifteen. She had not presented any difficulties at any period in her life. Her associates and neighbors esteemed and liked her. At eighteen, she was married to a respectable, industrious young man, and their home life appears happy.

Older brother, was known as a truant and wanderer when barely eight years old. The parents complained that he was unruly, disobedient, and given to temper tantrums. As he grew older, he bunked out for days and nights at a time.

The Children's Bureau had sent him to an Institution for Dependent Children, from which he ran away five times, till the Superintendent of the Home, finding his patience exhausted, petitioned that he be relieved of the custody of the youthful incorrigible.

He was then kept at home under probation, with very unsatisfactory results. He became a member of a gang, and finally was brought into the Juvenile Court for stealing. Sentenced to the Reformatory, he was taught a trade in that institution; but after his release, relapsed into his previous delinquencies, and after many adventures, was again committed to the Reformatory.

(b) *Developmental:*

The mother, in discussing his early childhood, frankly stated that she regretted that her efforts to prevent his birth had failed, and added, that he had been so ill and puny an infant, that she could n't understand how he survived.

Without a shadow of doubt, he had been left to his own devices as soon as he could toddle; and when the dissen-

sion and unhappiness in his home caused him to seek outside attractions, he naturally took to the streets. Here, unfortunately for him, he soon learned of the house, or rather den, near his home, of a master criminal, known as the Lobster, who specialized in training children for careers of crime.

He became attached to the place, made attractive and interesting to the boys and girls who frequented it through the cunning artifices of a master who knew the psychology of the neglected child only too well; and soon he was a member of his brother's gang, and receiving lessons in juvenile misdemeanors. His progress was so satisfying to his master, who had recognized his leadership abilities, that he was "promoted," and encouraged to form a gang of his own, from the Lobster's youthful recruits.

His brother, already sowing wild oats plentifully, was, as an example and influence, an added source of evil to his development. As time progressed, he became more adept and cunning in the adventures and misdeeds that ultimately brought him to the Juvenile Court.

Also, thrown into the company of girls whom the human fiend, their master, taught early to disregard their chastity, he naturally developed precocious sex-knowledge, with the resultant perverted tendencies.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Would tactfully size up a prospective "friend," ingratiate himself into the latter's good graces, and then would spend time and thought in subjugating the weaker will to his, and compelling it to do his bidding.

A consummate hypocrite, he was able to feign interest in some play or sport which in no way appealed to him, while at the same time he was planning or scheming some mischief. Later, when involved in the difficulty he had designed and perfected, he was able to assume a wrinkled brow and a woebegone expression of injured innocence, while he sadly lamented: "Just because I was a bad un once, ain't no reason why I should be bad all the time." And always he could point triumphantly to the fact that while the wrongdoing was being committed, he was virtuously engaged in some legitimate pursuit.

Had a good imagination, and enjoyed telling of his thrilling adventures with the police, in which, of course, he was always the "hero."

Able at a moment's notice to devise plausible stories regarding his whereabouts, if found to be missing.

Not attracted by the boys' games or sports, or by the Boy Scout organization, which immensely interested the average adventurous spirit, but aroused his ridicule and dislike.

Very fond of money. Clever in devising ways and means of obtaining funds, which he spent solely for his own pleasure and amusement.

(d) Home Conditions:

While his home had always been fairly furnished and kept clean, it was located in a neighborhood where were many denizens of the underworld, with whom even in early childhood he spent more time than with his parents.

The latter, living together in unhappiness and poverty, either could not or would not realize how their hatred and bitterness were alienating the boy from his home, and sending him to the streets to seek the companionship they did not give him.

With none at home whose advice he respected, or whose commands he obeyed, his sister's normality having no direct bearing upon him, there was no home influence potent enough to keep him from the abyss of delinquency toward which he was drifting. Beyond a place to eat and sleep when it suited his convenience, home had no other meaning to him.

There had been a grievous lack of wholesomeness and sanity in his environment, and when he plunged greedily into the excitement and adventure held out alluringly by the Lobster, there was no counteracting attraction at home to assist and save him.

(e) Mental Interests:

Scheming mischief.

Shooting craps or playing cards.

THE TREATMENT

Late one evening, when the younger children had been sound asleep in their beds for at least two hours, and the older ones, yawning over the heavy tasks of home-work, were preparing to retire to their well-deserved rest, a timid, though insistent knock at the office door rather startled the members of the Finance Committee, engrossed in the ever-weighty problem of dollars and cents.

In answer to the summons to enter, the door was opened slowly and reluctantly but a narrow space, through which peered one eye and part of the features belonging to the trustiest of the monitors. "Sorry to bother you, sir," said a voice apologetically, "but a funny-looking guy out here won't clear out — wants to see you, he says."

"I gotta see yer right now, mister," announced another voice in determined accents; and as the monitor turned around in angry impatience, thereby forcing the door open wider, a small figure deliberately pushed its way directly in front of him.

"What's the matter with you?" said the older boy, frowning, his face mirroring his utter disgust with the small lad's persistence. "Can't you wait for permission?"

The youngster made no answer to him, but, instead, walked over to the assembled group without hesitation, and staring unflinchingly at the men who were regarding him with undisguised interest, coolly put a question. "I wanta speak to the Super'tender," he declared. "Who 's the Super'tender?"

"Won't any one else do?" mischievously asked one of the members of the Committee.

"Not 'n your tintype," was the amazing reply, with a vigorous shake of the head. "I wanta see the boss — the Super'tender," he insisted.

"Well, little man, what can I do for you?" asked the official he wanted, fearing further outbreaks upon ears not accustomed to them.

The boy's slanting eyes eagerly observed the speaker, but his face remained passive. "Them told me," he ejaculated, contemptuously motioning with his thumb over his shoulder to imaginary persons, "that they gonna bring me here to-morrow, so I sez to that geezer who tooked me over there," again that eloquent thumb movement, "that I ain't no slob, an' I kin go myself. An' that geezer sez he's gonna put chains on my feet if I run away, so I sez to him, 'Betcha sweet life, I gonna get there if I wanta go, sooner 's yer kin get chains.' — So here I come an' I wanta stay here."

"Whom are you alluding to, boy?" questioned one of the gentlemen, uneasily eyeing the audacious, small figure in its ill-fitting, bedraggled garments and torn boots.

"Huh?" questioned the boy, wrinkling his brows, his eyes narrowing to slits. "I kin't speak nuthin' only English," he explained.

"Then tell us in English whom you mean by 'geezer'?" politely requested the gentleman.

"Aw, is that what yer wanta know?" asked the youngster,

enlightened; "why did n't yer sez so? That means the gink that tooked me over there onct before, an' I don' like him," he expounded. "Yer 'stan' me now?"

"Over there,' means what place?" demanded another member of the Committee, a shrewd, careful business man.

The boy faced this new questioner, collected and suave. "That's the place yer call what yer send the bad boys to." Then he added hastily, "But I ain't a bad boy — them put me in there fer nuthin'."

"A likely story," snorted his first interrogator.

"It ain't no story," insisted the boy with vehemence. "It's 'onest to God, true. I ain't never done nuthin' wrong. Them chust could n't find the bad boy, so I get in Dutch luck and they pick on me. I ain't never swiped nuthin', an' I ain't never gonna swipe nuthin'," he ended virtuously, his face doleful and sad.

"Methinks the lady doth protest too much," quoted another member in undertones, immensely amused.

The sharp ears caught the sentence, without comprehending its import.

"I ain't no lady," he asserted indignantly, "an' I never wanter be a lady — I don' like ladies 'cause they poke 'round yer business, an' git yer inter lots of trouble. I am Joseph K——, an' that geezer — that gink I mean — don' havter bring me to-morrow, 'cause I kin walk by myself, an' I just wanter show 'im that I don' havter be fetched."

"You might have waited till to-morrow, instead of coming ahead of your time," said another member.

"Donchersee I wanter git here before that gink comes fer me to-morrow, I don' know how early?" impatiently asked the boy.

"Praiseworthy anxiety!" remarked the gentleman.

"Aw, shucks!" exclaimed the youngster, turning away from them. "Ain't no use speaking to yous, that's why I want the boss." He gave his attention to the Superintendent. "Gonna give me a bed, or do yer want me to sleep on chairs, or the floor?" he questioned.

While a telephone communication was being held with the probation officer who was to have brought Joseph K—— to the institution in the morning, the boy entertained the members of the Finance Committee with accounts more colorful and illuminating than any dry, inanimate figures could produce. Had it then depended upon the opinion expressed by the majority of the gentlemen present regarding the future home of Joseph K——, that youthful individual would have been packed off to the hospitality of "Over There" without further ado; but a week previous,¹ the

Children's Bureau had decided that, in view of the boy's youth, it might not be amiss to grant him a last chance in the Orphanage. Hence, he was formally installed that night as an inmate of the Home, under the charge of an experienced supervisor, assisted by a very capable and willing monitor.

Hardly had a day passed, when the latter presented himself at the office, a worried look about his eyes, and stated briefly that in his opinion, "Chinky is some lively young one, believe me."

"Why the name Chinky?"

The monitor shrugged his shoulders helplessly. "The kids gave him that name as soon as they saw him," he replied with apparent unwillingness to betray any secrets; "perhaps because his eyes look like a Chinaman's," he added quickly.

"Has he done anything wrong?"

The boy shook his head negatively. "Not yet," he remarked; "but it sure is funny how he made friends with all our bad eggs right away, and — he gave a nickel to Janey Banks, because she let him pull her curls."

Later followed an interview with Chinky.

"Well, Joe, making any friends here?" he was asked.

"Sure thing," he responded with enthusiasm.

"Who are they?"

"Some fine guys," he said, rattling off the names of a few of the most troublesome "problems."

"Did you know them before you came here?"

"Only one or two of 'em," he replied carelessly. "But I never was bad like 'em," he hastened to put in.

"However they are doing very well now, and it is expected that you will follow their example," he was told.

"But I ain't never been bad," he insisted, the innocence of his expression bearing out his lie.

"Suppose we try to forget what's past, and think only of the future. Do you think you can manage to keep out of trouble, and learn to do what is right?" he was asked.

His quick, affirmative nod was most emphatic. "Sure," he replied brightly, "yer kin just watch me."

He was watched, more intently and carefully than he realized.

It was soon noted that he masturbated, had abominable personal habits, and possessed a font of worldly knowledge that was appalling in a child. He swore, he lied, and was always prepared with a plausible excuse for his ill-humors and misdeeds. For some time there was no theft or alarming misdemeanor that could be put to his score; his petty delinquencies were no worse than were often

met with in dealing with a less daring and problematic character. It seemed that he was attracted by his new environment, and permitting himself to become interested in activities which appealed to him.

The special talks on sex-hygiene given him privately in the office were rather productive of good results for a while, and it was observed that he made some effort at cleanliness. At this period, he insisted that he wanted to have nothing to do with his family, and frequently hid himself when any of his relatives called to see him. He never offered any reasonable explanation for his conduct, which, however, caused his parents but little concern.

At school, he was found to be badly retarded; but extra coaching and individual attention given him in the special class, which the coöperative principal had established for him and others of his type, enabled his bright mind to develop rapidly. Within six months, his English had improved to an appreciable extent. Now and then, he had attacks of truancy, when he played "hookey" for a day or two, but such offenses being regarded as minor ones, they were condoned.

Suddenly, while he was supposedly walking in the path of righteousness, it was discovered that, in reality, he was both the instigator of and the leader in the petty thefts and other flagrant delinquencies that frequently cropped out from the crowd of "problems." Taken to task, he had a plausible alibi for every wrongdoing traced to his door, and swore to his absolute innocence with heartrending tears and protestations.

Shortly thereafter, the night watchman reported that, quite early that morning, immediately after he had made his rounds, he heard a loud and unusual whistle in the yard. After the shrill call had been repeated three times, it was followed by a small, dark figure running rapidly from the house and climbing over the fence, "just like lightnin'," as he expressed it. A hasty survey of the boys' dormitories discovered none of the inmates missing. Tactful inquiries elicited no pertinent information.

The watchman was carefully instructed to listen again for the whistle, and note carefully all possible details in reference to the flying figure. He reported at the end of that week that, though he had heard the whistle at least three times on as many different dawns, and had observed closely the ready response made by the small figure of a boy, he was alike unable to discover the author of the one, or detect the identity of the other. It was considered advisable to take into confidence the officer on the beat, who, after listening to the testimony submitted by the watchman,

agreed to give his assistance. For several weeks there were no new developments, and finally the officer, who too had heard the whistle and seen the figure several times, asserted that he had the suspicion that both he and the watchman were being watched.

After manœuvring a trap for the whistler for several weeks, the officer was finally successful. It was scarcely five-thirty one morning, when the telephone rang insistently. "Come right over to the station, and you'll see something," came the hasty summons.

In short order, the station was reached. There, grouped before the sergeant's desk, were two officers at each end of the line which was formed by four boys, three between the ages of twelve and fourteen years, who were strangers, and a fourth who was no stranger. The smallest and youngest was none other than Chinky. He had studied his lessons rather industriously the night before, and there had been nothing in his conduct or manner to indicate anything unusual when he had retired with the other boys of his age. In fact, for some time, he had appeared as tending toward normality.

With the motley company, at that early hour, were two Italians, who volubly tried to explain in broken English that their bunches of bananas had been repeatedly stolen from them, almost as soon as they had purchased them at the wharf, and that they had never been able to discover the thieves who had brought ruin to them and to their families.

Chinky stood there, his brow wrinkled in pained surprise that he should be involved in such an accusation; while the boys eyed him furtively, and plainly showed in their blanched and frightened faces their confusion in their predicament, he appeared unworried and unafraid.

"Who are these boys?" was the first question put to him.

He turned slowly to each one of his companions in turn, peered intently into his face, as if observing him for the first time, and then slowly but clearly stated, "Never seen them before."

It was amusing to note the varying expressions of shocked amazement passing over the faces of the officers and the Italians at the bald and daring lie. As for the three boys, their faces fell into passive lines, as the untruth gave them their cue.

"How did you come to be in their company?"

The calmness of his face remained undisturbed as he answered without hesitation, "I was up so early this morning, I thought I would take a walk to the wharf just for fun, and come home in time for breakfast; but I seen them stealing the bananas, and while

I was just looking on, the cops got hold of me. But I did n't do nothin' — you can ask them."

"That's right, mister, he ain't done nothin'," piped in the oldest of the trio; and the other two shook their heads in agreement.

"You young rascal!" burst out one of the officers hotly, "did n't I see you with my own eyes nosing around the fence, and did n't you whistle for him?"

The boy, taken unawares, hung his head and found no ready answer. Not so Chinky. He pertly lifted his head, and looking straight at the officer, asked innocently enough, "Per'aps it was the milkman — he comes early every day — ain't it so?"

The officer stared at the youngster and dropped weakly into a chair, smothering an oath.

"Now Joseph K——, you are not going to get away with any lies. *Who* are these boys?" The question was put sternly to him.

He sized up his questioner's face before speaking. Then, "Them belong to my gang," he made answer.

"Who is the leader of your gang?"

He looked puzzled for a moment, then asked, "You mean the boss?"

"Yes."

A startled glance passed among the four pairs of eyes.

"I dunno," he replied.

"Think again!" he was commanded sternly. "Who is the boss of your gang?"

His mouth closed in a firm line, while the others shuffled their feet uneasily.

"Answer the question," he was admonished in a severe tone.

His lips parted, and while he hesitated, the oldest boy blurted out, "Aw, we call 'im the Lobster."

Chinky's slanting eyes flamed at him, and the boy turned pale and winced.

"Has he put you up to this?"

"No, sir," was Chinky's immediate reply.

"Where is he?"

"I dunno, honest." He spoke with apparent sincerity. "The fellers told me he had to run away."

"Where did he run to?" eagerly asked one of the officers.

"Honest, I don't know," he made answer.

(The assumption made at the time, that the Lobster was a boy, permitted him to protect his former master with his clever lies.)

"Since the Lobster is away, who planned the stealing of the bananas?"

After a long silence, he said reluctantly, "Guess I did."

"Aw, yer did not," broke in the oldest boy again, "the Lobster sent me to yer —"

"Shut up that lie!" interrupted Chinky. "He wants to get me out of trouble," he added gently, "but it ain't true. The Lobster has run away."

The new day having dawned, it was almost entirely spent in investigating the records of the three boys, and planning arrangements to safeguard their future conduct, while Chinky, at the Home again, and seated in a corner of the office, was kept in suspense regarding his fate. To his monitor, who kept him company at odd intervals, he confessed in an unguarded moment, "Guess I could get out of trouble all right, but that bloke Snookey blabs out all he knows."

Subsequently, threatened with expulsion from the Orphanage and his return to the Reformatory, Chinky almost lost his composure and bravado, in his earnest appeals to have "one more little bit of a chance." He had good and sufficient reasons to prefer the Orphanage to the Reformatory, and his pleas and promises were quite enough to enlist the sympathy and support of such powerful friends as his supervisor and monitor.

In the year that followed, he had frequent falls from grace; but his progress at school, the keen intelligence he displayed in mastering the details of the work at the various manual-training classes, and above all, the cleverness and ready wit of a keen and capable mind, were all powerful factors in encouraging hope and patience, in the struggle with the boy. It seemed quite reasonable to presume that a brain so alert would in time be influenced by the wholesome forces brought to bear upon its possessor.

His perverted sex-tendencies became more marked as he grew older. He showed an exceeding fondness for the company of girls; and as the older girls would have none of him, he was often to be found among the smaller girls, bribing them with odd gifts of pennies, marbles, or sweetmeats, to be permitted to stroke their hair or their faces or hands. Later, unsatisfied with this pastime, in which he was always interrupted and sent away with a reprimand or to the office, he abandoned the pursuit of the girls in the Home altogether, and made friends with girls outside, whom he would visit at every opportunity that he could get to run off without observation.

When little Amy Brown, fair, plump, and easily influenced, was admitted to the institution, he transferred his fickle affections all

to her, and speedily it was reported that he was seen too frequently in Amy's vicinity.

Amy, when questioned regarding him, admitted with many tears and sobs, "He's a nice boy and I like him. He gives me lots of candy to let him kiss me."

After listening to the sharp commands issued to him concerning his future conduct with Amy and the other girls, the boy, for the first time in his career perhaps, lost control of himself and spoke the truth. "I wish I was grown up," he said, "then I could do with the girls what I want."

Spoken to quite frankly then, and made cognizant of certain dangers in sex-indulgence, he appeared frightened, and remarked on the spur of the moment, "Chee, I guess the girls ain't worth all that trouble."

About this time, completing almost his third year at the Home, and on the eve of his graduation from the Grammar School, the identity of the Lobster was discovered, and also the fact that through Snookey, the fiendish teacher of evil had kept in frequent touch with his former pupil, Chinky. Snookey¹ had made several appearances at the Juvenile Court and was finally committed to the Reformatory. Released on probation, he came again under the influence of his master, who introduced him to the leader of a gang, who, more mature in years and knowledge than Chinky, was an inmate of the underworld, having neither extreme youth, nor constant surveillance with which to contend.

A fortnight after Chinky had been given due warning that the very next escapade would land him in the Reformatory, a threat which usually served as a deterrent to the average "problem," he was caught burglarizing a store in the neighborhood, with the assistance of two accomplices whom he had induced to serve as his tools.

Finding that all his eloquence this time was but wasted energy, in desperation, he decided to employ what he undoubtedly must have considered a master move that should bring the anticipated result.

"If you send me away from here, I'm not going to the Reformatory. I'll go home and get my gang," he threatened.

"That's interesting," he was informed cheerfully. "How will you manage to accomplish that?"

¹ It may be of interest to note here that Snookey, a few months ago, was indicted for murder in the first degree, and has since been found guilty by a jury. In consideration of his extreme youth, his sentence has been commuted from death to life-imprisonment.

"Oh, it's easy," he retorted. "You know the big lawyer, Mr. Charles Smith?"

"Yes."

"Then don't you know that he is the crooks' lawyer, and when you come to him and tell him your troubles, you just bet, he fixes it all right for you."

"Who gave you all this information?"

"Snookey," he replied. "He told me that the Lobster told him to go to Mr. Smith any time he got in trouble."

"Yet the Lobster could not be kept out of jail by the lawyer; did you think of that?"

"Oh, that's because the Lobster and the lawyer had a fight about someone, and the lawyer wants to get even; but I guess the Lobster will make up and get out — you just watch and see," he argued.

"But how are you going to manage to get Mr. Smith to plead for you?"

"That's easy," he declared, with a care-free toss of his head. "My mother — she knows that crook lawyer all right, because she went lots of times to him when my brother got in trouble. All you got to have is money."

"But your mother is a poor woman and has no money, even if what you say is true."

"O chee!" he exclaimed in surprise, "don't you know my mom got lots of money for the lawyer for my brother? You just watch her get money for me too."

"Are you so sure that money is going to save you from being punished for your sins?"

"Oh, sure," was his instant reply; "the Lobster told me lots and lots of times that you can get anything in the world you want for money."

"Do you think money will be able so to change your bad record in court, that the Judge will see only good deeds to your credit?" he was asked.

"Not that way," he explained slowly; "you see all my mother got to do is to get the lawyer to swear that I'm all right; then she has to swear that she wants me home, and then I swear that I'm going to be a good boy, and the Judge tells me, 'All right, go home and behave yourself.'"

Despite his last card, which he played with more or less skill, it was decided at the next Children's Bureau meeting, that he needed the disciplinary measures of the Reformatory, and he was transferred to the institution of which he had previously been an inmate.

THE RESULT

From Records in the Benevolent Society:

"On May 11, 1920, pending the hearing of his trial for larceny, Joseph K—— was transferred from the Orphanage to a disciplinary institution. His parents soon after applied for his release. They said they would send him to school, but that he must work as newsboy or messenger boy after school hours.

"February 2, 1921, Joseph K—— was discharged from the Institution. He will live at home. Miss R—— will keep in touch with him.

"December 9, 1921, Joseph K—— and several other boys were brought into court for stealing. Joseph was committed to the Reformatory."

CASE C

BERNARD J——, "THE PHOTOGRAPHER"

Entered March 25, 1916. Age 10½ years

THE PROBLEM

1. DELINQUENCY

- (a) Stealing. Clever purse-snatcher and pickpocket.
- (b) Leader of a gang of small boys, to whom he taught pilfering.
- (c) Incurable liar.
- (d) Employed vile and obscene language.

2. THE SCHOOL

- (a) Extreme retardation.
- (b) Obstinate and repeated truancy.
- (c) Defiant and impertinent to teachers, to whom he would apply vile epithets, to appear "smart."

3. HOME

- (a) Stole from parents; mocked and insulted them.
- (b) Abusive to younger children, whom he teased and tormented.
- (c) Made his home the headquarters for his gang.
- (d) Disobedient and unmanageable.

4. SOCIETY

- (a) Annoyed and stole from the neighbors, whose authority he defied.
- (b) At the age of eight, he was so troublesome that his mother complained to the Children's Bureau and besought its aid in controlling him. The Bureau induced the Big Brother League to become interested in the case, and assign a Big Brother to assist and befriend the boy.

After months of earnest endeavor with his charge, the Big Brother rendered the following report:

First, that his home had been broken into several times and robbed, and that, in each instance, the thief had been discovered to be none other than the boy, assisted by some members of his gang.

Second, that his pockets had frequently been picked clean, and purses belonging to his family and friends had been purloined, since his acquaintance with the youngster.

Third, that the boy had constantly told him of the delight to be derived in "swipin' things," and had begged to be permitted to be his teacher in that direction.

Fourth, that the youthful reprobate, finding that the Big Brother could not be influenced, turned his attention to the latter's younger brothers, who were of tender age, and coaxed them to join his gang, telling them thrilling tales of his adventures.

In conclusion, the Big Brother asked to be relieved of his responsibility, and advised no other one to assume it.

The Big Brother League then advised that the boy be committed to an institution for stricter supervision.

(c) Juvenile Court Record:

6-19-14. Larceny of \$7. Placed on probation to Miss R—— for three months.

9-23-15. Larceny of 96 cents. Released on payment of costs.

9-28-15. Charged with being an incorrigible minor and beyond the control of his parents. Committed to the Children's Bureau.

10-4-15. Larceny of 2½ pounds of candy valued at one dollar. Is somewhat deficient mentally. Has been in this country only a short time. Committed to the Reformatory.

THE ANALYSIS

1. PHYSICAL

(a) Slouching, heavy, overgrown body, having unusually large and awkward hands and feet.

(b) Long, narrow head, with distended, large red ears, giving an asinine aspect.

(c) Small, dull eyes set deep below the short, receding forehead, above which a crop of heavy, wiry dark hair stood up, porcupine-like. A large nose and thick sensual lips completed a most unprepossessing face, which, in addition, was usually apathetic and expressionless.

Swollen and diseased tonsils and adenoids. Enuresis.

2. MENTAL

(a) Examination — From Report of Psychiatric Clinic:

"Bernard J——. Age 10 years. 9-28-15.

"Patient has been in America only three years. He was sent for examination by the Children's Bureau. He has a Juvenile Court Record for stealing. History

shows that the boy has stolen constantly ever since he has been in this country. He says he takes the things because he wants them. He seems to have no sense of shame and does not hesitate to lie out of any situation. Father and mother living; apparently feeble-minded.

"Diagnosis: Constitutionally inferior in ethical sphere. Binet-Simon 7 years plus.

"Patient has never left the Third Grade.

"Would recommend institutional care."

(b) **Personality Traits:**

Faltering in speech, slow in action, and seemingly too timid to assert himself.

Slovenly and careless about his person and clothes.

Fond of the movies and sweetmeats. His conception of Heaven was a wonderful place where one could get chocolate ice-cream sodas and strawberry sundaes without number and without stint.

Very hearty eater.

Slept poorly, tossing upon his pillow, his mouth open and emitting resounding snores.

Would stare stupidly when asked a question he preferred not to answer, and shrug his shoulders helplessly, as if unable to comprehend and make reply.

Frequently would sit a long time gazing lifelessly at a book or newspaper, his fingers aimlessly forming letters of the deaf-and-dumb alphabet, for no obvious reason.

Preferred the use of his sleeves for the purposes allotted to a pocket-handkerchief.

Extremely selfish, obstinate, and indifferent to rules and regulations.

3. **SOCIAL**

(a) **Heredity:**

Father: still a young man in the early thirties, was illiterate, stupid, and quite the simpleton in conversation and manners. He had lived in America three years, and was still totally unacquainted with the English language. Born and bred in Russia, of very humble and poor parents, his childhood had been completely devoid of education and training. His youth and early manhood had been spent in a hard and bitter struggle for subsistence, which the added responsibilities of wife and child considerably increased.

An American cousin, comfortably established in business, advised and then assisted him to seek better opportunities in the new country. A tinsmith by trade, he readily found employment, and soon was earning fairly good wages, which permitted him to support his family better than at any other time in his life. He was appreciative of this fact, and remarked with childlike naïveté, "Though I don't find gold in the streets as I expected, we have enough to eat; anyway, it's a golden land."

He was tall, gawky in appearance, his face almost expressionless. He lacked ambition and initiative, but under direction worked steadily and faithfully. There was no question of either his honesty or sobriety. His domestic life was known to be peaceful and happy.

The only known relative he had in America was the cousin, who was very successful in business.

Mother: though only twenty-eight years old, had the appearance of a woman twice her age, her careless, unkempt attire adding years to her worn, thin face, which had lost any attraction it may have possessed in early youth.

She was a tubercular suspect, but insisted that she had been coughing all her life, and if she had n't developed consumption in the years when she had been starving, it was hardly likely that she would develop that disease in the years of plenty.

Like her husband, she was physically ungainly, and mentally dull. She too was grossly illiterate, and had no desire to adapt herself to the customs of the new country, or to make any effort at personal improvement. She just steadily plodded along, conscientiously trying to do the best her limited mental capacity permitted.

Her only relatives, two sisters, had come to America several years previous to her arrival, were married, and raising normal families.

Siblings: *Younger brother,* not quite seven years of age, was an infantile reproduction of his older brother. His mother complained that at that tender age he defied and insulted her, and scoffed at any authority his father ventured to assert. Not only did he imitate his brother's actions at home, but he also duplicated the other's wayward and unruly conduct in school. Already his kindergarten and First-Grade teachers had brought complaints against him of truancy and refractoriness.

When not in a moving-picture house, his favorite resort, he would be wandering through the streets of his neighborhood, a dirty and neglected child. His mentality was rated as very poor.

Younger sister, four years of age, was a puny, sickly-looking child, who had not begun to talk till she was two and a half years of age, and seemed unusually dull and dispirited. She was too young for definite determination of her mental faculties.

Youngest brothers (twins), not quite one year old, appeared to be normal babies.

(b) Developmental:

"He was the most beautiful baby I ever had," sighed his mother retrospectively. Then she added that his infancy and early childhood had been spent uneventfully in the small Russian village where he had been born, and that he had never shown the troublesome characteristics he had developed in America.

Whether she spoke the truth or not, certain it was that her neighbors could not recall any time when the boy was anything but a source of annoyance and apprehension to them. From the testimony submitted, it appeared that he took readily to the streets, almost as soon as he set foot upon American soil, and speedily fell in with the gangs, which had more influence with him than the school to which his parents sent him shortly after their arrival.

He learned coarse words and oaths before he was acquainted with the alphabet; and his stolid, ignorant parents believed, for some time, that he was making progress in the English language when he poured forth a volley of obscenities. His trauancies from school became more frequent as his associations with the gangs became more intimate; as his mother at first implicitly believed his stories of regular school attendance, his truancy was unchecked for some time.

When the School-Attendance Officer finally got in touch with the home, the half-witted and dazed parents were entirely unable to cope with the singular individuality that was being developed by the gangs.

In their blind, groping fashion, they sought at first to bribe the boy to behave himself; then to frighten him into doing so, but with such poor success, that they were ultimately obliged to appeal to the child-welfare agencies.

(c) Habits and Interests:

Would not trouble himself to pick up his clothes from the floor where he had thrown them in undressing, but would calmly appropriate somebody else's garments when any of his own were mislaid or missing, regardless of size and condition.

If not watched, quite willing to go to bed without undressing at all. Would lie in bed for hours at a time, calmly munching some sweetmeat he was able somehow to secrete about his person or in his bed; and while rolling his eyes in apparent satisfaction with himself and all the world, would pick at his nose, till drowsiness overtook him.

Very vindictive, he had the following two favorite ways of "getting even" with such of the children as roused his ire: first, he would scheme to attach some guilt or misdemeanor to the one in his disfavor; or, second, he would sneak into the dining-room and apply more than a liberal supply of spicy condiments to his foe's food.

Always able to establish an alibi when involved in some wrongdoing, and inculcate some meeker and weaker personality, intimidated beforehand.

Interested in locks and keys, and enjoyed filing down and hammering at a key till it fitted a stubborn lock.

Very cruel to animals, which, from repeated kicks when they crossed his path, knew enough to fly at his approach.

No unusual sex-tendencies. Regarded girls with disdain and contempt.

(d) Home Conditions:

In their unintelligent, blundering way, the parents endeavored to establish a good home for their children, to whom undoubtedly they were genuinely devoted. Unfortunately for them, they were unable to gain the boy's respect and confidence; not till it was brought home to them forcibly, did either of them realize that the neighborhood was very poor morally as well as financially, and offered disastrous attractions to their son.

While the home was well kept by the mother, neither she nor her husband understood how to conserve the boy's interests in the home, or how to exert any influence to keep him safe within its walls. In their dull, prosaic lives, there had never come the question how best to plan the home for the benefit of the child; and when the boy abandoned the hearth they struggled to maintain, for his

avored haunts, they were helpless. The allurements the boy found in his street associations superseded in his mind the care and comfort he was given in his home, which ultimately meant nothing to him.

(e) Mental Interests:

Gambling with cards or dice.

THE TREATMENT

When Bernard J—— made his first appearance in the Home, pity was the prevailing sentiment he aroused. Holding each of his hands, hanging dummy-like in lifelessness, was a tall, awkward parent, unclean and uncombed, in shabby, baggy garments, loosely covering each gaunt frame, and exhaling an unmistakable odor of grease and perspiration. Between them dragged the unwilling boy, in nondescript, soiled, and ragged apparel, and what looked like yards of dirty gray material swathing the upper part of his diaphragm and also muffling his chin. What remained visible of his face was so coated with dust and dirt, that his color could not be distinguished.

Both parents, panting from their exertions, breathed heavily as they lumbered into the office, the boy sullen and silent, yet watchful. Now and then, his small eyes peered quickly about him, from under the frayed, fringed edges of what originally may have been a cap, and then returned to their downcast frown.

"I stopped my work for to-day and ran around the streets, and she [with a movement of his head towards his wife] ran around the streets since early this morning, and we only just caught him," explained the father.

"We brought him right away, the very minute we caught him," added the mother hastily, anxious to allay any suspicion that might be entertained as to the reason he had not been brought the day previous, as had been arranged.

The son scowled at each in turn and opened his mouth. "Aw, yous kin go to hell," he suggested.

The father, evidently fearing a possible unfavorable impression, immediately clapped a heavy hand upon his offspring's mouth, and at the same time stepped upon the lad's foot to advise caution.

The boy however was neither daunted nor suppressed. "Aw, take yer dirty hand 'way fro' me," he growled, pushing the obstructing hand from him.

The parents exchanged uneasy looks. The mother valiantly moistened her dry lips and attempted to interpose before the breach widened further between father and son.

"He is n't all right yet," she put in quickly, her head moving negatively to accent her words. "We had him operated for you just like you wanted, but he did n't want to stay in the hospital, and ran away with his throat still bleeding."

"I gonna do the same from this 'ere joint," gruffly muttered the boy.

"Don't — please don't, little son! You'll have a good home here," implored the mother. "You'll get from me anything you want if you'll only be a good boy."

While her son was replying to her with ugly grimaces, curiosity prompted the question: "What have you wrapped upon him?"

"Only three towels," she said simply. Then added, "You see his throat is so raw yet, I was awfully afraid he'd catch cold right after the operation."

At the time the boy was examined by the Home physician prior to his admission to the institution, he was found suffering from diseased and badly swollen tonsils, and running a temperature of 103°. Hospital treatment had been advised, to be followed by a tonsillotomy operation as soon as possible.

After the parents had been dismissed, the boy was taken firmly in hand and given very plainly to understand what was expected of him for the future. He was informed that, as no one used profanities in the Home, bad language would not be tolerated from him or anyone else. "Just how you are going to be treated here depends entirely upon yourself," he was informed. "You don't have to run away if you don't happen to like things. Nobody is kept here by force. Any time you want to leave, step in here, get your money [his parents had left for him two dollars for spending money], and say 'good-bye' like a gentleman."

His jaws fell back in astonishment. "I kin go 'way any time I want?" he questioned incredulously.

"You are free to leave any time you want," he was assured gravely.

Surprise and disappointment mingled in his face. Clearly the fun and spite to be derived from "runnin' 'way" had suffered a severe shock. If the door were freely opened to him, what need would there be for him to force it open?

He sat there in his evident perplexity, staring stupidly, and silent.

After he had received a good scrubbing in the bath-tub, and his grimy clothing and towels were replaced by fresh, clean garments which fitted him, he appeared somewhat more human and decidedly less repulsive, though his monitor, with the candor of boyhood, commented succinctly, "Looks like a jackass."

The short time spent in making Bernard J——'s acquaintance destroyed any reasonable doubt that may have existed concerning the aspersions cast upon his character, and the genuineness of his rather formidable record. It was deemed necessary to put him under the most experienced and able supervision, and also to assign to him the trustiest and most efficient of the Big Brothers.

Robert S—— was an adolescent youth, who, several years previous, had entered the Home as a "problem," with no mean Juvenile Court Record. The possessor of an excellent mind and heart, he had responded readily to the friendship that opened to him a new vista of life; and with the awakening of honor and principle in his soul, he developed a sense of loyalty and gratitude that repaid a thousandfold the care and attention given him. It was he who was usually asked to assist with a particularly difficult case, because, as he himself aptly expressed his own qualifications, "I know just when they're itching to get into trouble, and I know what's on their minds; and don't I know all the joints they think they got a crush on? They can't get away from me." To him was assigned Bernard J—— as little brother.

Several days later, he entered the office, a worried wrinkle between his eyes and evidently quite perturbed.

"Say, that youngster's some photographer, believe me," was his announcement.

"Photographer!" in amazement and curiosity came the exclamation.

"Sure, he's some photographer," emphatically reiterated the Big Brother, with his characteristic gravity. "Takes everything in sight."

He permitted the significance of his definition to be completely absorbed, and then stated, "He can't make friends with the real kids; just hangs around the bad ones." He shook his head in displeasure, adding, "And does n't he just bully them! I'll bet my boots he's the worst of that whole shooting-match."

"Why do you think so?"

"He makes any one in that bunch do what he wants," was the reply.

"The photographer" then came in for very close observation. It was noted that he was *bon camarade* with the most difficult of the "problems," and seemed to find no interest in the routine of work and play arranged for the boys of his age. He was already involved in petty pilfering, and was accused of unruly conduct by his supervisor.

A long conversation was held with the boy, during which he

avowed his innocence of all charges against him. He claimed that he wanted to stay in the Home, because he "liked the grub, was took to the movies, went swimmin', an' had a good time," but that he could n't understand "why all the time there's somebody pickin' on me." Finally he confessed to "takin' candy fer nothin' from the candy shop, and swipin' couple o' pennies — that's all." He promised, however, to make every effort to abandon even such trifling misdemeanors.

He was started to school and admitted to the First Grade. Efforts were also concentrated upon arousing a possible dormant intellect with every advantage offered by the various classes, activities, and plays.

Shortly the teacher of the Art Class, in which he had been enrolled as a member, claimed that he was unable to distinguish colors and could not draw a line. In the manual-training classes he found nothing to interest him, and the teachers, without exception, begged to be relieved of a nuisance. During the children's plays and entertainments, and even through the boys' games, he would stand idly by, his mouth open in an idiotic grin, his hands hanging listlessly at his side, displaying absolute unconcern. The Scout organization offered no appeal to him.

At first, his teacher in the primary school reported that he was making slow progress. The young woman felt inclined to pity the lad, who, she felt, was trying to overcome the misfortune of a feeble intellect, and gave him her special attention after school-hours. He appeared devoted to her, and a hope was being encouraged that through this devotion the boy might ultimately be benefited.

One afternoon the teacher was called to the telephone while giving a special lesson to him and a smaller and younger boy, and upon her return found the watch she had left upon her desk missing. Both boys declared their innocence, but "the photographer" gave incontrovertible proof of his by producing the watch from one of the small Louis's pockets. As eight-year old Louis had achieved quite a juvenile court reputation prior to his admission to the institution, his profuse tears and protestations carried no weight and he was considered guilty. Not till almost two years had passed, was it discovered that he had been victimized by the other's cunning. The little fellow had been standing beside "the photographer" when the teacher missed her watch, and the discovery of the pilferer became imminent. Then, very cleverly and adroitly handled, the watch changed pockets, unseen and unheard.

Meanwhile, the teacher, regretting that she had permitted a

suspicion of the probity of the pupil in whom she was interested to enter her mind, redoubled her efforts to help his slow mind comprehend the lessons she taught him. Under her generous guidance, he did appear to make some favorable progress in his school-work, becoming so inspired that he once declared, "I'll be a teacher when I get growed."

At the Home, his supervisor felt that he was improving, though his Big Brother shook his head sadly, and expressed the opinion: "I guess he's deeper than we think." Petty thefts, when they were investigated and reinvestigated, were never laid at the door of "the photographer." While in some detached way, he appeared not wholly the innocent bystander, who assisted in bringing a sinner to justice, still there was no definite indication of his connection with the misdeed.

There were several months at a time when nothing worse than stupidity could be counted against him. His impertinence and swearing had lessened, and his manners had improved. He had even been influenced to give some little thought to his personal cleanliness. His "wanderings" had always been minor misdeemeanors with him, as he always returned himself after a few hours' absence, expressing humble contrition, and imploring pardon. Always he would vouchsafe the information that he had but been visiting his parents or aunts, because he had become "lonesome" for them. Upon investigation, it was found that presumptively he spoke the truth, but neglected to tell of the "souvenirs" in money and trinkets he had taken away with him after his unexpected calls.

When he next returned from such a "visit," he was asked to empty all his pockets. He complied readily enough with all but one inner pocket, which he claimed "had nothin' in any way." That "subtle" plea being disregarded, he very unwillingly turned that pocket inside out, and brought to view a very valuable lady's ring. After admitting that the ring belonged to his aunt, his woes were considerably increased by the bitter humiliation that was his, when he was compelled to call his aunt over the telephone, and request her to call for her property and due apologies.

The incident weighed upon his mind to such an extent that he "did n't sleep all night," and was missing the next day at school and then again at luncheon at the Home. Late that afternoon, he was marched into the office by his ever-alert Big Brother, who employed one hand to support a pile of high-school books, and the other to exert a strong pressure on his charge.

"Can you imagine what he's been trying to do now?" queried the captor in indignation; and without waiting for any conjecture, added hotly, "Been holding up Christmas trees."

He pointed to "the photographer's" pockets oddly bulging and glittering. Soon there poured forth upon the office-desk such a collection of tinsel, angels in gleaming silver and gold, popcorn balls, numerous ornaments and toys, that even the sedate walnut looked festive.

The boy explained his possessions with unique simplicity. His heart was broken since his disgrace of last night; so much so, that he could n't find his way to school in the morning, and walked the streets to forget his troubles, till he was suddenly attracted by the display of Christmas toys. He had n't intended "touching" anything, he declared, but the counters were so overloaded, "I just had to put a few things in my pockets."

His stolid face expressed his utter misery as he was compelled to collect his illegitimate possessions and put them securely in a package. Then he returned to the store and restored to a bewildered proprietor that which belonged to him. Unfortunately, in this instance, the moral force of the intended lesson was blunted, as the surprised owner of the stolen goods regarded losses by theft as normal liabilities in his business, and was profuse in his admiration and gratitude for the virtuous repentance that had returned his property. Naturally, "the photographer" was then disposed to regard himself as more abused than others of his kind, who were permitted to profit from their spoils.

Nor was this all he had to bear. During a holiday week, when the children received some special treat daily, he was not permitted to participate in the jollifications, that the reprehensibility of his conduct might be further impressed upon him. As he could conceive of no greater punishment than the deprivation of the treats he loved most dearly, he made the most extravagant promises to reform. Working then upon the desire that appeared to be uppermost in his mind, the cherished treats were promised him for subsequent holidays, if good conduct warranted them in the future.

Some months then passed, and he seemed to be expending more time and energy in qualifying himself for the pleasures he desired, than for any other cause. There were occasional gleams of brightness, which encouraged a fleeting hope that it was not a feeble but a slumbering intellect upon which patience and work were being generously expended. On the other hand, there were often

periods when discouragement advised, as the best possible solution, his speedy transfer to the Institution for the Feeble-Minded.

As time progressed and he was nearing his second year at the Home, it was noted that physically his new environment had undeniably benefited him. He had become less slovenly in his habits, gave some heed to his clothes, and the teasing of the boys in his dormitory had done more than any series of talks given him, in teaching him to curb gluttony, selfishness, and ungainly characteristics. In school, he barely made one grade a year, even with additional coaching, and the principal and teachers finally expressed the opinion that the boy was definitely feeble-minded.

Every class activity, sport, and pastime in the Home had been employed as an expedient with which to reach his dormant mind, only to meet with ultimate failure. When pets had been enlisted as a possible means toward a desired result, the poor creatures would have died of starvation had they been left completely to his tender mercies. The garden allotted to him ran to weeds and made the poorest showing among all the gardens, yet he was neither ashamed nor interested.

Suddenly a series of petty thefts broke out. Gradually they increased till they were no longer petty, and then they began to give serious concern. Worse still, the perpetrator or instigator of them could not be discovered, and when, by chance, a youngster was found involved, it was usually some weak, timid little fellow, who was palpably being employed as a stall. In many instances, the "work" had been executed so cleverly, quickly, and shrewdly, that it was the consensus of opinion among the people in the house who were acquainted with the details of the thefts, that the master mind of a fully grown thief was at work.

A period of watchful waiting began. The thief, whosoever he might be, child or adult, was becoming bolder and pilfering bills of larger denomination with each succeeding attempt, or picking an even stronger lock. Precautions and watchers were doubled. Many long, silent hours were spent in a darkened room which contained a chest of drawers that had been attracting the nimble-fingered one, but with no result.

Sums of money continued to disappear at short intervals, and also articles of value, belonging to the employees in the house, began to be missed; it became evident that the master thief was watching the watchers, and doing his work when one of them lagged. It was no longer doubted that there was a cunning and dexterity being employed that was genius of a kind, though, alas! a perverted genius.

Precautions were now taken to offer no possible opportunity for theft, by regulations enforcing constant wariness and watchfulness. It seemed reasonable to anticipate that the thief, finding nearly all his avenues carefully watched, would become desperate and do something on a larger scale still, something large and flagrant enough to betray himself — and he did!

A new boy had meanwhile been admitted to the Home. He was an undersized lad of twelve, in describing whom, before the Children's Bureau, a prominent psychiatrist had characterized as, "a child of twelve with the physical development of eight, the mental development of six, and the social development of eighteen." He had come direct from a boy's disciplinary institution.

"Hel-lo, Cap'n!" was his eager exclamation as his eyes fell upon "the photographer."

The latter's dull response to the greeting was inane enough to dissolve suspicion regarding any intimacy between the two, yet the salutation accorded him aroused curiosity. The feeble-minded "photographer" called "captain"! Why?

It seemed that he avoided the new boy. Yet sudden interchanges of smiles and glances pointed to an established sympathy, if not understanding, with each other, which was confirmed when the little one's monitor announced, "Oh, he ain't much good; he's a pal of that Bernard J——."

It was with great care and tactful persuasion that the new "problem" was influenced to become confidential.

"Why do you call Bernard J—— captain?" he was asked.

"Aw, 'cause he's awful smart, an' makes us do what he wants," was the pertinent reply.

Further questioning elicited the information that it had been the seasoned delinquents of the Reformatory who had applied the title to "the photographer," in admiration of his exploits. Suddenly the little fellow recollected that he was probably betraying secrets, and burst into passionate sobs which plainly told in what terror he stood of the stronger mind. Not without difficulty were his fears allayed, after which a secret pact was formed binding each party to the conference to make no disclosures concerning it, and pledging eternal friendship and loyalty.

A few days later, one of the older boys won a gold medal at an athletic tournament. The following day, he missed the treasured token of his prowess. Several of the "problems" were under suspicion, among them being "the photographer" and the new boy. During the general cross-examination, it was observed that

between the two there manifestly existed some understanding, as evidenced by sundry moves and twists of the larger boy's eyes and lips to the smaller one. Attention was then concentrated upon the two, and the other boys dismissed.

"The photographer" made vehement denial of the theft. He claimed that the winner of the medal and he had never been friends, slept in different dormitories, and that everybody knew that the medal had been pinned to its proud possessor's bosom when he went to bed — so how could he have taken it?

The smaller boy hung upon his words and seemed very uneasy.

"Did *you* take the medal?" was asked him suddenly.

"He did n't, I can swear he did n't," hastily put in "the photographer," before the other's faint "N-o-o!" was heard.

The former was excused from further attendance, and his companion remained alone without support.

"Is that the way to treat a pal who treats you right?" he was asked.

"I ain't done nothin'," he sobbed.

"Did you tell the truth about the medal?"

"I — I — I can't," he whispered, looking frightened.

"Why can't you tell all about it to your friend and pal?"

"I — I — I 'm awful 'fraid to — snitch on him," he cried, the tears pouring down his tiny face.

It was then that the pact made at the conference of two was quite serviceable. Placed between the terror of offending a "pal" to whom he had promised loyalty, and whose favor he no doubt deemed it advisable to retain, and the danger of "snitching" on a friend to whom he was bound by the law of fear, the little fellow indeed found himself between Scylla and Charybdis.

Encouraged, and then promised that he should be protected from the other's vengeance, he evidently weighed the claims of the two contending forces in his tumultuous mind, and decided in favor of what seemed the higher and more powerful authority. Plucking up his courage, he made a complete confession, in which he submitted surprising information.

First, he told how he had done "jobs" for "the cap'n," in the Reformatory, which the latter had threatened to divulge, unless assured of his tool's absolute faithfulness and coöperation. Then, he had been further intimidated by the reports the other had submitted to him of his methods in "getting even" with those who refused to obey his commands. A list of names of the disobedient ones, and of the misdeeds in which they had been involved, was

cited, among them that of the small Louis who had been unjustly accused of taking the teacher's watch.

Observing that the lad was hesitating and looked as if he had further disclosures to make, he was stimulated, by repeated promises of protection, to continue with his confidences. Finally, in quavering tones, he told with what he had become acquainted by his "captain" almost upon his arrival at the institution. "The cap'n was gonna go trav'lin' an' take me with 'im, an' had lots of money and things hid away, till he gits ready."

"Do you know where the hiding-place is?"

The poor little tool nodded his infantile head.

He then obediently led the way as requested. At the Assembly Hall he paused, and whispered, "In there!"

The large room seemed barren of any possible treasure; but the youngster showed its unsuspected resources, when he crawled like a worm under the platform, and then emerging, beckoned excitedly. He was pushing before him a very dirty bundle, which, when opened, revealed most of the mysterious losses of several months, including the brand-new, shining medal.

The master thief was none other than "the photographer."

The following day he was taken to the Psychiatric Clinic to determine definitely his "feeble-mindedness," that he might be transferred to the institution best suited to his type. It was recommended that he be sent to R——, an institution for the feeble-minded. While the necessary applications were being made, the boy determined to give further proof of the possibilities of a "feeble-mind."

Suddenly he and the new boy were reported missing. The monitors made a thorough search without success; but the next morning, on the way to school, two of them spied the missing boys in a restaurant. Within a few minutes, the four were homeward bound.

The monitors entered the office triumphant and grinning. "Jiminy," exclaimed one, "he's got money like Rockefeller. Wanted to give us both a bushel of coin to let him go — us, Scouts!"

"The photographer" seemed abashed neither at the rather dizzy financial standing allotted to him, nor at the moral degeneracy implied in trying to tamper with the honor of Scouts. His face was blank and his eyes dull. His tiny accomplice looked tired and frightened, more like a hunted animal than anything else. But he kept his small mouth closed in the presence of the other, declaring stoutly that he would "pull no bull."

Later, when his exhausted body had been bathed and refreshed, and the influences of his "captain" had been minimized by another and stronger power, he gave an account of his adventures.

The "captain" had told him to get ready at once to go with him, as he did not intend to go to R——, and he wanted company in his travels. Of course the spiritless youngster immediately obeyed, and the two boys made their way to a synagogue, some distance away from the Home, into which they gained admission by climbing through a window, which they pried open with an ordinary button-hook.

Here they passed the night, and hid under a bench when they heard the sexton coming in the morning. When the congregation had assembled, the boys suddenly appeared and stated that they had come for early morning prayers. They were made welcome and remained, eagerly watching the contributions made for charity in a box passed around by the sexton. The box was then left upon the table till the prayers should be over.

Whether "the photographer" knew the habits of the congregation or not, it was certain that he now saw his chance. While the men were at prayers, the smaller boy walked up to the table, stumbled, and dropped his coat on the box. The larger one immediately behind him picked up the coat which hid the box underneath it; and when the sexton had awakened to a sense of his loss, the two boys were in an alley, gloating over their treasure.

Had it not been for the keen hunger of youth which brought them to the restaurant where the Scouts had detected them, the two would have started their travels to a nearby city that morning. Instead "the photographer" made a rather lonely trip to the Reformatory.

THE RESULT

From Records in the Benevolent Society:

Bernard J——, born September 15, 1905, in Russia.

"Arrested four times (1914-15).

"March 25, 1916, Bernard J—— was transferred from the Reformatory to the Orphanage.

"In January, 1918, it became necessary for the Superintendent of the Orphanage to return Bernard J—— to the Reformatory because of his apparent criminal tendencies.

"Dr. C—— advised his return to the Reformatory, as he was delinquent rather than defective.

"December 3, 1919, Bernard J—— was released from the Reformatory, on a writ of habeas corpus. At the hearing, the

boy's father urged that the boy be released, on the strength of the fact that he had bought a home in a better neighborhood and intended to move his family into it. Also that he would take Bernard to work with him.

"The boy was released, but the family did not move, and Bernard sold newspapers.

"In December, 1921, Bernard J—— was arrested for larceny. He was recommitted to the Reformatory."





WERT
BOOKBINDING
MIDDLETOWN, PA.
JANUARY '74
Quality Binds

HV 9069 D794c 1923

03230160R



NLM 05022233 8

NATIONAL LIBRARY OF MEDICINE